



EPOCH OF TWILIGHT

BOOK 05

Don't Play People For A Fool

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Epoch of Twilight

(纪元黎明)

by

Don't Play People For A Fool

Synopsis

Have you ever thought that the state of the world as it presently is, could revert to the laws of the ancients? When a series of strange incidents beginning with the disappearance of his friend led Luo Yuan to question the possibility of an apocalypse, he becomes embroiled in the midst of a global-scale chaos.

Evolution has turned the flora and fauna of the vast and bountiful Earth into something that had never been seen before. Coincidentally, the all-dominating Homo sapiens have ended up at the bottom of the food chain. From mystery to crisis, will Luo Yuan discover a means of saving humanity by racing to the top of the food chain? Or will he strive in accordance with the law of the jungle? It is the dawn of an age of the survival of the fittest.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Stay

After passing them their gifts and a short conversation, Minister Ren proceeds to leave.

Luo Yuan walked him to the door and returned.

All of a sudden, Guo Zhiping became restless. He regretted having spoken so rudely to him and wished he could turn back the clock.

He was not an idiot. As a staff of the City Security Section, it was impossible for him not to know Minister Ren from the Municipal Organization. Considering the fact that Minister Ren had paid a visit bearing gifts, how could he be an ordinary evolved man?

In addition, Minister Ren sounded like the visit was arranged by his superior. They were afraid to be mistaken to be overreacting. If it were not so, they would have sent employees from higher positions to drop by. They were maintaining good relationships and it was totally beyond his expectations.

He felt uneasy as he recalled the words that he said. After a while, he said, "Excuse me, I would need to excuse myself, as I have something to attend to later on."

"Bye!" Luo Yuan answered coldly.

Guo Zhiping walked towards the exit awkwardly and he heard a

snicker behind him. He looked towards the floor and strode out of the room, not wanting to stay a minute any longer.

"How rude!" Luo Yuan exclaimed.

"I did it on purpose. He looked virtuous and acted confidently, yet he was still one of the bullies," said Wang Shishi upon seeing that Luo Yuan was not angry.

Luo Yuan laughed sarcastically. If he was acting rationally, it was impossible for him to be confident. He was merely a normal evolved man. He would still be afraid when facing the government officials.

"Let me see what Minister Ren brought over." Wang Shishi unwrapped the gift and gushed in surprise, "There are three bottles of level seven meat powder!"

"This is rare!" Luo Yuan frowned, as Hope City was indeed spoiling him silly. Even Luo Yuan had not seen this in the Reconstruction Area before. They could hardly ever hunt level seven creatures, and on the rare occasions that they could, the bounty would be divided among the military.

"Would the gift be too expensive to accept?" Zhao Yali asked.

"It's still fine though. It's only uncommon to see meat powder of this level." Luo Yuan answered.

He had killed few of the level seven beasts and was not really interested in sticky and powdery substances like this. He personally would have preferred to eat seafood.

Wang Xianguang was slightly disappointed seeing how Luo Yuan and the rest of them chatting happily. She felt like an outsider, ostracized from the group.

She brought Guo Zhiping along to use him against Luo Yuan, as a mere excuse to reject him, and was also trying to hint to Luo Yuan for the very last time. If Luo Yuan was still yet to make a move to declare his feelings for her, she was about to give up on this relationship.

Women were so eager to form a family after the apocalypse. She was under so much stress from the organization, the public and even from the blind date event organized by the government once in a month.

She was not young anymore and it was time for her to start a family.

Her face saddened and got up after sitting down for a moment. She simply gave an excuse and said, "I'm going back now as I have a meeting later."

"Let's have lunch together before you go head off." Zhao Yali added.

"I'm in a hurry. I'll have my meal in the office." Wang Xiaguang forced a smile, preparing to adjourn.

"Wait!" Luo Yuan said, while holding her hand tightly, "You should come home and stay with us."

He knew that Wang Xiaguang had a crush on him. He had gotten used to it and taken it for granted despite having no feelings for her. Only until the moment his rival appeared, he then realized that he could not let her go.

He could not imagine how regretful he would be if Wang Xiaguang had left him. He was glad that he realized now before it was too late.

"Yes, you should!" Huang Jiahui paused for a while and said. After an incident in the Desert City when they were threatened by the spirit of an evolved man, these women had gone through thick and thin together, building their friendship in times of adversity.

Wang Xiaguang struggled for a while. She gave up and said, "What do you mean, now? Yes, I do like you. But don't you try to insult me by saying such a thing. I'm not that kind of woman!"

She was a woman who had the courage to love and to hate.

"Stay calm!" Luo Yuan said. "We've known each other for so long now. During that barbeque party at Donghu City, when we were still colleagues, you told me that your family had built a sanctuary

and you could go there should you face any difficulties. I'll never forget what you've shared with me that day!"

Wang Xianguang took a deep breath, refusing to turn around. She did not know why she had an odd sense of sorrow, and soon burst into tears.

Huang Jiahui, along with Wang Shishi and Chen Jiayi quietly left the living room.

"How is it possible for me not to know you were in love with me? But you were rich and pretty, and I'm only a poor man. You're out of my league."

"I don't mind." Wang Xianguang mumbled. She wiped her tears and said, "If so, why are you treating me like this? You shouldn't have felt this way when it's too late!"

"Too late?" Luo Yuan glanced at her and said, "After the Apocalypse, society was completely lawless, what do you think was the reason that I'm not approaching such a beautiful woman like you?"

"It's because you aren't into me and at the same time, you have many women around you." She said while her tears rolled down her cheeks once more.

Luo Yuan did not know how he could explain how he felt for her. He opened his mouth, but remained quiet in the end.

Sex and love were two different things for men. Under such circumstances, Wang Xiaguang would have lost her virginity if Luo Yuan did not tamp down on his lust.

When she saw Luo Yuan's distressed look she smiled with tears in her eyes and said, "Well, I believe you now!"

She was a clever woman and did not want to ask too much. Having a great man like Luo Yuan to say these words was the best ending she could ever think of. Although this was not the perfect love that she was longing for, she had to compromise nonetheless, as Luo Yuan was the best man she had ever met. She could not help comparing Luo Yuan to every man who had a crush on her, only to end up being disappointed.

Perhaps nothing was perfect, and things could never be so ideal.

Looking at Wang Xiaguang's soft and pink lips, Luo Yuan could not resist anymore. He pulled her over and kissed her lips. Her lips heated up and she shivered as Luo Yuan kissed the salty tears on her lips. He released his grip and said softly, "Please listen to me, and stay here!"

"No, that's a little bit too fast!" Wang Xiaguang rejected and blushed.

"What's on your mind? I'm just asking you to stay here, plus, you've stayed here before anyway." Luo Yuan was speechless.

Luo Yuan continued as she saw Wang Xianguang hesitating, "Are you afraid that you'll be bullied tonight?"

"I'm not afraid of them at all. Well, I'll just stay here then!" Wang Xianguang answered.

It seemed like Luo Yuan had challenged her to stay, but in fact, she had already accepted this offer, even if she pretended to refuse at first.

Chapter 402: Destroying Plant Cells

All of them had possibly already expected Wang Xianguang's return, so no ruckus was caused. They were living in harmony with each other, but Luo Yuan somehow sensed that they did it deliberately. Everyone was trying so hard to maintain such a harmonious atmosphere. He believed that time could change them for the better and they would get used to it eventually.

Luo Yuan did not go out, but instead stayed in the comfort of his home. He had a feeling that within the next few days, the Reconstruction Area would no longer be a peaceful place.

Luo Yuan then asked Chen Jiayi about her studies.

Looking at her face clouded over in confusion and her unconvincing voice, he knew that she did not do well in her studies. Despite being sent to school, she was still suffering from vegetization which was beginning to get worse and worse.

Luo Yuan took a drop of blood from her blood vessel. The blood was turning green and it no longer looked like human blood.

He checked using his Will and discovered that her blood was composed of a lot of plant cells, clumping together with the normal red blood cells. The ratio of the two compositions was 3:1. When a number of plant cells outnumber that of the red blood cells in her body, he fears that she would no longer be human and in some form or another, her life would be like that of a vegetable.

Luo Yuan crushed the plant cells using his Will. The blood recovered instantly, turning back into a bright red color.

His Will was strong enough to destroy the layers of cells with ease. But he hesitated, wondering if he should completely destroy all the plant cells in Chen Jiayi's body.

He could hardly predict the consequences of destroying the plant cells entirely, as not only the plant cells will be destroyed, but also it could cause undesired side effects. In addition, the invasion of his Will could somehow leave some marks on her cells even if he did not do it intentionally.

His Will was relatively stronger than Chen Jiayi's. The defense system of the cells paled in comparison to his Will, let alone attempt to overcome it.

The worst-case scenario would be causing her body to become paralyzed or in mild cases, causing an inability to coordinate movements.

The greatest concern, however, was having a small part of plant cells in her brain. Even Luo Yuan could not imagine what would happen if he had left the marks of his Will in her brain cells.

In executing this, he did not stay away from the rest of them. Huang Jiahui was surprised and happy as she witnessed Chen Jiayi's blood color changing from green to red. She then asked, "Can the disease be cured?"

"There are certainly ways to cure and treat this disease, but I can't predict what would the final outcome be." Luo Yuan sighed and said.

Everyone turned silent after Luo Yuan shared the possible consequences of the treatment. It could put her health at serious risk, as she might not be able to move for the rest of her life.

It was completely quiet and depressing, so Luo Yuan said, "It is, of course, impossible for her to get cured in just one treatment, but constant treatment such as treating the plant cells in her blood first would make her feel a lot better."

Red blood cells were able to be renewed very quickly, so even if he had left the marks of his Will there, they would be replaced very soon. At the same time, residues of the dead plant cells would be transformed into nutrients. These nutrients were transported by the blood flow to cells throughout the body, while the unabsorbed nutrients would be eliminated. This would not cause any serious impact on her health.

"You should have said it earlier! I was so worried about that." Zhao Yali hit Luo Yuan, as she chided him.

"Yes, I did not make myself clear." Luo Yuan said, "But I'd still have to ask for Chen Jiayi's agreement first."

Luo Yuan then asked Chen Jiayi about it. She was stunned for a while and hesitated. The parasitic moss living in her body had harmful effects on her. She began to exhibit vegetal tendencies.

She did not realize the problem and even enjoyed being vegetated. Basking in the sunshine every day was one of the happiest things she would do.

However, she was an orphan who was brought up by Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan was like her guardian and she would never dare go against him. She continued hesitating for quite some time and finally nodded her head, as she did not want to disappoint him.

"Don't worry, I can promise you that you won't feel any pain!" Luo Yuan reassured her.

Chen Jiayi raised her head and said pitifully, "I'm not afraid of pain!"

...

Luo Yuan entered Chen Jiayi's bedroom to avoid any possible distraction during the treatment. He locked the door as he entered. Her bedroom was clean and tidy but was filled with the pungent smell of plants.

Chen Jiayi was sitting at the edge of the bed. She suddenly blushed and asked, "Brother Luo, do I need to take off my clothes?"

Luo Yuan glanced at her and realized that she had grown up. When they first met each other one year ago, she was still a little girl. She was now a pretty young lady. The influence of the

parasitic moss had caused her to be rather quiet and weak, just like a pure white lotus flower.

However, Luo Yuan shifted his gaze and said coldly, "No, rolling your sleeves up will suffice."

She looked at him absent-mindedly. When she regained her senses, she immediately rolled her sleeves up. Her skin was slightly green in color. The smell of her skin lingered in the air – it was soft and clean.

Luo Yuan placed his hand on her radial artery. His Will could easily break through human's defense system.

Each cubic millimeter of blood contained millions of cells. When the ratio of plant cells and red blood cells were 3:1, it indicates the presence of a large number of plant cells. It was certainly a difficult task to get all these cells destroyed.

Thanks to his Will that could grant his every wish, he did not have to kill them one by one. As long as Luo Yuan stayed focused and generated his thoughts to kill the plant cells, his subconscious ability would take over his consciousness, to deploy those very thoughts.

He tested this repeatedly to adjust the magnifying power of the internal scanning by his Will. He was looking for an optimal magnification factor with the highest efficiency so that he could use his Will to destroy the cells with the smallest magnifying power. He then found the optimal power in just a few minutes.

With this magnifying power, the blood vessels were closely packed and looked as small as the size of a fingertip. He could hardly distinguish the plant cells from the red blood cells. A thought had suddenly crossed into his mind and millions of plant cells were destroyed by his Will. The dead cells were clumped into a sticky liquid.

With a 16-point Agility, he was able to enter a time dimension that was at least ten times slower than the others, making him able to destroy the plant cells within hundred cubic millimeters of blood per second.

Chen Jiayi was just sitting at the edge of the bed staring blankly at him as if she did not feel a thing. Sometimes she would look worried, but she could not differentiate whether the fear was from her or the parasitic moss.

Soon, three hours had passed.

Luo Yuan soon had a very bad headache and retracted his Will, as he had almost used up all of it. However, the results from this treatment were obvious.

There were still remaining plant cells in Chen Jiayi's blood, but the ratio of the plant cells to red blood cells had significantly reduced to 1:4. He estimated that after ten days of treatment, most of the plant cells in her blood would have been killed.

He looked at Chen Jiayi and her skin had become redder.

"How do you feel?" Luo Yuan asked.

Chen Jiayi shook her head and said softly, "I did not feel any pain."

"That's good. Don't go to school over the next few days; I'll apply for your absence."

Chen Jiayi looked happy as she hated school so much. Not only that she could not understand what had been taught, her classmates had also looked down on her strange skin color and reserved attitude. She had never told anyone about this and bottled it all up.

Luo Yuan could roughly guess as he saw her jumping for joy. She could now slowly gain control over her movements and was more expressive now. He said with a smile, "If you don't like to go to school, then you don't have to go anymore!"

The reason he sent Chen Jiayi to school was trying to slow down the rate of vegetization, and not for academic purposes. Since he had found a better way to treat her now, sending her to school was no longer necessary.

A thought suddenly came to his mind. He said, "You might have a lot of waste being excreted tonight. Don't worry when you see this, it is normal."

Luo Yuan left her room after he finished his sentence. He did not realize that Chen Jiayi was having mixed feelings, filled with a certain sense of longing.

Chapter 403: Doubts

The next day, Luo Yuan went to the Firearms Bureau.

Everyone turned suspicious when he appeared there.

Due to privacy reasons, only Chen Xinjie roughly knew where Luo Yuan had been, while the rest of them had no idea at all. Some of them even thought that the vice-captain had sacrificed his life.

Only a few of them had their lunch in the office and Chen Xinjie was one of them. During their lunch breaks, Li Dong asked curiously where had he been over the last few days. Luo Yuan smiled but did not answer. It was not only about privacy issues, but also the fact that if he knew too much he would feel stressed.

Sometimes, not knowing something was often better than knowing. The more he knew, the more depressed he would become.

When he was about to leave after lunch, Luo Yuan walked toward Chen Xinjie. Everyone immediately left in order to give them due privacy.

"I might be leaving!" Luo Yuan said after a while.

"When are you leaving?" She asked, while biting her lips.

"I'm leaving very soon as I'm going to New Capital City." Luo Yuan said.

"Are you still coming back after that?" Chen Xinjie asked; her feelings mixed.

The feelings she had for him were very complicated. It was her duty assigned by the organization to seduce Luo Yuan, but after getting along with him for so long, she had already fallen for him. His strong body was so attractive – as if he was born to seduce women.

"Yes, of course, I'm coming back to my hometown. New Capital City is not far away from here." Luo Yuan continued, as he shared that the condition there was worsened by haze and not suitable for staying. With his speed, he could come back in half an hour.

"But I hope that you can come along with me." He told her his intention, "I plan on shifting your job to New Capital City."

Chen Xinjie was confused and undecided. She then shook her head and said, "This isn't right and I have a family."

God damned family!

Luo Yuan looked at her and suddenly remembered that she did not know that he already knew the truth.

"We'll see. You think about it first!" Luo Yuan did not force her to

answer as he was confident that she would definitely give in.

...

Luo Yuan received a phone call in the afternoon. He immediately rushed to New Capital City despite being on holiday.

During the two-day break, after the arrival of robots and aliens, it seemed like the Reconstruction Area was peaceful on the outside, but internally, there were plenty of complications within. Many cargo trucks transporting the latest industrial machines and all sorts of scientific instruments to be used in the Reconstruction Area were seen passing through the tunnel leading towards the mountain.

At the same time, many of the research centers held dear to their research projects on hand. Thousands of scientists and engineers were posted to a secret base situated at the mountain and they soon began their job to reverse the crack.

The country could produce a powerful attack if it were to fully deploy its Will.

When Luo Yuan flew to the outskirts of New Capital City, apparently, the number of chimneys in had been greatly reduced. Many of the industries were emptied and had stopped operating due to the introduction of machines.

He landed quickly and walked into New Capital City. Compared

to Hope City, the defense here was clearly more powerful and tightly guarded. When he was about ten kilometers away from New Capital City, he could sense that there were a few armored vehicles and rapid air defense firing guns aiming towards him.

The soldiers immediately surrounded him as soon as he entered, with their guns pointing towards him.

Luo Yuan was not angry and took out his ID from his pocket. One of the captains inspected his ID and as upon seeing it, he immediately let him go with a military salute.

After making a phone call, the one who came to welcome him was still Wang Jing. Luo Yuan told her about what had happened earlier.

"You should have applied for an air defense authentication code so that problems like this would not happen again. Better not to fly into New Capital City as it would influence the civilians here." Wang Jing said in a hoarse voice, looking fatigued and gloomy. Obviously, she was stressed out by the aliens. She was unable to sleep well over the few days, tossing and turning due to nightmares.

Luo Yuan nodded his head. The gap would somehow exist between the evolved man and a normal human being. It was a matter of inequality in the quality of life. The impression that ordinary people conjured of an evolved man were that they were not merely adored and admired, but they were also looked upon with fear and hatred.

In just a short while, both of them entered the underground city as if they were walking in a maze. They walked to the 125th team and everyone there was very busy. The staff was walking here and there, looking anxious although the atmosphere seemed to be very peaceful.

The environment was very quiet because there were no electrical devices or phones in use, and not even the noise of a photocopy machine was heard. Everyone talked softly. Only the rushing footsteps of the information personnel and the sound of a pencil scraping on the paper could be heard.

"Hi, we meet again. I'm Yu Zheng from the 125th team's intelligence office. Please accept my apologies for disturbing you," said a military officer with a smile, as he shook Luo Yuan's hands.

Luo Yuan had met him once and it was before he headed to Borneo.

"It's all about the survival of humanity, you're not disturbing at all," said Luo Yuan with a smile.

Both of them entered the meeting room. There were many officers and most of them were intelligence personnel. They stood up and saluted. Luo Yuan waited until most of them had sat down before asking, "What's the purpose of asking me to be present here today?"

"It's regarding the aliens that you sent here. We have examined

the information gathered but some of it is not clear enough and failed to make sense. We are worried that there might be another party involved. Luo Yuan, since you are the person in direct contact with them, I would like to ask you what happened at that time."

"Please continue."

"First of all, according to the alien's confession, before it was caught, an earthquake happened without any symptoms. Do you know..." Yu Zheng asked.

"You may stop asking about this. I was the one who triggered the earthquake." Luo Yuan interrupted before he finished his question. There was nothing to hide about this issue. Despite humans being afraid of an evolved man's powerful abilities, they had to accept and bear with it for the sake of survival. As long as he did not cause a military coup, even if he were to kill a few people on the street, they would not care less.

They exchanged glances with a terrified look plastered across their faces. They had been thinking about this problem for a long time and had no clue how it happened. They had never expected that it could ever be intentionally triggered by Luo Yuan. It was not an ordinary earthquake, even the Reconstruction Area which was so far away could detect its scale. Based on the satellite image, the earthquake drastically changed the topography of Borneo. It could have been an earthquake with a magnitude of 9.0.

After a short while, Yu Zheng regained his senses and said, "How about the spaceship..."

"Yes, I was the one who destroyed the spaceship and imprisoned the aliens."

.....

"I think I have no more queries to ask." The interrogation session ended very quickly. Luo Yuan shook hands with few of the intelligence personnel and strolled out of the 125 intelligence office.

There was a pin-drop silence in the room and everyone seemed stupefied.

After a while, an intelligence personnel said in a raspy voice, "Do you think what Luo Yuan said is true? Is an evolved man really that powerful?"

"I hate to admit, but I do think that this is the most reasonable explanation. You have no choice but to believe him," said Yu Zheng in a deep voice as he heaved a sigh.

"So this report..."

"Just hand in the report already!" Yu Zheng said.

He sighed as the Reconstruction Area had created such a powerful human-like strategic weapon. He believed that they

would be facing much bigger problems if the aliens had not appeared.

Chapter 404: The New Minister

An underground tunnel had been built below the ring road at the headquarters of Firearms Bureau.

A naked muscular man was standing still and his face seemed void of expressions. The next moment, a beam of highly energized particles instantly crashed through his body.

He hissed softly. His body began to become blurry and was emitting a faint glow.

It was a particle accelerator.

Compared to those large particle accelerators, this was relatively smaller and it was only one kilometer long. Thus, its energy would be much weaker as it was merely generated by a mini power station at the Firearms Bureau.

The heavy particle accelerator was originated from Lanzhou and was built in the 80's. It was brought along during the migration. However, since it was unable to keep up with the changes in technology and research, this heavy particle accelerator was then abandoned and a new version of an accelerator was developed.

After the Firearms Bureau was created, he requested for this semi-finished accelerator.

The creation of the Firearms Bureau by the Reconstruction Area,

to some extent, was to comfort him.

When the contradictions between human and the evolved man were intensified, part of the evolved man was not satisfied with being dominated by a normal human being. They then attempted to strive for higher status and power. Meanwhile, the top management of the Reconstruction Area was increasingly unhappy and dissatisfied with their lawless behavior.

The mutiny in the battlefield had resulted in the destruction of the city. Under a bloody command, a military purge began.

Many evolved men and soldiers had either died or escaped!

The purge soon extended, causing many of the evolved men to be worried. They hid here and there, which caused a stir in the Reconstruction Area. It was ongoing until one day when the executed command was canceled and things seemed peaceful everywhere now.

The command was abrupt. In the early days of the apocalypse, the evolved men were still very weak. A few of the well-trained soldiers could easily kill a weak evolved man. During the great purge, the armed forces were well-prepared for the battle. Not many soldiers died and it turned out to be a one-sided massacre.

The evolved men were incapable of striking back. But under such circumstances, the attacks had subsided all of a sudden. Those evolved men who had survived was then promoted as if nothing had happened before.

Ten days later, the Firearms Bureau was created and he was appointed as the vice minister of the department. No one knew what had happened but there were some clues, upon seeing him becoming the vice minister of Firearms Bureau.

...

After half an hour, he gradually walked out of the channel of the particle accelerator and there was green smoke around him. A slim secretary immediately brought him some clothes. He saw a frown on her face but he did not care about his naked body and the secretary who was flushing in anger. He then put on his clothes slowly.

"Didn't I tell you not to come here? Be wary of the radiation!"

"You don't need to care about me," said the secretary, rather rudely.

His body was recovering as soon as the high temperature on his body decreased. He then said as he was walking, "Can't you understand me? It's for your own good. What happened today? Why are you coming over?"

The secretary said, "The newly appointed vice minister will be here at 9 o'clock. You must attend and I'm only worried that you will be late."

"Vice minister?" He paused for a while and recalled what he had been told, "Oh yes. You've told me this before. He'll be here today?"

"Yes, it's already half past eight now!" The secretary could not help but said, "His name is Luo Yuan. Please don't forget this later."

"Is my memory that bad? Hopefully, he turns out to be a friendly person." He slightly frowned and said, "The Reconstruction Area still had ill-feelings about me and wanted to decentralize the power."

"Please calm down!" The secretary was worried. They had built extraordinary relationships as their relationships were not only between secretary and minister but had also comprised family and love. She did not want anything to happen to him.

"Don't worry. Everything will be fine, as long as he is not bothering me." He was grinning, bearing his white teeth, but his eyes remained cold.

He knew that the day would come. However, he was not eager for power. True strength and abilities were what he had been pursuing.

"Do you know his strength and abilities?" He mumbled, looking at the secretary as if she had something to remind him once more. He said with a smile, "Don't worry, we'll unite as one. I've heard about this many times, and I believe he must have his abilities if he were to be appointed to undertake this position."

"Where is he from?" He asked.

"He's from Hope City!"

"If I'm not mistaken, it's Lin Feiyan's territory, the woman with very strange abilities." He said with hesitance.

"He is the deputy team leader," said the secretary.

He was stunned and highly doubted this, as it did not make sense to him. Even if the rate of promotions had been faster in the Firearms Bureau as compared to other government departments, he had never been appointed as a team leader prior to this. Instead, he was directly elected as a vice minister. This did not make sense at all.

Something unbeknownst to him must have happened. "What's happening in the Reconstruction Area?" He asked.

The secretary shook her head, as she did not know anything as well.

...

His curiosity was aroused. Having seldom come back to the office, he sat for a while and handled some unimportant documents. Suddenly, he stood up as if he sensed something. He drew the curtains and saw a car slowly entering the Firearms Bureau.

One of the deputy ministers of the Organization Department and a stranger who was donning black from top to toe had alighted the car.

At the same time, he raised his head as he had sensed something too.

Both of them exchanged glances and smiled at each other. They then shifted their gaze.

The deputy minister of the Organization Department glanced at Luo Yuan and said, "He is also the vice minister of the Firearms Bureau. His name is Ling Zhong-an. There's something fascinating about him!"

"What's that about?" Luo Yuan answered.

"During the migration after the apocalypse, Minister Ling and his lover were separated in the crowd. When he found her, she was already married and they left each other with remorse.

His lover's husband worked as a government personnel, and during that time, he was already a vice minister. As soon as his lover's husband knew about this, he divorced his wife and sent her to the Firearms Bureau.

"Then what happened next? Are both of them married now?" Luo Yuan asked curiously. It would not be anything out of the ordinary

if they were both married, so he believed that something else must have happened.

"No. Perhaps there was a misunderstanding between them, which caused them to bicker. They then parted in discord. However, Minister Ling did not give up and no one knew what he had done. Soon enough his lover is now his secretary!"

Luo Yuan looked at him as if he had understood something. He was surprised in the first place wondering why a deputy minister would tell him so much about another person's private affairs. He now realized that the deputy minister was trying to remind him about something.

Obviously, he knew that he should not mention the vice minister's secretary in front of him.

As soon as Luo Yuan regained his senses, he felt that something was not right. Why did the deputy minister deliberately remind him as such?

Did they consider him a womanizer?

Chapter 405: Goodwill

The headquarters of the Firearms Bureau was located on the outskirts of the New Capital City. It was around five to six kilometers away from the outer region of the city. The place was deserted and the ground was paved by grass. Perhaps, the top management had always regarded the Firearms Bureau with suspicion and they had also believed that "out of sight, out of mind" was a good way of putting it.

However, it was because of this, that the Firearms Bureau was large and spacious.

They had their own power station, research center, hospital, weapon processing factory, and also a team of rapid response forces that was directly under the Firearms Bureau, in which air forces were included. In addition, there were also some of the cooperating agencies that belonged to the Firearms Bureau.

In the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau, approximately 40 of them were team regulars and approximately 200 of them were the reserves. There were up to 2000 members in the department including the logistics, soldiers, researchers, doctors, technicians, and other supporting personnel.

Of course, the Firearms Bureau was created not only to protect New Capital City or to lead the teams, but it had an overall responsibility for maintaining the security in mines and oil fields of the Reconstruction Area.

The mining sites were not only located in the Reconstruction Area but also in the enclave. Compared to the mines located there, mining sites at the Reconstruction Area were relatively safer, as there were mutants raging in the enclave, resulting in a very bad environment. They had sent troops to guard the mining sites in the enclave, but the troops suffered great losses. Therefore, the evolved men from the Firearms Bureau were stationed around the mines to defend the area against the mutants.

Luo Yuan had a rough idea about the structure of the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau after listening to the deputy minister's introductions. Without a doubt, the entire Firearms Bureau was an independent kingdom.

Someone came to get them as soon as they arrived at the entrance of the office.

"Minister Dong, we meet again. He is Dong Huijun, the minister from the Firearms Bureau. This is Luo Yuan, the newly appointed vice minister. Both of you are colleagues now."

"Hi, vice minister Luo! Despite never meeting before, I've heard of your name a long time ago. Welcome to the Firearms Bureau." Minister Dong extended his hand and seemed to be particularly friendly.

He was around 40 to 50 years old. He looked very tired and it was imaginable that it was not easy for a non-evolved man to become the minister of the Firearms Bureau.

"Hello, Minister Dong." Luo Yuan smiled and shook hands with him. His attitude was neither warm nor cold as he knew that as an evolved man, he had to define his position clearly. Otherwise, no one would obey him regardless of how strong he was.

"The meeting room is ready." Minister Dong did not change his expression and said with a smile.

They quickly headed towards the meeting room. Minister Ling was in the meeting room and his secretary was sitting beside him. Luo Yuan had a quick glance at her. She was indeed a beautiful woman.

Luo Yuan immediately shifted his gaze and thinking that the superior might have treated him as a womanizer.

Everyone's eyes were on him as soon as he entered the meeting room.

There was doubt, disdain, surprise as well as judgment.

Their eyes were filled with discrimination. Luo Yuan frowned and laughed at himself. He gradually moved forward and Ling Zhong-an who was sitting on the first row suddenly stood up. The meeting room immediately turned silent and everyone held their breaths.

Luo Yuan stopped walking and looked at him calmly. He had no idea what Minister Ling wanted to do.

Ling Zhong-an walked a few steps forward and stopped in front of Luo Yuan. He was tall and muscular, looking strong and powerful.

Standing in front of him, Luo Yuan was obviously shorter. He extended his hand and said, "We've met each other just now, I'm Ling Zhong-an."

"I'm Luo Yuan, thank you for helping me out!" Luo Yuan finally smiled and shook hands with him. Apparently, he attained great reverence from the evolved man as compared to the minister.

The goodwill of Minister Ling had made the situation less awkward. At least, there would not be so much discrimination anymore.

"Don't mention it. I'm not going to attend this meeting. It's boring. Let's have a drink together later. I'm still keeping some of the good drinks that we had before the apocalypse."

"Sure!" Luo Yuan answered with a smile.

Ling Zhong-an then left the meeting room and his secretary followed closely.

He admired Ling Zhong-an's free and easy attitude. He did almost everything with a calm disposition, without offending anyone.

He then followed the procedures for an appointment and it was indeed boring. Perhaps the one who scheduled the meeting had thought of the Firearms Bureau as a special department, so the speech was only just a short one.

The meeting ended in ten minutes.

Everyone filed out of the room. When Luo Yuan walked out of the meeting room, Ling Zhong-an was squatting in a corner and his secretary had left.

"Let's have a drink." Ling Zhong-an stood up, as he clapped his hands.

"Now? It's still early." Luo Yuan looked at the time – it was not even half past nine.

"Time doesn't matter." He stretched his hand towards Luo Yuan's shoulder and dragged him over. He was feeling uncomfortable, as no one had ever placed their hands on his shoulder after the apocalypse. He consciously felt his muscles twitching when Ling Zhong-an pat him on his shoulder. There was a slight buzz in the air and the view near his shoulder was blurred.

Ling Zhong-an's forearm bounced off and he retreated a few steps back. He stepped on the muddy ground and it became uneven. His body was then slammed against the wall. Soon, the cracking sound of the concrete was heard and the wall had collapsed.

Ling Zhong-an swept away the dust and stood up with no injuries. He gently shook his wrist as it was stiff. He was not angry but instead exclaimed happily, "You're so powerful. I think we should fix a date and learn from each other."

At this moment, not everyone had left. The crowd was shocked upon witnessing the scene, and even Luo Yuan was surprised with his Strength.

He knew from the training system that muscles would never be activated independently. It seemed like it was only the movement of his shoulder, but in fact, all of the muscle groups in his body were linked together and generated an instant power. Even Fang Peibin who had evolved could not withstand such a great impact. Ling Zhong-an was not injured at all. The reason he retreated a few steps backward was mainly due to the restriction of human weight – he had to balance himself.

"You're good too. We can exchange some skills anytime. Let's have a drink first!" Luo Yuan did not reject and he was equally excited. How could he miss out on fighting with such a powerful opponent?

"Yes, you're right! Let's drink first!" Ling Zhong-an laughed loudly.

Chapter 406: Learning From Each Other

Both of them arrived at the restaurant specially set up for the members of the Firearms Bureau. The restaurant was empty as it was still as early as 9 o'clock in the morning. They picked a seat at random and sat down.

"Master Yang, could you bring the alcohol? I left it here and also prepared a few dishes for Minister Luo!" Ling Zhong-an said.

"Sure! I'll give my best to make sure the dishes are superb, just for you!" The chef manager said, with a happy smile. At the same time, he also tried to remember the new minister, as he was far too inferior to accidentally offend a person with such high powers.

The alcohol was served right after they sat down.

There were more than ten bottles of alcohol and all of it were amongst famous brands of white wine before the apocalypse. It was very valuable and exclusive, as not many people had the chance to find it, and it was not something you could easily obtain, even with a lot of food stamps. Luo Yuan stole a glance and realized that there were only 12 bottles, all of which were from five different brands.

"Let's drink, let's drink!" Ling Zhong-an twisted the bottle cap open and filled Luo Yuan's bowl with alcohol. "Cheers!"

He lifted the bowl and then finished it. Luo Yuan followed suit.

"I can't taste the alcohol anymore. It makes me feel like quitting these drinks for good." Ling Zhong-an filled Luo Yuan's bowl again and sighed.

He was an alcoholic in the past and had a habit of drinking a lot before the apocalypse, but ever since his evolution, he had not even had his first drink.

"I didn't exactly give it much thought. I don't drink that much... even until now," said Luo Yuan, as he drank another bowl of alcohol.

"I guess you have not experienced the most interesting part of drinking yet. Take a sip before going out in winter. The experience of feeling the warmth flowing through your body is incredible!"

"Seems like I'm not as lucky then." Luo Yuan smiled and said.

Drinking alcohol was as easy as drinking water for the two of them. They finished half a dozen bottles even before the dishes were served.

"Something very serious had happened just recently, hasn't it?" Ling Zhong-an suddenly asked. He had always been a very straightforward person and was inclined to ask questions when things were uncertain.

"What are you talking about?" Luo Yuan asked in surprise.

"For example, you were suddenly promoted to be the deputy minister. You were a Vice-Captain, weren't you?" Ling Zhong-an said.

"It's a long story." Luo Yuan shook his head and drained the alcohol in his bowl.

"Is there something you don't want to reveal, or are there certain confidential policies that you are required to abide by?" Ling Zhong-an whispered softly. Even if he did not know anything about politics, he was familiarizing himself ever since he was promoted to deputy minister for such a long time now.

"Are you sure you want to know? It's bad for you, though!" Luo Yuan raised his head and asked, as he looked at Ling Zhong-an.

Ling Zhong-an smiled and said, "Nothing to be afraid of."

"Alright. You know the nuclear fusion device exploded, right?" Luo Yuan hesitated and asked.

Ling Zhong-an nodded seriously. The news of the explosion was widespread, thus making it impossible for him to be unaware of it at all. Besides, the lab was not too far away from the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau. He even saw the explosion from afar, when it happened.

Luo Yuan poured some alcohol into his bowl and then smudged a

few words on the table with it. He wiped it away after showing Ling Zhong-an. He couldn't care much about confidentiality at all. Besides, Ling Zhong-an was not just a regular person; there was nothing to hide.

"Are you serious!?" Ling Zhong-an was shocked and asked. He looked frightened but he quickly calibrated his emotions. Although it was only a short duration, the chefs from afar were frightened by his expressions and most of them were pale with fear.

Luo Yuan was calm as he had plenty of experience in this. "I have nothing to gain if I lie to you. Didn't you realize that the Reconstruction Area looks rather abnormal recently?" Luo Yuan whispered.

"No wonder.... Now I know." Ling Zhong-an mumbled as he seemed to have recalled something.

The atmosphere suddenly turned into a stressful one. Both of them were only drinking and remained silent for a long time.

"Ahh, let's stop drinking! Let's find a place to fight!" Ling Zhong-an was getting frustrated as he continued drinking, refusing to continue. He had been single this entire time ever since he evolved, hence there was nothing to lose.

He was never afraid, even if he had broken into the high commission alone or had countless guns and a tank pointing directly at him. He finally had the support he needed when he found his lover, whom he grew up with. He also had a weakness

ever since then. However, he did not want her to risk her life by staying with him, even though he was not afraid to die.

...

Both of them were powerful enough to destroy simply anything. Hence, a regular training hall did not suffice. Luo Yuan and Ling Zhong-an left the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau and adjourned to the outskirts.

Luo Yuan inserted his Zhanmadao into the ground. The saber was threatening as it had the power to hurt someone despite being stationary. However, one would probably die or be handicapped, if the saber did manage to hit or cut them. It was definitely not suitable for that kind of activity.

Ling Zhong-an took a glance at the saber and grew confident in his skill of defense. However, he was not confident enough to allow Luo Yuan to use his saber. He warned, "You'd better be careful though!"

Luo Yuan rolled up his sleeves, exposing his muscular arms and exclaimed, "Come on!"

Right after he shouted, Ling Zhong-an stomped hard, and the ground immediately shook, producing a booming sound. A huge pit was formed instantly as the ground was cracked and he was rushing towards Luo Yuan like a bolting arrow!

Luo Yuan squinted his eyes and strong wind immediately started blowing, forming a big cyclone before it could hit him. His powers were as scary as a ferocious dragon. The velocity of the wind was even faster than the speed of sound, killing all the small plants wherever he went. It was akin to having a very long, destructive tail behind him.

However, he had witnessed this kind of scene too often and was not affected at all. Those level seven mutated beasts which he had chanced upon before were ten times scarier than this.

Luo Yuan drew a big circle in the air and slightly stepped back, with his feet crossing and moving at the same time.

Both of them seem to be approaching each other. Suddenly, a huge fist came from the sky and penetrated the air particles. It hit on Luo Yuan as hard as a meteor that fell onto the earth.

Yet, Luo Yuan was well prepared. He shook his body and managed to escape from being hit by the huge fist. At the same time, his hand shot out from behind his waist stealthily and instantly locked Ling Zhong-an's chin.

Ling Zhong-an instantly went flying towards the air and he was not able to control his body. Luo Yuan was too busy to bother about the numbness in his arms and immediately punched Ling Zhong-an's abdomen! As he curled up due to the sudden pain, Luo Yuan quickly took the chance to give him a hard kick and Ling Zhong-an was once again hurled into the air.

It was impossible, even for the experts, to fight for an hour or a whole day, and it did not take much time to find out who the winner was. Besides, the opponent had issues coordinating his body despite being very strong, which was a common disadvantage of evolved humans, due to the imbalance of their attributes.

Luo Yuan stepped back and looked at Ling Zhong-an, who was lying on the floor after being kicked to about 30 to 40 meters away. Luo Yuan could feel that Ling Zhong-an was neither injured by the punch nor could feel the pain at all. He was like a robot beneath human skin. But wait, it would have been smashed up terribly even if he were to be a robot.

Ling Zhong-an flipped up from the ground. His shirt was tattered and only a few small pieces of cloth remained on his body.

"That was fast! I really can't beat you in such average conditions. Looks like I'll have to use more power on you then!" Ling Zhong-an said with a surprise.

He twisted his neck and cracked his joints. Luo Yuan tossed the tattered shirt away, exposing his muscular body. As the leader of the Firearms Bureau, he must instead possess a strong body, if he did not have the ability to create any monumental breakthroughs. That was the reason why the Reconstruction Area took great care of him.

Chapter 407: Equally Strong

"Using more power won't do you any good!" Luo Yuan said confidently, as he laughed.

His confidence was justified. It was possible to be tricked by an evolved human if he was not able to foresee the future. However, such an outcome would be impossible even if the opponent was very tricky or mysterious, as he could not escape his ability to foresee his upcoming strategy. Luo Yuan was able to set a trap in advance and beat him during the battle.

"Here I thought that I was the arrogant one, but you're far worse!" Ling Zhong-an laughed and felt upset inside. He admitted that Luo Yuan was indeed very strong, which he was unable to match. So far, no one was able to talk to him after he had fully utilized his power. "I hope you don't surrender later," said Ling Zhong-an.

"Cut the crap, man! Come on!" Luo Yuan exclaimed with a laugh.

Ling Zhong-an turned serious and took a few steps backward. After that, his entire body was glowing in light blue, turning invisible every once in a while.

At the same time, he looked very scary and his body was trembling. The air particles began to shake and a stream appeared like an aurora.

Luo Yuan's eyes were sharp and he knew that the magnetic field

around Ling Zhong-an was changing. He immediately looked wary, as he could now sense the danger.

Suddenly, a curved line was drawn under his feet. His body was slanted and a huge fist passed by his chest. Without realizing his trick, Ling Zhong-an was already standing beside Luo Yuan and tried to attack him.

Luo Yuan did not counter attack as the foresight in his mind displayed negative results.

Suddenly, Ling Zhong-an's body had become very strong and heavy like the extraterrestrial bodies. He foresaw getting punched by Ling Zhong-an but will not be injured too badly. However, Ling Zhong-an would be the one injured, as his bones would have been broken. The strange thing was that his body was not as heavy as he thought; it was merely an illusion.

Ling Zhong-an was teleporting and appeared beside Luo Yuan haphazardly to attack him.

However, Luo Yuan managed to escape each time, just as he was about to strike. He never counter-attacked. The foresight had also shown him that Ling Zhong-an was almost running out of strategies.

This kind of defense was horrible beyond imagination, especially against the strategy of teleportation. Those who did not have the foresight ability might not have been able to escape from his attacks.

The battle had entered a rapid mode, which was difficult to be seen by the naked eye. The forces had caused many small plants to die as it was swirled into a mud cyclone.

The battle had eventually turned stagnant and boring.

One kept attacking and the other was doing his best to avoid it. Both of them looked like they were battling with air instead of taking each other head-on. After a few minutes, they both decided to stop.

"What kind of power is that?" Luo Yuan asked curiously. He sounded very calm as if he had not participated in that battle. It looked intense earlier, but it was as easy as drinking water to Luo Yuan.

"The body was being partially energized. I heard it from the experts, I'm not so sure myself," said Ling Zhong-an, without hiding anything, in full honesty.

Luo Yuan looked surprised, as he was not as naive as he used to be anymore. Despite how heavy or light the particles were, the moving speed was at its sub-optimal speed.

To him, that kind of speed was similar to teleportation.

Luckily, there was a short break as he attacked, and the speed returned back to normal. Otherwise, Luo Yuan might not be able

to escape, despite his strong foresight.

"What about you?" Ling Zhong-an was very curious. He never met someone who was so powerful yet boring at the same time, as Luo Yuan was as flexible as an eel, which annoyed him thoroughly.

"The earth element's superpower and foresight, of course!" Luo Yuan told him directly, after learning about his honesty.

"Foresight!?" Ling Zhong-an repeated what Luo Yuan had said and laughed sarcastically, "What the hell? That's too much, though! No wonder you didn't even counter attack. You already knew what I was going to do! If so, I'm not going to fight with you anymore. It's pointless and boring!"

"So do I. You're really a monster!" Luo Yuan felt the same. It would be just another boring battle unless he uses his Zhanmadao.

Unfortunately, it was not even a fierce battle. Hence, the Zhanmadao might not even be suitable for that.

...

Luo Yuan returned to the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau and literally stayed in the office for the whole day. As he had just been newly promoted, he had many tasks to attend to. Although he lacked interest in the political authority, as a Deputy Minister, he should be familiar with all the sub-departments and data, as well as management policies.

In the afternoon, Luo Yuan ran a simple inspection at the sub-departments with the company of the Office Manager.

He stayed in the department of research and development for a longer time, which was the main function of the department – to serve the evolved humans. It was not very big, only about a few superpower research centers with about ten researchers working there together.

After an introduction was made by the Director of the Research Center, Luo Yuan realized that they could help in customizing the model of the energy initiator. Most of the evolved humans did not know much about Science, failing to master the skill of using their power and strength efficiently. The same momentum of force would have generated a different outcome if it were to be exerted by two different people – a less civilized person and someone with the knowledge of martial arts.

For example, Luo Yuan was not aware that multiple Earth Stomps could generate a resonance and lead to an earthquake. He also did not know that he could gather the vibration energy to form the Earth Geyser.

Other than the customization of the energy initiator model, they had also done some researches on mental training, as well as the special energy of the human body. However, Luo Yuan realized there were not many outcomes from the research at the moment. Basically, they just copied and pasted the study from the ancient books of the Buddhism and Taoism.

Luo Yuan lost interest after taking a look at the report.

Fortunately, he did not expect much from that. It made sense that those people were not really talents, hence, they were assigned to this research center because most of them were transferred from those big research centers due to their lack of performance. Compared to the times before the apocalypse, their quality of work was only akin to those of internship students.

He shook his head lightly. From certain aspects, the research center was just a tool for the Reconstruction Area to show that they were prioritizing the Firearms Bureau.

Chapter 408: Inattentive

Yesterday morning, after Luo Yuan finished battling against Ling Zhong-an, the latter returned to the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau. Ling Zhong-an was visibly stripped of his highly protective armor because when he was fighting, his battle suit had been ripped off by the strong wind which left him with nothing but flimsy trousers on top of a naked body. In stark contrast, Luo Yuan was still neatly dressed and looked almost as if he just returned from a regular field trip. Everyone was already aware of the fight between the two men. Now that they have returned in such conditions, the outcome of the fight was clear as day. Having to believe what they were seeing was just shocking and unacceptable for the crowd.

Now, who was Ling Zhong-an? Well, he was viewed as the spiritual pillar of support of the Firearms Bureau, was a natural leader, and was the foundation of the department. He was well known for his powerful strength and was respected as a God. Many people even thought of him as the last hope for mankind. Therefore, what is extremely mind boggling right now was that this spiritual pillar of support had lost the fight, or at least he did not win. This was simply unbelievable!

Originally, no one really paid attention to the new deputy minister and they even wanted to exclude him as they thought that it was only a political arrangement for decorative purposes. But now, suddenly, things looked the exact opposite. In everyone's hearts, the new minister had suddenly cast a veil of mystery that held endless fascination and awe.

Strangely, this minister had suddenly vanished after the fight.

This was because Luo Yuan did not go back to the Firearms Bureau but instead departed Hope City to the wilderness early in the morning. The existence of extraterrestrial civilizations was pressuring the city like a looming dark cloud. The survival of mankind had been on red alert. Due to the sheer power of the extraterrestrial civilization, humanity would be easily wiped off the face of the Earth if they were attacked; which leaves the Reconstruction Area with very little time for preparation.

However, the production of intelligent robots takes time. Furthermore, technological development could only improve gradually and not overnight. A hundred-year gap between science and technology seemed immaterial but it made a world of difference. Behind an inconspicuous technology, there was an industrial support system. In the early 21st-century, smartphones and an array of scientific theories were the most developed technologies. Even the most advanced countries like Germany and the United Kingdom would feel that these technologies were nothing but science fiction.

Although scientific technologies have been significantly improved over the last hundred years and many humans had now evolved and joined the scientific development team, they were still unable to emulate extraterrestrial technology. They could only try to develop the ability to fight but it could not be done in one or two years. All this was now common knowledge and not just what Luo Yuan understood. The management must quickly come to terms with this and find a way to secure the future of humanity. Despite the slim chances that they have, the Reconstruction Area still utilized all its resources to crack the encrypted technology of the extraterrestrial civilization. The future of mankind was at stake!

Even though the general mood of the people were gloomy under such a pressured state, Luo Yuan still seemed to act normally as if nothing had happened. The only notable difference was that it was always difficult for him to fall asleep when darkness fell. This invasion clearly affected him and there were a few times when he thought of eloping with his "wives" into the wilderness until all this was over. However, Luo Yuan eventually gave up on this idea. If he really went ahead with it, Wang Shishi would be dismayed with him and more importantly, he would look down on himself. He had to do something even though the odds were against them. His space-time bubble flight mode gave him some hope. Since his Will had been upgraded to 18 points, even space was not out of reach for him anymore.

The beauty of the independent space formed by his power was that it made him semi-detached from the three-dimensional world and so that he was immune to all attacks. Although he was not too sure about the progress regarding the high-energy laser, at least there was a ray of hope. To increase their chances, Luo Yuan knew that he had to become more powerful by increasing his strength and determination. He also had to become more intelligent and skillful in a short amount of time. Fortunately, the wilderness had a huge supply of resources which allowed him to do so. He had arrived at the Sichuan Area in less than 20 minutes thanks to his ability to travel at high speeds. This was the place where he had encountered mutated beasts of the highest level. He even came across numerous level eight mutated beasts which were commonly found in the area.

Luo Yuan tightened the strap on his forehead and quickly dived down from the sky and landed on a branch. He took a deep breath and jumped off the branch. He was not afraid of getting lost in the wilderness so he merely picked a random direction and moved

forward at a quick pace. He was lucky as he only had to walk for half an hour when a task notification came from the system. His eyes became focused. This was a huge mutated beast! It was approximately 30 meters tall and 50 meters long. Its body was covered with armor which likened it to a rhino. However, its armor was even thicker. It looked hideous with numerous tiny thorns growing out of its face! Perhaps it was a cow before mutation. On its inverted triangle head, was a pair of long twisted blue horns which pointed straight to the sky like two swords. From a biological perspective, Luo Yuan predicted that this creature must have a strong defense system and should be vegetarian. However, mutated beasts generally could not be understood using common sense. Through intense and frequent mutations, these mutated beasts have been transformed to the extent that they are no longer linked to their origins and biological theories.

The mutated beast's mouth was filled with razor sharp teeth and a trace of fresh blood dripped down slowly from its mouth. It was clearly not a vegetarian after all! Fortunately, it appears to be full and seemed to be looking for a place to take a nap under a tree. It was not aware of the frightening danger that was coming to it.

A week ago, Luo Yuan still needed to be extra careful when facing horrifying mutated beasts like this one. Before he attacked, he had to do everything possible to avoid catching its attention and would think of any possible scenario that could happen until he was confident that there would be no risk in attacking.

But now, it was completely unnecessary for Luo Yuan to do so. He walked towards the mutated beast very calmly. Along the way, he gradually decreased the pace of his heartbeat and aligned himself with the earth.

1000 meters, 500 meters, 300 meters...

The mutated beast laid motionless on the ground. Perhaps Luo Yuan's movements were too insignificant to trigger the senses of this beast since it was taking a nap. Luo Yuan was not discouraged by this. He suddenly lifted his foot and stepped heavily onto the ground.

Earth Stomp!

"Bang!"

The mutated beast was startled! Its eyes snapped open immediately as it released a roar and rose to its feet. But just when it stood up, its body trembled and its limbs were weak. It immediately collapsed to the ground heavily and its internal organs were oozing out from its mouth and nose along with blood. Luo Yuan remained calm despite the gruesome scene ahead of him. He stepped heavily on the ground again and this time, the mutated beast's throat started rattling... It was unable to make a sound. The beast's blood was no longer oozing out slowly but instead gushed out like a fountain! The surrounding was now filled with the rusty smell of blood.

Luo Yuan's Earth Stomp power had upgraded to level seven. As the upgrade was through his Sense, the range of his power than now increased 20 to 30 times but there was not much improvement in terms of his actual power. With this long distance and highly-damaging attack, even if this was a powerful level seven mutated

beast, it would not stand a chance! Luo Yuan continued to use his Earth Stomp power twice in succession and then exited his alignment with the earth. Just like that, the mutated beast had completely died. To avoid unnecessary trouble and to save time, Luo Yuan raised up his Zhanmadao and rapidly approached the mutated beast. In the next moment, he flashed his blade across the mutated beast and chopped off its head.

A minute after the mutated beast was beheaded, Luo Yuan received a notification that his task had been completed, hence, he inserted his Zhanmadao back into its sheath. In the blink of an eye, he was already at a faraway place. To him, the material from a level seven mutated beast was not as valuable as before. When the clock struck nine, Luo Yuan found another level seven mutated beast again. However, this time the mutated beast was not merely lying on the ground but was preparing to hunt. The mutated beast was very alert and extremely dangerous in this condition. However, it was barely a hassle for Luo Yuan.

After he cautiously approached the mutated beast, he used his Earth Stomp again. As the size of this mutated beast was rather large and the distance between its belly and ground was more than 20 meters, if he attacked the body it would not be powerful enough to kill it so he planned to attack the limbs. The next moment, its front legs suddenly exploded! Without any warning, the thousand-pound body collapsed on the ground which caused the ground to tremor.

Before it stood up, Luo Yuan took the opportunity to use another three Earth Stomps consecutively and proceeded to chop off its head using his Zhanmadao.

...

Two mutated beasts annihilated with ease. Luo Yuan looked at the system and learned that his experience had reached 275920/307200. He suspected that he would be able to upgrade after he completed one more task. However, his luck seemed to be running out as he was unable to find anymore level seven mutated beasts until noon. Fortunately, Luo Yuan was not in a rush to level up. Completing two tasks in one morning was already good enough for him.

Luo Yuan then kept circling the jungle. He subconsciously looked around and sensed something vaguely familiar which made him feel like he was here before. Luo Yuan generally had a very good memory so after taking some time to recall, he finally remembered that this was where he found the Demonic Horseman. He immediately looked to the other direction where he recalled the house of the mutated woman should be located.

Chapter 409: Reunited With The Mutated Woman

Although Luo Yuan only traveled with the mutated woman for a few days, it was during the loneliest period he had ever experienced in the wilderness. With her companionship, the whole trip had become rather enjoyable and fascinating. However, these days the pressure of the invasion of the extraterrestrial civilization had been lingering in his mind. He was kept awake every night with tremendous pressure, hence, he had forgotten about her until he came to this place.

He knew that it was irresponsible to leave her alone at that strange and treacherous place but he did it to protect her. He wondered if she was still here or not. Since he was here now, he decided to look since it would not take much of his time. He stopped searching for level seven mutated beasts and untied the strap on his forehead to start his space-time bubble flight. He flew towards Guizhou.

He still remembered the route that he passed through and by referencing the coordination of the mountain, he reached his destination in a flash without straying off track. Luo Yuan looked at the familiar scene and recalled his memories of her from some time ago. This was the area where he had left her. He walked slowly towards the cave that he stayed in before and found that there was no one there. He sniffed the air and his heart sank.

The scent left behind by the mutated woman had faded. To his horror, she had already left the place at least a few days ago if not more. Luo Yuan carefully looked around the cave again. There

were some changes in the cave since he had left. Most notably, there was a stack of grass with a human shape imprinted on it. Apparently, this was the nest of the mutated woman. It seemed like she had stayed here for a few days after he left but had also left for some reason.

There were many reasons for leaving. Perhaps she felt threatened by the mutated beasts in the surrounding or she went back to her original place after she had waited too long for his return. Or perhaps she had been killed on the way back from hunting. He thought that he should not let her follow him in the first place because it was harmful to her. So, his heart was heavy when he had this thought. However, after walking only 50 to 60 meters away from the cave, he suddenly picked up something with his nose. He stopped and sniffed. He smelled a clear scent of her nearby. Seemed like she was here quite recently.

Luo Yuan's face lighted up and his heart was racing. It seemed like she never left and just stayed somewhere nearby but not in the original cave. He was confident about this prediction. He suspected that the spacious cave had somehow made her more anxious and insecure so she might have found another place to stay. He immediately followed the scent and began to look for her. A few minutes later, he climbed over a hill and came to a cliff that was full of vines. The scent of the mutated woman was even stronger here so it was obvious that she was living in this area. It was around five to six kilometers away from the original cave. There were many thick vines that hung down from the top of the cliff which naturally formed a ladder for climbing.

Luo Yuan extended the use of his Sense to scan the whole area and found that all the rocks and cliffs that were shaded by the

vines immediately revealed themselves in front of him. Soon, he located a location and slowly flew towards there. He pulled off the thick and heavy vines and sneaked into the cave. It was a very small entrance so Luo Yuan had to crouch to enter. It was humid inside with occasional drops of water leaking out from the walls. Other than this, it was generally clean and well-arranged inside. He did not see any small rocks or bones inside the cave and even the mosses that grew on the walls had been carefully cleaned.

Luo Yuan also found some transparent stones at a corner. Most of the stones were crystal minerals and some jewelry that was abandoned before the apocalypse. He did not know that the mutated woman had such a strange hobby to collect jewelry. It seemed like she kept rummaging around during her free time. However, the thing that affirmed him that this was the nest of the mutated woman was the bottle of mineral water lying on the ground. This was the water bottle that Luo Yuan gave her before he left. It was placed under the place where the water leaked from the wall and had now overflowed.

The living environment here was rather atrocious. It was dark, humid and stifling. Luo Yuan had been feeling uncomfortable though he had just stayed inside for a while. However, this place was apparently more secure compared to the spacious cave. Since she was not here now, Luo Yuan guessed that she could be hunting so he waited. Approximately half an hour later, the mutated woman was back.

She was as flexible as an ape on a tree and headed back to the cave at a shocking speed. She was holding the knife that Luo Yuan gave her in her mouth while her hands were empty. If Luo Yuan did not notice the blood stain on her mouth, he would have

thought that she failed to hunt for any food today. Apparently, she was just very cautious not to bring any danger back to her home. She finished her food before she went back to the cave to avoid leaving any smell of blood that could bring unnecessary danger.

When she was close to the cliff, she let go of the branches, stretched her body and soared like a bird for 10 meters. Just before she landed, she grabbed the hanging vines in reach and quickly climbed upward to the cave.

Suddenly, her body stiffened and she jerked to a stop. She noticed that her house had been invaded by an unknown creature so she was on high alert. Her breath became long and soft, and at the same time, her tiny fangs were slightly exposed. She was like an experienced hunter slowly crawling towards the cave. While she was halfway through climbing the vines, a familiar face appeared in front of her.

When the mutated woman saw Luo Yuan's face, she quivered as if she saw a ghost or evil spirit. She quickly leaped and jumped down. She was about 100 meters above the ground so jumping from a height like this would kill just about anything, however, she was already familiar with the plants and trees here, and her body was extremely agile. By the time when she was close to the ground, she grabbed on a vine timely and flew to another branch 100 meters away by leveraging on the force of the swing.

Her heart was racing. Still worried, she quickly continued to run for another 10 meters and then sneaked into dense bushes and disappeared. After a long pause, she stretched out her head and stared at Luo Yuan without blinking. Luo Yuan was dumbfounded

and wondered if he was really that frightening.

Perhaps he was too harsh when he left her and it still frightened her to the point where it had become a phobia.

Luo Yuan jumped down from the cave as well. The mutated woman saw it and immediately hid again but her eyes were still staring at Luo Yuan through the gaps between the leaves.

"Come!" Luo Yuan instructed with a wave of his hand. The mutated woman refused to budge and continued to be vigilant

"Come here." Luo Yuan said again.

Only now did the mutated woman seem to understand what he said. But, she still hesitated. After a while, she reluctantly walked out from the bushes. It felt like the relationship between them had not been as close as it had been last time.

"Come further." Luo Yuan continued to wave.

The mutated woman slowed down her steps as she was very cautious by nature and had a simple mind like that of a little girl. She wanted to be close with Luo Yuan but was scared to get hurt. When she was about 30 to 40 meters away from Luo Yuan, she refused to walk any closer.

"If so, then I will go." Luo Yuan remarked and pretended to leave her. After this, he turned over and flew away. The mutated woman

suddenly looked nervous and gave out a hissing sound which seemed like she wanted to stop Luo Yuan from leaving. However, Luo Yuan pretended he did not hear and kept flying away.

The mutated woman was now anxious and quickly ran in Luo Yuan's direction to try to catch up with him. However, no matter how fast she ran, it was impossible for her to catch up with Luo Yuan's speed. Even if he did not initiate his space-time bubble flight, he was still 10 times faster than her. In just a second, he vanished from her sight.

The mutated woman was finally in great panic and rushed after him without any second thoughts. After running for 10 minutes, she carelessly stepped on a dried branch and fell from a tree. She rolled over in pain on the ground and immediately stood up to climb the tree to continue running. The branches on the tree kept scratching her face and soon there were blood stains and scars on her face.

After some time, she was not able to run anymore. She stopped disappointedly; wheezing and unable to breathe. She squatted down on a branch helplessly like an abandoned kitten. Luo Yuan was quietly watching her from afar. He felt mixed feelings in his heart. After all, he was still a human being with feelings.

At first, he just wanted to visit her and check on her current state. He could still occasionally come visit her whenever he thought of her since he would train here. As a mutated human, the wilderness was the place that she should stay at after all. If he brought her to the Reconstruction Area, it could be very difficult for her to adapt.

But looking at her now, Luo Yuan felt guilty to leave her alone again. He sighed and landed on the ground. Step by step he walked towards the mutated woman. When he drew closer, the depressed mutated woman immediately looked up. When she saw Luo Yuan, her depressed look changed to a look of content. Her eyes were now flashing with excitement.

The mutated woman hissed a few times with a look of excitement and quickly ran to Luo Yuan. She stared at Luo Yuan without blinking, seemingly worried that he would suddenly vanish again.

"Such a troublemaker." Luo Yuan scolded jokingly, though she might not have understood what he was saying. He continued and asked, "Do you really want to follow me?"

Luo Yuan had decided that he could bring her back as a pet. This mutated woman was smarter than expected and gentle so if he did not hurt her, she would not hurt him as well. With his current position at the Reconstruction Area, it should not be a big deal to bend or even break the rules. The mutated woman did not understand and scratched her head in confusion. But when she saw the smile on Luo Yan's face, she smiled back awkwardly. This was the first-time Luo Yuan saw her this way.

Luo Yuan stretched out his hand and whispered, "Come, hold me."

He repeatedly said this several times, "Come on."

The mutated woman was smarter than normal mutated beasts so she quickly understood this gesture. After hesitating for a while, she decided to comply. Perhaps Luo Yuan's sudden departure earlier had scared her. This time, she did not dare defy Luo Yan's orders.

She walked slowly towards Luo Yuan and raised her hand. Just when as their fingers touched each other's, she was scared and retracted as if she experienced an electric shock. But this time, she did not run away.

"Relax, don't be afraid!" Luo Yuan tried to calm her down.

She then boldly held out her hand even though Luo Yuan was not too sure that he understood her. When she touched Luo Yuan's palm, she wanted to retract her hand again but Luo Yan held on tight.

"Hiss!" The mutated woman was scared and tried to struggle. After a while, when she realized that Luo Yuan did not want to hurt her, she calmed down and looked at Luo Yuan. She saw his two hands that were holding hers and her face lit up with an excited look.

Her hand was not as rough as Luo Yuan expected. Not only was her palm delicate, even the scaly part of her hand was very smooth. However, her body temperature was slightly lower than average. It was only about 30 degrees. Thus, when Luo Yuan held her hand he felt a little uncomfortable.

She was petite in size, but she wasn't light. It was very difficult to fly with her. Luo Yuan held her hand and brought her to a higher place to start his space-time bubble flight immediately. In just a moment, a light shot across the sky silently. He flew rapidly towards the Reconstruction Area and within half an hour, they landed. Hope City was right in front of them.

After landing, Luo Yuan looked at the mutated woman awkwardly. The mutated woman was still hugging Luo Yuan tightly and did not want to let go. Her naked body was shivering vigorously. Luo Yuan did not expect that she would be scared. He just realized that it was slightly embarrassing that she was naked as it was not far away from Hope City. There were always people who passed by and if they were seen, it would be a complete disgrace to Luo Yuan. He tried to let go of the hands and legs of the mutated woman but failed. She was simply too stunned by the speedy flight.

At last, Luo Yuan had to use his Will to control her to reluctantly step away. She walked wobbly in a circle and finally sat on the ground as if she was drunk. Luo Yuan looked at her naked body and felt his head throbbing. He did not care much when they were in the wilderness but it would be immoral when they back at the Reconstruction Area. He thought for a moment... and then took off his clothes and draped it on her regardless of her struggles.

Luo Yuan looked at her from top to bottom and was satisfied with her look. He was 1.8 meters tall while she was only 1.5 meters tall so his shirt looked more like a dress when she wore it. At least it covered her scaly and naked body. She looked just like any other human apart from her calves and eyes.

Chapter 410: Without A Solution

Luo Yuan waited for some time before the mutated woman finally woke up. A flood of relief fell upon her as she glanced over and saw Luo Yuan. She then diverted her attention towards the city which was located not far away and kept her gaze upon it.

As the major city in the Reconstruction Area, Hope City was undoubtedly a spectacle of delight. The city was in the midst of developing and countless rows of factories had been built. From afar, the smokestack of each factory looked like a giant tree which grew as high as the clouds; giving the illusion that the entire city was one gigantic forest in the sky. The environment was completely different from the forest she understood based on her memory.

She was so captivated by her surroundings to the extent that she had not blinked once since she woke up. The thought of everything she saw seemed so fascinating and yet scary at the same time due to its unfamiliarity. However, she liked the feeling as it felt like she was home. She seemed to have recalled seeing these scenes in her dreams before.

Her mind was so occupied with everything that was happening that she did not hear Luo Yuan calling to her until he repeated himself a second time.

"Stop dreaming. Let's go!" Luo Yuan said as he patiently waited for her. Both of them then hurried towards Hope City.

The mutated human was anxious as she tried to regain control over her limbs and legs while maintaining her distance from Luo Yuan as they moved through the forest. Unfortunately, she slipped and almost fell face-down onto the floor. Only then did she realize that her body was wrapped in a soft object which made her feel uncomfortable.

She is used to being naked and the clothes she dawned felt like a manacle to her. Her motions were now very restricted and she felt extremely insecure. She was also very frustrated and a furious expression was clearly shown on her face - exposing her tiny sharp teeth while she tried tearing off the clothes. However, she later realized that she could not tear off the clothes regardless of how much force she used. This is because the clothes that she was wearing was in actual fact a synthetic suit made from level eight materials which required her to have a higher level in abilities to destroy.

She started panicking as she saw that Luo Yuan and was constantly gaining more ground ahead of her and chased after him in a quick but clumsy manner. Luo Yuan could not help but laugh at her reaction. A mutated human would need some time to adapt to putting on the suit. However, Luo Yuan did not want to see her naked when he arrived home. Even if he did want it, he was certain that the other women back home would not allow it.

Finally, after what seemed like countless hours of running (to the mutated human), she could see that they were nearly arriving at Hope City and a glimmer of happiness rose in her heart. However, they were caught by surprise when a group of soldiers armed with rifles and whistles came out of nowhere and stopped them dead in their tracks just as they were arriving close to the city's entrance.

Luo Yuan saw that the guards were on a high alert as though they were preparing for a possible attack. Luo Yuan could see that even though both of them were in the line of sight of the rifles held by the guards, most of them had been mainly targeted at the mutated human.

It was difficult for her to avoid being detected even though she had disguised herself by wearing clothes due to the peculiar way she was walking. "Stop, my dear colleague. As you know, according to the management policies, all mutated creatures are not allowed to enter the city. You have to destroy the mutated human." An officer said with a furious tone. It was fortunate that Luo Yuan did not look like a citizen with an upper-class status. Otherwise, the commanding officer might have been harsher to him.

The mutated human quickly hid behind Luo Yuan as she saw that the soldiers were closing in on her. She glared at them with furious eyes and exposed her sharp teeth with a sound "Sssssss".

Luo Yuan comforted her with a calm expression on his face. He then took out his ID, passed it to the commanding officer, and said, "Relax, I guarantee she will not be a threat to anyone." Luo Yuan said calmly.

"That's not up to you..." The officer said as he took the ID from Luo Yuan. He simply took one glance at the ID and his expression changed instantly.

"Lieutenant General!"

"Deputy Minister of the Firearms Bureau!?"

He was shocked when he discovered Luo Yuan's true identity and quickly bowed to apologize, "I'm so sorry, sir! I did not know you were a minister!"

Next, he immediately turned around and told his subordinates, "Everyone, put your guns down!"

"We sincerely apologize for our reckless action. Please do not be offended by us." The officer said in repentance.

"It is alright. I hope I did not cause any trouble for you. May I leave now?" Luo Yuan said.

"Sure!" The officer quickly replied. He was not authorized to question the judgment of people from that ranking anyway.

Even if he reports the scene to the upper management, his report would surely be neglected due to the huge discrepancy in ranking between him and Luo Yuan. Thus, he was not willing to risk his career by offending someone from as high a position as Luo Yuan.

The commanding officer only had a basic level ranking and did not know much about the Firearms Bureau. Even so, he knew for a fact that even the military officers would not simply offend the Firearms Bureau as the evolved humans working in there were an important asset to the military in many ways. This fact applied even more to Luo Yuan who was the Deputy Minister there. Not to

mention also being one of the most powerful evolved humans in that department.

Luo Yuan smiled and nodded at the commanding officer before proceeding to enter the city. The mutated human took this opportunity to taunt the soldiers by producing a hissing sound that surrounded her as she walked by them to catch up with Luo Yuan as she knew they were afraid of him. However, she quickly hid behind Luo Yuan again and followed him closely when the soldiers started scowling at her in an angry manner.

"Sir! Who the hell is that? Why did you look worried?" A soldier asked when he saw Luo Yuan and the mutated human were already a distance away from them.

"Damn you! Do you not know that he is a very powerful person? Even our chief leader would have needed to bow and be polite to him!" The officer said.

"Have you heard of the Firearms Bureau!?" The officer continued to ask with a mad expression.

Some of the soldiers nodded while most of them seemed puzzled. This was because a majority of the soldiers stationed at the city's entrance during that day consisted mostly of low-level ranking soldiers.

"The Firearms Bureau is a department which operates directly under the federal government and the members of the department consists solely of super strong evolved humans, especially the

Deputy Minister who is also the Lieutenant General." The officer continued to explain. In fact, that was also his first encounter with such a powerful person that it was a bit difficult for him not to be agitated. He could not wait to share more about what he knew with his fellow soldiers.

All of the soldiers took a deep breath. Though they knew little about the history of the bureau, they could tell that a Lieutenant General is someone who holds quite a high authority in the military based on their basic knowledge as soldiers. Besides that, the only other person they knew who had such a title was the commanding officer of their army in the military group. None of them had expected Luo Yuan, who was even younger than them, to hold such a high position.

They would have been even more in shock and might have even lost their ability to breathe if they knew that the federal government had classified Luo Yuan as the most dangerous person who ever existed and that they see him as a human weapon.

This fact about Luo Yuan also made every action taken by him to be of the highest concern to the government. Lately, it is becoming increasingly difficult for Luo Yuan to keep a low profile as he had been flying around the Reconstruction Area and it was hard to avoid being detected.

His fastest flight speed was three times the speed of sound when he was flying at his maximum potential which was the same speed as an airborne missile. An even more shocking discovery was made by an automated reconnaissance aircraft which happened to be recording in the vicinity during that particular time. It was a beam

of light traveling in the air. No one could have imagined a living organism could have traveled at such a speed if Luo Yuan had not exposed his identity when he arrived at the Reconstruction Area.

The short video clip was being live streamed to the information security center and was then sent to the Intelligence Department. The results calculated by the program showed that Luo Yuan had been traveling at an insane speed of 12.34 kilometers per second.

He was even faster than the traveling speed of the nuclear intercontinental missile and the electromagnetic guns in the Reconstruction Area. To sum it up, nothing could have beaten his speed in the Reconstruction Area except their laser weapons. Even the most powerful missiles could not hurt him unless he allowed it to detonate near him and only the super strong radiation rays could cause severe harm to him. Other than that, he definitely had enough time to escape based on the velocity that he could reach.

Nevertheless, Luo Yuan was careful enough to conceal the weaknesses of his power to the upper management such as the fact that he needed some time to initiate his space-time bubble flight mode. Besides that, the acceleration process before he could reach his maximum velocity was rather slow. However, Luo Yuan was not afraid of an attack from the Reconstruction Area even without his space-time bubble flight ability. This is because he still had other powerful abilities to rely on. He could drill into the ground two seconds before an explosion could take place and escape from the rays before slowly initiating the space-time bubble flight mode to form an isolated defense space. It might have been impossible for Luo Yuan to determine the explosion at the last minute but because of Sensitivity, he would have been able to predetermine any explosions that were about to occur and avoid attacks even

from a laser weapon would have been easy with the aid of his Foresight ability.

Nothing could be hidden from his ability to foresee the future even if the preparations were perfectly planned. Not even if they knew beforehand that Luo Yuan had this ability. Attempting to kill him was basically a solution-less situation. That was also the reason why Luo Yuan was not afraid to reveal his Foresight ability to Ling Zhong-an as he knew that his action would not come back to bite him...

Chapter 411: First Experience Of Human Life

The mutated woman started to sneeze as soon as they entered Hope City which made her feel awkward. Pollution in the urban area is becoming very serious nowadays. The air was filled with a layer of gray mist and there was a foul odor lingering in the air. It was hardly suitable for the mutated woman who was used to the fresh air in the jungle.

Even though the journey had been challenging up until now, she was still very excited. She had felt more secure and less threatened by her environment since she entered the city. She kept looking around and sometimes stopped to gaze longer at things which caught her attention. It was only when she realized that Luo Yuan had moved quite a distance away from her that she would then start to pick up her own pace in order to catch up with him.

Fortunately for them, this was not the workers' commuting time and therefore the street was far less crowded than it would otherwise have been. As a matter of fact, the street was almost empty except for a few cars that passed by. Luo Yuan felt relieved as he feels that the strange looks and behavior of the mutated woman might end up causing a huge commotion between the townspeople.

After walking through the city for some time, they arrived at what seemed to be an underground passage. Surprisingly enough, the air smelled fresher underground as compared to what the mutated woman had experienced when she was walking through the city. She eventually stopped sneezing. After walking for about 10 minutes, they arrived at a door.

"Well, this is your home from now on." Luo Yuan smiled and said to the mutated woman before knocking on the door.

However, the mutated woman did not hear anything he said. Instead, she was focusing on the light bulb which was hanging right above her. She had a high tendency of being easily attracted to shiny and bright stuff. All she could think about at that moment was how she could get her hands on that light bulb to be made as part of her collection.

Zhao Yali was the one who opened the door. When she saw Luo Yuan she asked curiously, "Why are you back so early today?"

"I met a mutated human today and out of sympathy for her situation, I decided to bring her back home," answered Luo Yuan.

The mutated woman became aware of Zhao Yali's presence as soon as she opened the door and quickly hid behind Luo Yuan. Zhao Yali saw that there was a pair of curious amber eyes moving up and down from behind Luo Yuan's body as if it was scanning her.

It was only at this moment that Zhao Yali noticed that there was a lady behind Luo Yuan. Both women started scanning one another but when Zhao Yali met eye to eye with the mutated woman, she saw that the mutated woman was suddenly frightened and almost screamed.

"Well, we have gone through so much but you are still so timid.

Don't worry, she won't bite. Let's go inside first. Is everyone at home? "Luo Yuan saw her expression and knew that she was scared. He could not help but giggle.

Generally, anybody who met the mutated woman for the first time would be struck with the same spine-chilling feeling. Zhao Yali calmed down slightly. She was just shocked as she was not prepared to meet someone like her. Otherwise, it would not have been so bad. After all, it was not the first time she saw a mutated human. In the past, she had even managed to live together with Chen Xianfeng for such a long time even though she was scarier and had a very bad temper.

She stared at Luo Yuan and said, "Everyone is home except for Xia Guang who has gone to work." However, she was still worried and complained, "Why did you want to bring a mutated human back? Does she really not hurt people?"

"Don't worry, she is even more timid than you." Luo Yuan said. He was quite reassuring on this point. Furthermore, if she had been braver and more familiar towards humans in the past, she would not have been so easily captured by a mere human. Of course, this was not the only reason why he was certain of it. He had also used his abilities on her earlier so he was pretty much assured of his statement. He knew that she had a certain degree of reasoning ability. Not only was there food and drink provided to her here but also shelter and safety. Therefore, there was basically no reason for her to be aggravated and start to hurt people.

A few people immediately stood up when they saw Luo Yuan enter the living room with the mutated woman tagging along

behind him. Only Chen Jiayi, who was slow in response, stood up a few seconds later.

It became clear that Wang Shishi was the bravest among the group. While all the others members were still in a state of shock from this turn of events, she calmly walked towards Luo Yuan to take a closer look at the mutated woman. She was fascinated at the sight of the mutated woman and thought aloud saying, "Hey look! It is a mutated human!"

Luo Yuan nodded and repeated the words that he had just told Zhao Yali. He further explained, "She had been following me around for some time when I was in the mining area. Today, I met her again and sympathized with how she was living alone in the jungle so I decided to invite her home to stay with us. Which brings me to the question, do we still have any food? If so, please give some of it to her."

"Yes, we do. Does she eat meat?" Huang Jiahui quickly replied while casting a curious glance over at the uneasy mutated woman.

"She is not picky when it comes to food and eats both meat and vegetables. However, she stills prefers meat over vegetables." Answered Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan deduced her eating habits based on his experience of traveling with her. Luo Yuan knew for a fact that she still had the human omnivorous eating habits within her even though she was a mutated woman because she could eat the same things Luo Yuan ate which included both meat and vegetables.

Huang Jiahui proceeded to the kitchen to retrieve the leftovers they had kept from lunch and brought it to the table. She took into

consideration that Luo Yuan might be back for lunch and even prepared an extra portion of food for him. The dishes were made from high-grade ingredients and because most of the woman living in the house had small appetites, the dishes were hardly touched.

The tasty smell coming from the food immediately attracted the attention of the mutated woman. She could not help herself from the scent that was coming from the food and kept alternating her vision between Luo Yuan and the food that was sitting on the table. She saw that the crowd was far away from the table and as Luo Yuan was just beside her, she gathered up enough courage to step out slightly from behind Luo Yuan.

Faster than a ninja cat, she gently leaped across the table to pick up a big plate of stew before disappearing back behind Luo Yuan again.

Luo Yuan was taken by surprise at her next actions. She gave a tuck at Luo Yuan's pants and when he turned around, she offered him the plate of stew while gesturing him to eat first. Luo Yuan could tell that the mutated woman really wanted to eat the stew as she kept her eyes fixed on it and was even watering at her mouth.

"Aww... She really does care a lot about you." Huang Jiahui teased Luo Yuan without the slightest hint of jealousy. She believed that no matter how lustful Luo Yuan was, he would most certainly not fall for a mutated human.

Though many of them knew that mutated humans possessed a certain degree of intelligence, the rate at which the mutated woman was learning and adapting exceeded most of their

expectations. Luo Yuan was dumbfounded by her actions. This was, in fact, his first time seeing a humane act from the mutated woman. Apparently, she was closer to him than he thought.

"You. Eat." Luo Yuan replied while pushing the bowl back to her. This action was to help her to understand the human language faster.

Perhaps it was because the gesture and words spoken by Luo Yuan were related to the food, she immediately understood. Her eyes lit up and she quickly took a big piece of meat with her hands and stuffed the entire thing into her mouth. She was eating in such a rushed manner that she was scattering the stew everywhere, leaving greasy marks all over Luo Yuan's pants and the floor.

In less than a minute, the entire bowl of stew had gone down into her stomach and not a speck of meat could be seen in the bowl. She had practically licked the bowl clean. Her eyes immediately went back to the other food which was sitting on the table. She quickly grabbed the next plate of food which was closest to her and started eating. Within a short time, the mutated woman had finished eating all the leftovers; leaving behind only a stack of empty plates on the table. She shifted herself back behind Luo Yuan and gave a loud burp.

"Let's get her clean shall we? She looks like she could use a nice bath." Wang Shishi suggested. She seemed to have taken an interest in the mutated woman.

"Do not worry about her eating habits as she has been eating that way for a long time. She even used to eat raw meat in the past so

technically she would not fall sick easily. We will teach her slowly to adapt to our culture of doing things one step at a time." Luo Yuan suggested. It did strike his mind to help the mutated woman to shower as she did not seem to allow anyone else but Luo Yuan to touch her.

However, he quickly decided against it as the mutated woman was a mature lady even though her features looked different from them. He felt that his actions of helping the mutated woman take a bath would certainly be criticized and thought badly of by the other ladies in the house.

The presence of the mutated woman made the house feel even more crowded. Wang Xianguang was given a surprise when she reached home later that evening to find the mutated woman living in her house.

Luo Yuan explained to the mutated woman that Wang Xianguang was not a threat and only then did she let her guard down. She was beginning to adapt to her surrounding environment and people and did not feel as nervous as before. However, she still hid behind Luo Yuan most of the time. Probably because there was an innocent look to her, everyone could quickly accept her as part of their family.

The house that was given to them by the Reconstruction Area was huge. At night, they were able to immediately sort out a new bedroom for the mutated woman. Chen Jiayi replaced the mutated woman's worn out clothes with some of her own.

Although she was reluctant and seemed uneasy, under the

comfort of Luo Yuan's abilities, she still wore the clothes and resisted trying to tear it apart.

...

Luo Yuan decided to sleep in Zhao Yali's bedroom that night. They made love for about an hour before they decided to call it a night. Zhao Yali asked Luo Yuan while they were resting on the bed, "Do you think the mutated woman can be cured?"

Luo Yuan thought for a while and answered, "I don't think so." Unlike Chen Jiayi, her mutation had deeply affected her genes. It was impossible to cure her. Zhao Yali was relieved at this piece of news. She felt that the mutated woman looked scary at first but eventually found her to be quite charming once she got to know her. She purposely went to help the mutated woman change her clothes earlier as she wanted to ensure that Luo Yuan did not get a chance to see her naked.

Other than the scales which formed on her back, the mutated woman looked exactly like an ordinary person. In addition, her skin was very smooth and her figure was something most woman would kill for.

Zhao Yali believed that if not for the fact that she was a mutated woman, Luo Yuan would have fallen head over heels for her by now. At least now she still had narrow eyes and a scaly back which prevented Luo Yuan from being too attracted to her.

Luo Yuan was laid down in a relaxed position on the bed;

completely oblivious to the reality that deep down Zhao Yali was secretly thinking about him. How could he blame her? She had lost her virginity to Luo Yuan while they were on the way back to her hometown. It is not surprising that she has a strong feeling towards Luo Yuan and was jealous when he was nice to other women.

She felt the fatigue slowly drain over her body and after 10 minutes of talking, she slowly fell into a deep sleep while hugging Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan also felt sleepy and started closing his eyes.

Just as he was about to doze off, the door slowly opened.

He knew that the person that entered his room was none other than the mutated woman just by listening to the bare footsteps on the floor. He was slightly astonished as he did not know she had learned how to open the door.

The shadow quietly crept around the room. Luo Yuan opened his eyes as soon as he heard the sound of the footsteps but immediately closed it again as he did not want to startle the mutated woman. He knew that since this was her first day living in the house, she must be quite curious about her surrounding environment and is trying to take in everything that she saw around her.

The mutated woman looked at Luo Yuan first who was sleeping bed and then shifted her gaze over to Zhao Yali who was hugging Luo Yuan. She stood there as if she was deep in thought while watching them sleep. After standing there for some time, she proceeded over to lie down on the floor at the side of the bed.

...

Luo Yuan woke up before dawn the next day. After performing some stretches on the bed, he went over to the wardrobe to get changed. The mutated woman was awakened by the sound of his footsteps.

She had a high tendency of being woken up by even the slightest sound made as she was used to living in the dangerous wilderness and being extremely alert was second nature to her.

Chen Jiayi's old pajamas fitted her body perfectly except for the obvious bulge formed by her breasts. She yawned before turning around to see Luo Yuan. Immediately her eyes were attracted to his naked body and she started scanning him from top to bottom with a curious expression.

Luo Yuan had not bothered to put his clothes back on after having sex with Zhao Yali last night. He felt kind of awkward when he finally realized that the mutated woman was staring directly at his naked body. To make things worse, he could tell that her intent was purely based on the desire to know more about the human body and there were no lustful thoughts involved. Luo Yuan became embarrassed and quickly put on his clothes before dashing out of the room without looking back at her.

The mutated woman got up and immediately followed him. She squatted in front of the door and curiously observed Luo Yuan's movements as he went into the bathroom to wash up. Luo Yuan

was dumbfounded. He was prepared to resolve the issue that he had with the mutated woman but decided against it after seeing her actions. He returned to his bedroom to retrieve his weapon before heading quietly to the entrance of the house.

She seemed to understand that Luo Yuan was heading out and immediately became very energetic; hissing a couple of times while preparing herself to follow him out. She happily followed Luo Yuan to the door but Luo Yuan turned and stopped her before he opened the door, "Listen to me and stay here. I will be back at night." The mutated woman seemed to understand what he said. She suddenly became down and listless, until Luo Yuan used his abilities to comfort her.

Luo Yuan breathed a sigh of relief as he was worried that the mutated woman would insist on following him. He walked out through the door and soon disappeared into the underground passage ahead.

The mutated woman stood for some time at the door even after seeing Luo Yuan disappear into the darkness. She no longer needed to attach herself to him. After all, she knew that this was Luo Yuan's home and he would always come back to it no matter what.

She closed the door shortly afterward and quickly sneaked back to her own bedroom without making a sound. The decoration in the room was simple with only a dressing table visible to her other than the bed she was supposed to be sleeping on last night.

She looked curiously at her reflection in the mirror and played with herself for some time in front of the mirror. However, she

quickly found herself becoming bored and diverted her attention towards the bed. The quilts were still neatly stacked. Suddenly, she had an idea and went to open the quilt before she proceeded to cover her bed with it until she was satisfied with the setting. She then sneaked under the comfort of the quilt and laid her head on the soft pillow. Her eyes narrowed slightly as she held her own arms tightly around herself as if she was holding something in front of her.

Chapter 412: Upgrade

Luo Yuan took off into the sky at maximum speed as soon as left Hope City. When he knew that he was safely out of range from the Reconstruction Area, he activated his space-time bubble flight mode. Luo Yuan momentarily lost his sense of gravity and hovered in the air when the bubble formed. He began to pick up speed as the seconds went by and after 10 minutes, he traveled across the sky like a stream of light and disappeared into oblivion.

His understanding of space and time became better from his multiple attempts at using this power. Despite the four-dimensional space and its mystique, the basic mechanics of fluid dynamics still applied. Thus, his scientific knowledge was enough to help him keep on improving this magical way to fly. Every time he flew, he discovered several different unique skills and improvements. The most obvious improvement was that the time he required to kick start his flight mode had been significantly reduced. He used to take about 30 seconds when he had first started to learn how to use it but now it only took him about seven or eight seconds to form the space-time bubble. However, he still had a long way to go before he reached a state where he would be able to instantly do so. He was certain that he would be able to continue reducing the startup time up to a record time of 2 seconds when his Will had grown stronger. When the day came, he would be fearless of any situation.

This is because the space-time bubble was not only useful for pushing an object at a fast speed. During times of crisis, it was also the perfect defense. It was basically a separate dimension from the three-dimensional world so if Luo Yuan was not attacked by extreme power like a high-density energy wave that would interfere with the fourth-dimensional space, he would be able to

escape. Of course, the only issue with this is that Luo Yuan also could not attack when he enters the fourth dimension.

...

Luo Yuan had gotten up early that particular morning. His clock showed that it was 3.00am when he left the house. When Luo Yuan arrived at the jungle (which was at about 3.30am), the sky was still dark and the jungle looked eerie with occasional roars coming from what seemed to be hungry predators living in the forest. It was during this time that most of the mutated beasts were active and would come out to hunt their preys.

This scenario did not seem to scare Luo Yuan at all as he was an evolved human who was more powerful than any mutated beast he had ever encountered. He swiftly made his way through the jungle in search of level seven mutated beasts to be slain. Occasionally, he was forced to draw his blade to kill some of the lower level beasts that stood in his path.

Luo Yuan searched high and low and soon encountered the target he had been searching for. It was a monstrous, giant mutated snake that was covered in gold and silver shiny scales that glittered in the dark. Its body was three meters long and it curled itself into what looked like a big mountain. Its mouth was huge and looked scarier than an ordinary snake's. The snake rested its head lazily on top of its body. From closer observations, Luo Yuan could see that the snake had a pair of golden eyes which shined in the dark. He could also see that the snake just had a feast judging from the bulge in its belly.

He also deduced that the snake was poisonous judging from the drops of saliva that were dripping from its mouth. He could see that the areas that the dripping saliva touched were corroded; leaving behind a trail of pus and smoke. Despite this, Luo Yuan was not too worried about the toxic venom that was in the snake's saliva as he only had to make sure that he did not touch it. Based on his Physique, he was sure that it would have been an easy feat. He was also certain that the air surrounding the snake was not poisonous as there were many pests flying around.

What made him hesitant to attack the snake was that this type of mutated beast usually had a strong vitality. Luo Yuan knew that the snake's weakness would have to either be its head or its heart, however, it was also difficult to pinpoint the fatal point of the snake as it had a long body; which meant his Earth Stomp ability would not be as effective. If the mutated snake became enraged, things could get nasty for Luo Yuan.

The head was an easy target but as it was currently located high above the snake's body, it was out of the striking range of Luo Yuan's Earth Stomp ability. Even if he did manage to land an attack, the attack would not have done a significant amount of damage. On the other hand, the heart would have been easily in Luo Yuan's striking range if not for the fact that it was extremely hard for him to pinpoint its exact position due to the snake's long body. The reason why he could easily deal with most level seven mutated beasts was mainly because of his Foresight ability as well as his remote Earth Stomp attack. Despite possessing two powerful abilities, he would still have a tough fight against such a powerful giant mutated beast, however, Luo Yuan was not keen on losing his target as it was hard to come across a level seven mutated beast. He finally decided that he would risk it since he had his Foresight ability. He should be safe if he was careful.

He is generally not a decisive person but once Luo Yuan had made up his mind on accomplishing something, nothing could stop him from moving towards his goal. He took one step at a time, closing the gap between him and the snake. He steadied his pulse rate with the earth so as not to alert the snake of his presence. One thing good about hunting in the jungle was that it was located far away from the Reconstruction Area and therefore most of the mutated beasts living there were not aware of the risk imposed on them by evolved humans. They perceived humans as low-level mutated beasts that were not able to fill their tummies.

He slowly approached the mutated snake and used his Foresight to see the future. He watched the scene and his facial expression slightly changed. He then retreated hundreds of meters back. This beast was stronger than he expected as it was at the borderline of hitting level eight. In the scene he predicted, once its power came into action it would have a destructive force field around it and he could not even go close.

Luo Yuan looked around and saw a huge tree nearby. He suddenly had an idea and quickly hid behind the tree. The diameter of the tree was about 10 meters and it was so huge that it stood out in the open. The bark was covered mostly with moss and vines as well as some shrubs. Smaller trees had also grown around it. It had formed almost a separate ecosystem and was at least level six or above. Luo Yuan looked into the future again and suddenly calmed down. The snake's scales started falling off due to the high-frequency shock that it received and its blood splattered profusely out of its body onto the ground.

"Rawrrrwrrrr!" the mutated snake roared and screamed as pain

circulated its body from an invisible force. Even the trees which were located next to the mutated snake came crashing down and the rocks in the vicinity shattered into dust.

The snake's eyes turned amber red as it was enraged and it started darting left and right but could not escape or identify the culprit. Luo Yuan had strategically distanced himself about 400 meters away from the snake to ensure that he would not be affected by the devastating force field. He also had the benefit of size which gave him a tremendous advantage over the snake. He would not have been able to avoid detection by the snake had he been bigger! He then directed another Earth Stomp attack at the snake.

The intense pain inflicted by the Earth Stomp sent the snake into a fit of frenzy. It rolled around furiously; twisting and tossing its body in every direction, leaving behind a path of destruction in its place. The snake was successful in breaking free from the Earth Stomp a couple of times as it gained considerable ground between itself and Luo Yuan while it struggled but the pain was so intense that the snake had lost its mind. It was not even aware of Luo Yuan and just kept struggling and colliding with anything that was in its path.

The mutated snake grew weaker every time Luo Yuan successfully landed an attack on it until it finally stopped struggling completely and its head finally hit the ground. It only took a minute for Luo Yuan to determine that the snake had finally died. Luo Yuan decided to land one final Earth Stomp to the snake's head just to be sure. Despite being dead, its body still produced a spastic reaction to the attack. Luo Yuan then exited the earth state and flew forward quickly to chop its head off. The

surrounding air was instantly filled with a sweet aroma. However, due to Luo Yuan's strong Physique, the aroma did not have an impact on him. He gave the bloodied snake head one last look before kicking it away into a nearby shrub. Luo Yuan then dissected its body and removed its heart.

The snake's heart had been completely dissected into very fine pieces. Luo Yuan found an energy crystal the size of a thumb buried within the pile of dead meat. Fortunately, it was not broken. It was transparent and larger than usual as it had come from a mutated beast which was close to level eight. He could imagine how powerful the snake must have been in its prime. It is such a shame that it was not given the opportunity to reach its true potential before meeting its death.

He admired the energy crystal for a while before he decided to pop it into his mouth. For a split moment, his body grew warm as the energy crystal was being absorbed. He discovered that the level eight energy crystal in his heart had now grown significantly bigger. If compared to the energy crystal that he just ate, the one in his heart was about two times bigger. He hoped that it would continue to grow bigger and bigger. At this point, a system notification distracted his attention.

"Level D Task: Kill the Devil Python - Task has been completed."

"Completion time: Five minutes"

"Mission evaluation: Perfect!"

"Basic experience reward: 392!"

"Good evaluation. Experience: 392!"

"You have upgraded. Reward: attribute point(s): one, skill attribute points: five. You have now been upgraded to level 12."

"Your energy and injuries will be fully recovered!"

Luo Yuan was happy that he had finally reached a new level and immediately opened the properties panel.

"Name: Luo Yuan"

"Occupation: Hunter"

"Rating: 12"

"Experience: 47120/614400"

"Attributes"

"Strength: 17 (10)"

"Agility: 6 (10)"

"Physique: 17+7 (10)"

"Intelligence: 15 (10)"

"Sense: 16+1 (10)"

"Will: 17+1 (10)"

"Skills: Science 20, Mathematics 19, Chinese 19, English 16, Finance 17, Computer 15, Dance 1, Painting 3, Games 6, Negotiation 9, Communication 7, Cooking 3, Driving 1, Free combat specialist 1, Broadsword Expert 7, Gun 6, Throwing 15"

"Special skills: Identification, Synthesis, Detection"

"Innate ability: Earth Stomp (level 7); Four-Dimensional Vision (5%) Four-Dimensional Brain (2%)"

"Battle Beast: Giant lizard (level 3) Mountain moving ape (2)"

"Unassigned attribute point(s): 1"

"Unallocated skill points: 5"

...

He glanced at the extra attribute points that he recently obtained and pondered for a while before deciding to add them to his Will. His mind suddenly became blank as if he had just been struck by lightning! He immediately felt a huge difference in his state of mind which happened to have been very confused and disoriented moments ago. Everything became very clear and calm. He could feel a huge surge of energy coursing through his body and Luo Yuan was very clear that this was the power of his Will.

He shifted his view towards the tree that was nearby and waved his hands at it. A huge flash of lightning crashed down onto the tree! The mutated beasts that rested on the tree could not avoid the lightning and were immediately killed by it. Luo Yuan could see many dead carcasses raining down from the burnt tree. Some were even on fire. After this, he looked at the carcass of the mutated snake. This time, he did not produce any actions with his hands. With some focus, the ground had a thin flame above it and the surrounding hundred-meter radius was burnt including one-third of the carcass.

The flame appeared to be white in color and the temperature was at least a thousand degrees Celsius. Even though he stood five to six meters away, he could feel the heat sensation from the fire. The carcass that was originally burnt turned into white frost. Luo Yuan walked closer to touch it and realized that it was extremely sticky. In just half a minute, it was firmly stuck to his skin. Fortunately, he had relatively rough and sturdy skin; if it was an ordinary human, a layer of skin would have been torn off by the time he removed his hand. He realized that he could easily break the corpse into two just by stepping on it because it was frozen and most of

the energy of the snake had now dissipated; causing its defensive power to have tremendously weakened.

He clearly felt stronger now that there were 19 attribute points allocated to his Will. He could easily kill tons of low-level mutated beasts just by using a fraction of the power he possessed. With his current capabilities, especially after he turned on his four-dimensional vision, he knew that a stronger Will was very important and would gradually override all other attributes.

Furthermore, his space-time bubble flight ability was also closely related to his Will. Since the fate of humanity was now at stake due to the invasion of the extraterrestrial civilizations, this was the priority. In outer space, the first cosmic speed was not enough. He must be faster to fly into space and find the ship before his body is exhausted. He also figured out that most of his other attributes had a certain connection to his Will and that by allocating more points to his Will, he would generally be able to enhance his physical attributes at a faster rate.

...

Shortly afterward, Luo Yuan continued his search to find more level seven mutated beasts in hopes that it would trigger another task for him to complete. Unfortunately, his luck had run out as he realized that even though he had killed several level seven mutated beasts, no task completion notification had been triggered by his system which meant he had not been gaining experience points from them.

He finally concluded that unless he started searching for some

level eight mutated beast to fight, the system would no longer provide him with any experience points. This piece of news struck Luo Yuan hard and the joy and power he had felt from being able to upgrade to the next level seemed to be drained from him. He knew that with his current Physique, taking on a level eight mutated beast was a dangerous idea. His thoughts went back to the time when he met the Demonic Horseman. The gap in power between him and the creature had been so wide that even after he had improved several times over, he would have thought twice before facing another creature as powerful as it again.

Chapter 413: Circling Around The Earth

Since there was no reason to stay in the forest, Luo Yuan did not want to wait any longer. He switched into his flight mode and instantly broke through the dense layers of leaves above him. He realized that the additional points that were added into his Will (currently 19) had significantly improved his flight ability. It only took him three seconds to enter the space-time bubble as he broke his previous flight record and kept on accelerating. It was only 10 seconds later that he stopped accelerating and started to stabilize himself. He soared through the sky like a rocket and looked like a barely visible dot. He had broken through the clouds in only a short period of time and the rays from the Sun sparkled down onto his body making it shine like gold.

He was traveling at a speed of two to three kilometers per second and because of his high speed, the strong wind and cyclones that were forming around him made him look even more mysterious and stunning. Luo Yuan immediately stopped and quietly suspended himself in midair. He realized that the unnatural phenomenon that was unfolding before him was in fact due to the power of his Will. He had become even more powerful than before through the accumulation of the experience he had gained from his training.

However, he was still disappointed as his flight speed had only improved by about three times or so which was less than he had expected. Newton's First Law states that an object will remain at rest or move in a constant motion unless it is acted upon by an external force. In his case, he knew that the faster he flew, the greater the amount of air resistance that was going against him.

Luo Yuan realized that he was not able to offset all the air resistance even when he was wearing his synthesized clothes which had been made from the Demonic Horseman.

Luo Yuan realized that he did not feel much of the air resistance when he was flying at high speeds as most of it was dissipated by the vortex cyclone that formed around him. However, he knew that the air resistance still affected him to some extent. For example, if someone was sitting in a car and driving at a fast speed, the car would still be affected by the air resistance even if the person sitting in it could not feel it. The same goes for Luo Yuan who was protected by the vortex cyclone.

Luo Yuan knew that although he had perfected his aerodynamic techniques, he was still unable to completely neutralize all the air resistance. Anyway, he was keen to find out exactly how much his space-time bubble flight had improved. Luo Yuan was certain of the fact that a resistive force did exist in space. However, he was unsure of how much resistance he would experience in space as compared to the air resistance he felt moments ago. He understood that the faster he flew, the greater the resistive force that he would experience. Otherwise, he would have been able to fly at a limitless speed when he had reached 17 points which was obviously not the case.

After pondering for some time, he removed the headband he was wearing to utilize his four-dimensional vision and started to shift into his space-time bubble flight mode. The space around him started to shake rapidly and the spatial fluctuation this time around was more violent. Luo Yuan counted in his mind that it took less than three seconds to form the bubble. Five seconds after entering the flight mode, he could feel himself moving faster and

that everything around him looked almost static.

Within the first minute of flying, he was traveling at a speed that had surpassed the speed of sound. Five minutes later, he had reached a speed which was eight times faster than the speed of sound. Ten minutes later, he had reached his usual speed limit which was 12 kilometers per second. He continued to accelerate and after twenty minutes, he had broken past his usual speed limit. He traveled so fast that he was not able to determine his own speed.

He was like a stream of light that passed through the mountains, river, and plains while the scenery around him was constantly changing. He did not have an issue controlling his flight even though he was flying at an insane speed above the ground. He was rather amused with himself for being able to travel at such a speed while watching the scenery continue to change rapidly. He only needed half a minute to cross the vast ocean below him.

"This must be the Indian Ocean." Luo Yuan secretly thought.

After another minute or so had passed, he stumbled upon a vast land fully covered in forest which was probably Australia. Next, he arrived at what he thought must have been the South Pole. The reason why he thought so was that it was the coldest region on Earth. Though the border of the region was growing densely with plants and trees, he realized as he was flying around that most parts of the region were covered in ice. However, Luo Yuan also realized that the frozen region would not exist much longer as the icebergs had started to melt; forming strands of rivers and lakes. Unfortunately, Luo Yuan did not see any living organisms in the

area.

Disaster struck too soon and under the influence of the cosmic storm, the viral mutation spread like a wild fire speeding up the rate of the entire evolution process. When humans awoke, the marine route had been blocked due to the presence of mutated sea beasts which forced humanity to rely on air transport for goods. Unfortunately, the availability of air transports was limited and they were not able to obtain sufficient goods to sustain a country even though they were transporting in goods day and night. Not to mention that it was not safe to fly at times due to flying mutated beasts.

Luo Yuan did not spend much time in the area and was soon on his way. He soon stumbled upon South America and realized that it was still night. Luo Yuan felt that it was a unique experience to be able to travel from day to night in just a few minutes. The boundaries of time seemed to have completely disappeared for him.

Even though it was night time here, his vision had not been affected at all. When he looked down from above, he could see that the entire area was filled with green and that there was no sign of anyone living in the area. Though South America was not weak, its main country was Brazil which was located near the Amazon and was commonly known as the heart of the tropical forest. Hence, it was the first country to be affected. Other smaller countries were not able to defend themselves against the impact of the apocalypse and soon fell one by one.

Luo Yuan decided to fly over to North America to determine its

condition; only to realize that it had also been badly affected by the apocalypse and all he saw was greenery surrounding the country. The scenery was the same everywhere and it was only when he arrived in Canada that he saw a change! He could see that the Canadian region was filled with craters. Some of the craters were small while others were very large - ranging up to several kilometers in diameter. Most of them were caused by nuclear bomb explosions and Luo Yuan verified this with his sharp vision which allowed him to view the area perfectly from the sky. There were so many bomb pits in the area that from his viewpoint, it almost looked as if he had just arrived on the moon.

Luo Yuan could not determine exactly how many bombs had been dropped in the area but some areas had been badly burnt that collapsed trees were lying around everywhere. It looked like the bombs had been detonated not too long ago. Luo Yuan predicted that the shelter where the humans in the area stayed was not far away. He was looking forward to meeting them.

There is less than 10 percent of the total world population still alive since the start of the apocalypse. Now that mankind was on the brink of extinction, all the countries had decided to put away their differences and had formed an alliance. Though each country still maintained control over their own region, they willingly shared any information and technology they could get their hands on with one another.

As Luo Yuan had predicted, after continuing to fly for a few seconds, he discovered a large scale of urban agglomeration where a few cities with high walls were built next to each other. He could see that every city had several cannons placed along its walls as though it was a military fortress.

He guessed that this was most likely the gathering zone of the survivors.

There were only three regions that remained in communications with one another as of today. One region was in the North Pole where Russia was the main force leading the area. Another one was in the United States and finally, the last one was the Reconstruction Area.

Luo Yuan knew, however, that the first two regions no longer ran as an independent nation because the North Pole regions consisted of many European refugees while the South Pole area was a joint region between the United States and Canada.

Luo Yuan did not feel like loitering in the area any longer and flew quickly around just to have a glance. He managed to scout the entire area in just four seconds and took off across the sky headed in the direction of the North Pole. When he entered daylight, the Sun shined on his body again. He was not able to see the gathering area of the Russians as he had taken a different route. After continuing his flight for about another thirty seconds, he was finally back at the Reconstruction Area. He was very excited to be back on familiar ground. Subconsciously, he had circled around the Earth and had taken only five minutes for the entire trip. He had never felt that the Earth was so small up until today.

Luo Yuan looked at his watch and concluded that he only took exactly four minutes and thirty seconds to circle round the Earth when he was at his maximum speed. However, the entire flight duration took about 25 minutes. The diameter of the earth was

estimated to be about 40,000 kilometers. It was not difficult for Luo Yuan to calculate that the speed he was traveling at was about 1,481 kilometers per second. This was quite an astonishing speed!

The moon was about 38 million kilometers away which meant that Luo Yuan only required 428 minutes to reach it. He could fly to the moon right away if he wanted to do so. However, he knew that it was a one-way ticket as his Physique would be badly consumed by the four-dimensional vision and on top of that there was a vacuum environment in space which was another factor that would affect him. He would probably never make it back to Earth. He looked up into space and thought that it was not as far off as he had once thought.

He then abruptly landed on the ground to recover. The physical strength that he had consumed had been immediately replenished by his earth state ability.

...

"Which one is 51?" he heard Wang Shishi question as he was entering the house.

"Wrong! You are so stupid. You don't get the reward this time." Wang Shishi shouted.

Luo Yuan heard a few dissatisfied hissing sounds coming from the mutated woman.

They seem to be playing a game. Luo Yuan tiptoed slowly into the living room and saw that Wang Shishi was sitting at the table holding a bunch of homemade cards while the mutated woman squatted on a chair. He saw that they were enjoying themselves and that Chen Jiayi was watching the game from the side. However, he noticed that her eyes had a distant look as if she had gone into a daydream state.

Wang Shishi drew out a few cards on the table and sweetly said, "This should be very easy. Which one is eight? You had guessed it just now."

The mutated woman shifted her head from side to side to look at the cards and hesitated for a long time before stretching out her long finger as she gently pointed at one of the cards.

"You finally got it right! This is your reward." Wang Shishi took out a piece of meat from her pocket and handed it to her.

The mutated woman quickly grabbed the meat and stuffed it into her mouth. She swallowed the meat without even chewing it.

She then pointed her finger again at Wang Shishi to continue the game. Her ears suddenly twitched as she sensed something in the room. She quickly turned her head and when she saw Luo Yuan, her eyes lit up and she immediately stood up. She ran to Luo Yuan and hissed a few times while pointing at Wang Shishi as though she wanted to complain about her.

"Brother Luo, you're back!" Wang Shishi said as she walked over

to Luo Yuan and hugged him intimately.

"Brother Luo." Chen Jiayi said softly with a red face as she recovered from her daydream state.

Luo Yuan put down Wang Shishi's hand and smiled at Chen Jiayi. He then asked Wang Shishi, "What happened? It looks like the mutated woman was rather unhappy with you."

"This mutated woman was very naughty. She took off a few light bulbs around the house and hid them inside her blanket. If she had not left any footprints behind on the wall, we would not have known what had happened. When we checked her blanket, we even found a few soy sauce and oil bottles that were hidden there. It was a total mess!" Wang Shishi said angrily and continued, "After I took them away from her, she even wanted to steal the light bulbs hanging in the passageway. Luckily, I discovered what she was doing. Otherwise, the policeman would have arrested her."

Luo Yuan felt like laughing despite how serious Wang Shishi seemed. He knew that the mutated woman had a hobby of collecting shiny stuff but he never expected that she would have taken the light bulbs too. He looked at the mutated woman and realized that she probably did not know that Wang Shishi had told him all about her bad actions. She kept pointing at Wang Shishi and continued hissing as her way of complaining.

"Anyway, she is a newcomer and is still trying to adapt to our ways of living. Let us teach her slowly." Luo Yuan said.

"I was just trying to teach her how to look at numbers but I find her to be quite stupid. She has learned numbers less than 10 but still could not understand numbers which were more than 10." Wang Shishi explained.

Luo Yuan thought in his heart that if she had only just taught the mutated woman for a short period of time while using a language that was completely foreign to the mutated woman, then it was no surprise that she struggled to learn. To a certain extent, it was like communication between humans and aliens with no form of reference. Luo Yuan thought to himself that if she could learn numbers up until a hundred, she would be a genius. As a matter of fact, she was already much more intelligent than a normal human.

"Oh yea..., where is Sister Huang and the rest?" Luo Yuan asked when he did not see Huang Jiahui and the rest around.

"They went grocery shopping." Wang Shishi replied and pointed at the mutated woman. She continued saying, "The food at home had been finished by her."

The mutated woman could sense the dissatisfaction that was coming from Wang Shishi and hissed at her a couple of times. Wang Shishi gave her an angry stare and she quickly hid behind Luo Yuan, revealing only part of her face. Luo Yuan had a feeling that Wang Shishi had given the mutated woman a piece of her mind judging from how frightened she was by Wang Shishi.

"You are such a bad girl. It was such a waste of my effort to teach you and give you good food", Wang Shishi said. However, Luo Yuan could also sense joy and pride from Wang Shishi's tone based

on the laughter she had given even though she sounded dissatisfied.

When he thought about it, she was only 16 years old and was not an introvert. This was the age where most people would be very sociable, however, the age gap between Chen Jiayi, Huang Jiahui, and Zhao Yali was too wide apart so there was no common topic between them. Furthermore, Chen Jiayi was a quiet and introverted person so she did not like playing with the others. As for Luo Yuan, he often went out so he had limited time to accompany her but at least his existence gave some meaning to her boring life.

Chapter 414: The Mystery Of Life

The dinner felt merrier with the addition of another big eater joining them to eat.

The mutated woman had not adapted to the normal table manners that were expected and was given a separate space where she had dinner alone. Apparently, she did not mind as she liked eating by herself and immediately squatted down and began to feast.

The portion of the food was too much for her this time around and she was already full after eating only half of it. However, the cruel life in the forest had taught her never to waste food and therefore she continued eating until all the food had finished even though she felt bloated.

When she finished eating, she kept burping in the corner and felt rather lazy. Luo Yan laughed at the sight of her and told Huang Jiahui to reduce her food portion in future. After dinner, Luo Yuan told Chen Jiayi to go into the room alone to continue her daily treatment.

The plant cells inside her blood had decreased after a few days of treatment and the level of red blood cells in her body became more stable. Her blood started to turn back to red color and it was relatively hard to see the light green color unless he paid close attention. Her body had been severely affected by the moss and killing those cells in her blood did not permanently solve the problem. Even though Luo Yuan could normally reduce the amounts of plant cells by as much as 80% through the treatment,

the plant cells would regenerate and return to its original amount the very next day. Her condition had undoubtedly gotten worse and if she stopped the treatment for even a few days, the plant cells would continuously regenerate and she would return to her original state prior to any treatment. However, it was different this time around as the plant cells had been completely removed from her body in just a few minutes. Luo Yuan knew that this was because of his upgraded 19-point Will.

Treating the blood was fine as it did not affect the nerves; just like it was not an issue to receive blood from another person if their blood types match. However, treating the other parts of the body was a different case as it could leave severe side effects if something went wrong. He felt that the decision of whether they should continue with the treatment or not was up to him to decide but rather Chen Jiayi as it was her body that was bearing any risk involved.

"I will be conducting some tests later. However, there is a risk that your body may be affected with some severe side effects and therefore I am leaving it to you to decide whether we should continue with the treatment or not", Luo Yuan said.

"It is your call, Brother Luo." Chen Jiayi said though she was very scared.

"It is not a matter of whose call it is but rather you need to be more responsible for your own body!" Luo Yuan said seriously.

Chen Jiayi was afraid of Luo Yuan's reaction and distanced herself from him. Luo Yuan could see that she was panicking as she

began pinching her shirt. She asked him after a while, "Brother Luo, what do you think we should do?"

"I feel that we should give it a shot as there is a chance that we could significantly reduce the effects of the moss if the treatment is successful." Luo Yuan said.

"If that is the case, we should carry on with the treatment." Chen Jiayi responded timidly as she peeped at Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan felt frustrated and almost lost his temper, however, he reminded himself that she was an introvert and that he should be careful with his words. He gently said to her in an assuring tone, "Let's try it out. Don't be nervous as everything is going to be alright. I will be removing the moss in your kidney in no time." He started with her kidneys as he knew that even if one of her kidneys were damaged in the process, it would not affect her health and daily activities as she could still rely on the other one to carry out its functions. If the treatment was successful, he could use the same procedures to remove the plant cells which were affecting the other organs in her body.

"Do I need to remove my shirt?" Chen Jiayi asked shyly.

Luo Yuan was stunned and said, "Yes, please."

Chen Jiayi blushed while she removed her jacket and then proceeded to unbutton her shirt slowly. Luo Yuan took a peep and then shifted his focus towards the opposite direction before saying, "You do not have to remove all your clothes. Put your shirt back on

and lie with your chest facing down."

Chen Jiayi's face grew even rosier as she quickly buttoned back her shirt to cover her naked body before turning around. Luo Yuan felt awkward as he had just recalled that the kidneys were located at the waistline and it was fine for her not to remove her clothes. However, he pretended that he did not forget.

When Luo Yuan looked at Chen Jiayi lying on the bed, he immediately pictured her as an ostrich as part of her buttocks were exposed. In the past, he would have thought of something dirty and his blood would have probably been boiling with lust. However, he was now very calm and was not easily distracted by the sight of her. He moved towards Chen Jiayi and flipped open her shirt before gently placing his palm on her light green skin. Chen Jiayi trembled slightly at the touch of his hand.

Luo Yuan closed his eyes and his Will started entering her body. The kidneys of a normal human were usually dark red in color, however, Chen Jiayi's kidneys were greenish. This was because the parasitic moss was very good at adapting to its environment. Given time, it would change the structure of its environment. Fortunately for her, the moss was not life threatening but rather co-habituated with her body system. Luo Yuan felt that it was a good transformation for Chen Jiayi if it did not affect her brain or turned her into a plant. After a while, he began to kill the moss.

His Will slowly manifested into her kidney, killing every single micro hair that it had encountered. The moss sensed that it was in danger and began to grow at a rapid speed around her kidneys. Luo Yuan observed this scene. He compressed his Will into a ball of

energy that exploded - instantly killing all the moss in her kidney. Her kidney started turning dark red and he could see that a lot of transparent fluid was starting to flow into her kidney. He knew that the transparent fluid was the result of the protein fibers of the moss that were destroyed. The liquid was rich in nutrients and active energy and as the kidney had continuously absorbed the liquid, it started to look healthier.

Luo Yuan's Will had cleaned up all the moss in her kidney. He removed his Will and tapped Chen Jiayi's shoulder before he asked, "Alright, how do you feel now?"

"I feel empty. The feeling is like something has just gone missing from my body." Chen Jiayi answered as she got up and sat on the floor. Luo Yuan saw that she was pale.

Luo Yuan pondered about what she said and assumed that it was probably a side effect of the treatment. Throughout the entire process of removing the moss, his Will had been circulating around her body and even now Luo Yuan could still sense her kidneys. He sighed before tapping her shoulders again and spoke, "Do not do any vigorous activities today and let us observe the situation first. There is nothing to worry about as it is just a small problem. You will soon recover."

The cells of the human body constantly regenerate and the old cells are always replaced with new ones. The effect of the moss would gradually disappear and her body will eventually recover if her kidneys were still functioning.

...

Even the kidneys of people who suffered from uremia had a certain chance to recover. Chen Jiayi's kidney was fine and hence had an even higher chance of recovery.

At night, Luo Yuan began to observe the interstitial environment as he had noticed some major changes in his Will while he was treating Chen Jiayi. It was easy for him to identify the changes but he was too busy to experiment with the power of his Will earlier. His Will quickly penetrated his body and immediately targeted one of his cells. His cell rapidly expanded under the power of his magnifying ability and became a giant cell.

Luo Yuan was amazed by the size of his cell as it looked like a giant peeled egg that was moving slowly in the interstitial fluid. The semi-transparent cell was moving like a wave and there were numerous pores on the surface membrane. Gel type membranes that carried different substances were constantly moving in and out of the pores.

Luo Yuan suddenly spotted a strange molecule that was slowly flowing past the red blood cell. Its size was about 1/1000 of a somatic cell, however, under the influence of his magnifying power, the cell appeared to be about half a meter in diameter and Luo Yuan could clearly see the cell's molecular structure.

He shifted his attention to the cell and his Will penetrated the cell membrane and entered the nuclei. He saw many different colored chromosomes and realized that he was looking at the 23 pairs of different chromosomes which were found in a normal human.

The size of each chromosome was much bigger than the size of a protein molecule. There was a layer of transparent gel on the surface of the chromosome and he could even see the double helix structure of the DNA. His Will penetrated the layer of gel and a double helix DNA which was about three meters long appeared before him. Every single base of the structure was arranged in a nice order to form what looked like a curvy ladder.

This was the code of the human body; the basic rules of life. Since a baby is born, everything about their life had been destined by their DNA. Even through numerous evolution cycles, Luo Yuan's genes did not change much and most of it was still like a normal human being's. However, that might not be the case soon.

Luo Yuan controlled his Will to force the DNA chain to break apart. A crack started to form on the surface of the double helix structure and countless numbers of bases floated on the layer of gel found on the surface of the chromosomes. He then rearranged the bases and quickly formed a new DNA chain. However, the new DNA chain had a very different sequence compared to the original one and its genetic code became totally different from a normal human's. Even Luo Yuan had no clue what would happen to the new somatic cells after the change. Perhaps it might turn into a cancer cell.

He left the nuclei and kept watch on the cell. To be safe, he used his Will to make the red blood cell explode before removing his Will from his body.

He was delighted with this discovery and thought about

modifying the human body since he could see the body's cells with his Will. His desire grew even stronger when he increased his Will by one point this morning. He never expected that the recent upgrade in his Will would have allowed him to see his cells in such a detailed manner. He used to be able to clearly see objects which were one millimeter in size but now, he could even see objects which were only one nanometer in size and was even able to change the structure of DNA.

He felt that he would soon be able to uncover the mystery of life now that his observation and operational accuracy were no longer a limitation to him.

Chapter 415: Experiment Laboratory

Luo Yuan awoke the next day when the Sun was already up.

The mutated woman who had entered his bedroom somewhere in the middle of the night to sleep quickly got up as soon as she knew that Luo Yuan was awake. As usual, Luo Yuan put on his clothes and went into the bathroom to brush his teeth without bothering her.

He warned the mutated woman not to follow him as he was walking out of the bedroom. He then exited into the underground passageway and flew in the direction of the New Capital City, leaving Hope City behind him.

Somewhere along the journey, he used his Will to trigger the electromagnetic waves and dialed the contact number of Wang Jing (the specialist who was in charge of the communication between Luo Yuan and the high commissioner). Before she even began to talk, Luo Yuan had already drafted an electromagnetic message,

"I need a biological laboratory with human body cloning facilities and a few experienced researchers to help me."

The threats imposed by the extraterrestrial civilization were gradually increasing and in order to find a solution to the problem, there had been a major change in the research centers of the Reconstruction Area and therefore it was not difficult to arrange a biology lab for Luo Yuan.

He soon received a reply from Wang Jing.

"The decision is not mine to make and we would need to get an approval from our superiors."

"Then submit the application now! I am hoping to get the reply by today!" Luo Yuan replied and immediately terminated the line. He did not have to worry about the formalities like he used to in the old days as he was powerful enough to do so.

In fact, Luo Yuan was so powerful that the Reconstruction Area had no way of threatening him even if he chose not to obey their rules and regulations. The only thing that could be done when civilization came across someone that was more powerful than them was to either compromise or request for a mutual exchange.

Ling Zhong-an used to behave that way and now that Luo Yuan is more powerful than him, he decided that he would do the same.

He received a call from Wang Jing even before he arrived at the New Capital City.

"Good morning, Minister Luo. This is Wang Jing. I have just gotten confirmation that your application has been approved. May I know when would you like the lab to be ready?"

"Can I have access to it now?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Sure! Where are you exactly? Do you need me to lead the way for you?" she replied.

"Could you come over to the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau in about half an hour?" Luo Yuan replied her.

He had already spotted the building of the Firearms Bureau in the distance when he ended the conversation. He quickly shifted to fly at a lower altitude and headed towards the building.

Luo Yuan landed in front of the main entrance and proceeded to walk into the headquarters.

A few of the lower ranked staff had a conversation at the lobby. They quickly dismissed themselves and remained silent as soon as they saw Luo Yuan walking in. Luo Yuan felt strange and headed towards the elevator. There was a member of the Firearms Bureau waiting for the elevator as well. He greeted Luo Yuan nervously, "H...Hi, Minister Luo!"

"Good morning." Luo Yuan replied as he looked over at him and nodded. They remained silent after that.

However, he was becoming annoyed as he realized that the person would peep on him when he was not looking and quickly diverted his attention somewhere else when Luo Yuan turned to look at him. When Luo Yuan shifted his view somewhere else, the member would turn back to peep at him.

"Is there something on my face?" Luo Yuan smiled as he asked.

"Oh, no! No." He waved his hand nervously and said, "Your strap looks nice!"

Luo Yuan stopped smiling and remained silent. He had been attracting a lot of attention since he had his strap on his forehead. Though he had gotten used to it, he still felt awkward when someone directly pointed it out to him.

He became even more nervous as he saw that Luo Yuan was unhappy. He smiled and tried to please him saying, "I used to have a strap last time and I still keep it as a memory. However, this is the first time I am seeing one that glows. Is it a customized one?"

Luo Yuan became even more upset at his question and asked, "What is your name?"

"My name is Luo Darun but you can call me Xiao Luo, Mister Minister!" He smiled and said.

"Seems like we came from the same ancestry treeline 500 years ago, huh? Since you like it so much, I will give you one someday." Luo Yuan looked at him and said.

He looked so serious that Luo Yuan could not imagine how he would have looked like wearing the strap.

Luo Darun was sweating and he embarrassingly replied with a

smile saying, "Oh, that would be great! Thank you, Minister Luo. Now if you would excuse me, I need to go to the bathroom as I seem to be having an upset tummy."

Luo Yuan knew that he was trying to escape from him.

"What a terrible excuse!" he thought to himself. Luo Yuan shook his head as the elevator finally arrived. Since he had obtained his four-dimensional vision, the strap had become part of his body and he pondered at the thought of the day he would finally be able to get rid of the funny looking thing.

He took the elevator to the sixth floor and walked into his office. The office was still very clean even though it had been two days since he had last entered it. Apparently, someone was helping him clean the office every day. He was resting on his chair when he heard a knock on his door.

"Come in!" The door opened and surprisingly, Chen Xinjie walked in.

Luo Yuan quickly got up and shockingly asked, "When did you arrive here?"

"I was here since yesterday. However, you did not show up for work yesterday." Chen Xinjie said gently with a sweet smile.

Luo Yuan quickly closed the door. He made sure that there was no one around before he took hold of Chen Xinjie's hand and said,

"I thought you told me that you did not want to come here?"

"This arrangement was made by the upper management. What was I suppose to do?" Chen Xinjie said. Luo Yuan knew that though she seemed to be blaming her superiors, she had a hidden meaning behind that statement.

"I see. Seems like they have done me a big favor as I was just thinking about transferring you here earlier." Luo Yuan said with relief.

Chen Xinjie's expression immediately changed and she asked, "Did you find out anything new?"

Luo Yuan pretended not to understand what she had meant and asked, "What do you mean? Are you telling me that you are hiding something from me?"

"Actually..." Chen Xinjie hesitated for a while before she finally went on saying "If... I mean if it was really true that I was hiding something from you, would you be mad at me?"

"Why would I be mad? Everyone has their own secrets. You could tell me yours whenever you feel like it. However, it is also fine if you do not want to tell me." Luo Yuan comforted her with a smile as he already knew about all her secrets. He wondered about what she was not telling him.

Chen Xinjie sighed while she locked her hands around Luo

Yuan's waist. She remained silent while she listened to his heartbeat. She realized that the more understanding and gentle Luo Yuan was towards her, the guiltier she felt. She was worried that someday when Luo Yuan found out about the truth, he would leave her.

"Which role are you being assigned to now?" Luo Yuan finally said after they had been cuddling for some time.

"Assistant Admin Manager" she smiled and said. Chen Xinjie was well prepared to take on her new role.

"I recalled seeing you being so busy working through day and night when we were in Hope City. There are just so many things to do in the administrative department that I believe you would experience the same working life as you did then in Hope City. I still need a secretary so why don't you come and work for me?" Luo Yuan said after giving it some thought.

...

After Chen Xinjie had left his office, he proceeded to the office of Minister Dong. He stayed there for quite a while and discussed his plan of transferring Chen Xinjie to his department. He knew that it was only a small matter to both of them and it did not take very long before Minister Dong gave his approval.

He immediately received a call from Wang Jing just as he was leaving Minister Dong's office. She had arrived at the headquarters and was prepared to escort Luo Yuan to the biological laboratory.

They arrived at an underground laboratory after they had traveled for half an hour.

"This is a biology lab which mainly studies genetic research. Their primary research focus is on analyzing the cloning of the human body and special genes from evolved humans", she explained. Morality was different under different living conditions. After the apocalypse, many prohibited activities had been revised as it was necessary under different circumstance.

Luo Yuan was not surprised when he heard her introduction.

Luo Yuan thought that perhaps she had informed the person in charge of the lab that they were coming as a few people were already on standby at the entrance to welcome them into the lab.

"I would like to introduce you to some people. This is Professor Fei, the director leading the lab. This is Professor Cao and the person towards his right is Professor Guan", she said.

Luo Yuan greeted them one by one and shook their hands.

"Hi!"

"How are you?"

...

These people were clearly not interested in entertaining him but they were not rude to him as well. Luo Yuan was sure that had it not been for the administrative order that had been issued by the government to them, they would have certainly not helped him. Luo Yuan pondered for a moment before saying, "From now onwards, I will be taking over this lab and all of you are required to listen to my instructions."

They immediately stopped smiling and Luo Yuan could see that some of them were pissed at him but no one said a word. It was not as easy as it used to be before the apocalypse where they could simply resign and leave the lab. This was a time of war and discipline was a key element in every single department. Whether they were willing to help or not, they knew that they had no choice as they had received their orders directly from the upper management. They knew Luo Yuan's identity as someone had told them about him. To some extent, the entire lab had fallen under the direct control of Luo Yuan.

"Now, please bring all the relevant documents, files and thesis report to my office and I will begin to assign you your jobs in the afternoon." Luo Yuan said. He then turned to Professor Fei and said, "Oh right... Professor Fei, could you please show me to my office?"

Professor Fei quickly responded by saying, "Minister Luo, we had already assigned someone to help you clean your office earlier. Please follow me."

Chapter 416: Gene Modification Efforts

Luo Yuan's instructions were quickly carried out by the staff in the lab. Everyone had put down what they had on hand and immediately helped to move the documents from the archives over to his office. Although many of the researchers were unhappy with his order, they did not dare to disobey Luo Yuan as he was the vice-captain of the Firearms Bureau and the strongest evolved human in the Reconstruction Area. As someone who was against the idea of genetic research on evolved humans, Luo Yuan's presence in the lab was placing a huge amount of stress on the staff that served him.

The researchers were valuable to the Reconstruction Area but their value depended on what/who they were researching on. Perhaps to them, the common evolved human was nothing more than a test subject, however, they could not say the same for the vice-captain of the Firearms Bureau. Though they did know much, they knew for a fact that when an outsider such as Luo Yuan was given special permission to manage the highly profound genetic lab of the country, he had to be someone powerful.

Luo Yuan's office was approximately 50 square meters which was definitely not small. However, it was becoming harder and harder to move around as more and more documents were brought into the office. Luo Yuan gave a gesture of gratitude and closed the door after everyone had left. He was not bothered that some of them were unhappy with him. He knew that there would definitely have been people who would be unhappy with him even if he was nice to them. Imagine yourself taking orders from an outsider who did not have a single clue about running a lab. He decided that it was better if he was just straightforward with them as long as he did not screw things up on his part.

After making himself a cup of tea, he flipped through the piles of documents. His Intelligence (currently at 15) allowed him to read at a fast speed and he was able to retain every piece of information he had just read word for word. However, most of the documents were useless in his opinion and he tossed them aside after scanning through a few pages. For instance, one thesis report was about the discovery of a new gene splicing method which made a virus lose its contagiousness after a group of genes had undergone mutation.

After reading through the piles of documents and thesis reports, he realized that the gene research in the Reconstruction Area had not made any groundbreaking discoveries. The research direction that he had wanted to go on was like finding a needle in a haystack where everything depended on luck and there was no way that he could have directly reconstructed the gene with their current knowledge.

For someone like Luo Yuan who was able to observe the genes directly with his naked eye and even conduct a minor operation on it, he knew that it was an energy and time draining process for the specific enzyme gene to splice and be carried into the acceptor cells through the circular DNA. The efficiency of the procedure was pathetically low and it felt like the process was from the Stone Age. He could have altered any of the cells or virus genes in any way that he wanted in the blink of an eye.

However, to be fair, not all the documents were useless as the knowledge and findings regarding the functions of genes were relatively accurate. There was a total of three billion bases in the human body whereby 98% of them were occupied by invalid DNA. The remaining 2% was approximately made up of 30,000 genomes

and among them, 50% were identified as functional by the researchers that had conducted the experiment. The information had saved Luo Yuan the trouble of screening through each and every one of them, which would have otherwise cost him a lot of time. However, details regarding the functions of the genomes were not stated accurately and the lack of accuracy in observation, operation and control management of the experiment had made the judgment unclear as there were many uncertainties involved. Besides that, through the documents, Luo Yuan noticed that the 98% of the invalid DNA was not entirely useless as some of the evolved humans came about from them.

However, the cloning of humans was perfect. An artificial embryo could potentially grow into a baby within 10 days by mixing them with nutrients which were rich in active energy. The baby would have turned three years old within the first month. The intelligence and physical strength of a clone would have been no different from an ordinary human even after they had stopped taking the nutrients as long as they had been given the proper care and teachings required. In addition, because the clone had been fed with active energy since it was an embryo, it would gradually excel to become better than an ordinary human which had been developed through the pregnancy stage for 10 months even at birth.

It was coming close to the afternoon when Luo Yuan was scanning through the last pile of documents. Once he was finished, he tossed the documents to one corner and stood up. He then walked over to Professor Fei's office which so happened to have just been next door.

"Get everyone to the human clone cultivation zone now."

Professor Fei did not hesitate and immediately went around to inform everyone. Within minutes, more than 200 people who were working in the lab had gathered in the cultivation zone. Luo Yuan did not expect that there were so many of them working in the lab and only realized when they had gathered in the cultivation zone.

The cultivation zone occupied 10,000 square meters of land which was rather massive and spacious. It was filled entirely with clone pods and just by glancing around, Luo Yuan knew that there had to be at least 30,000 of them. Most of them were not empty. A majority of them had been used to contain the fetus of clones while a minority of them was carrying clones which were still in an embryonic state. It would have been a terrifying sight for an ordinary human as the fetus in the clone pods occasionally twitched.

Seeing how stunned Luo Yuan was at the sight of the clone pods, Professor Fei immediately explained, "Captain Luo, these are not experimental materials. We researchers have a conscience as well and even if we were using them as experimental materials, we would certainly have not used so many of them. Am I right?"

Somebody coughed.

Professor Fei laughed awkwardly and went on explaining, "Do not take this the wrong way. This is a common practice for a biological research facility as it was not only an experiment lab but also a factory to produce human beings."

He then added in some jokes to the conversation before he continued to explain, "You should have known that the population in the Reconstruction Area has been constantly decreasing and that reproduction through natural means had been very low. Cloning is currently the best way to replenish our population growth. We have estimated a monthly target that we would like to hit and so far we have already produced roughly 250,000 human clones. Do not worry as the genes we had used for the cloning process had come from dead bodies. There would not be any..."

"Enough, you do not have to explain any further!" Luo Yuan stopped him. He then asked, "How many of the clone pods are empty?"

"The cultivation zone is under Professor Guan. I will get him to explain the details to you", Professor Fei replied. Even though Professor Fei was the person in charge of the lab, he usually left the minor details for his colleagues to handle.

"There are around 5,000 of them but we are planning to utilize them soon for the next batch of cloning..." Professor Huan said as he adjusted his glasses.

"Cancel that plan!" Luo Yuan interrupted and continued, "There is no need to clone anymore."

"But, what about the monthly target..." Professor Guan attempted to question him but he was immediately signaled by Professor Fei to keep quiet. He realized what this meant and he was pissed.

It was funny how he was so worried about the monthly target when the bigger issue was that the entire lab had become a playground for Luo Yuan. All he could hope for was that Luo Yuan would soon grow tired of the lab and return the authority back to him.

Looking at Professor Guan whose face had been flushed with anger, Luo Yuan thought that it was a funny sight but decided that he was too lazy to explain to him.

"Are there any evolved humans among the clones?" Luo Yuan asked Professor Guan after he had calmed down.

"There is only a fraction of them. Since their bodies were genetically stronger than average, the cultivation process was slow and the nutrient requirements for each of them were rather significant and therefore we had only been able to produce about a 100 of them. The rest are ordinary human clones", answered Professor Guan truthfully. Even though he was still pissed at Luo Yuan, he dared not offend him.

"How many human genes are stored in this lab and how many egg cells are there?" Luo Yuan used Hint as he asked. Egg cells were the mandatory carrier of clones and therefore, the quantity of egg cells available basically determine the quantity of clones that could be have been produced.

"There are approximately 100,000 human genes of which 5,000 of them came from an evolved human while there are only 30,000 egg

cells. We could always get more from the hospitals if there was not enough as many people had donated it to them." With the help of his Hint, Professor Guan who was only an ordinary person was not able to defend himself from it and had answered honestly.

"Are there any documented reports on the individuals to whom the cell belonged to? Maybe their personal data or even some photos of them?"

"I am sorry but that is too much work for us and we were short-handed during that time. Therefore, we did not collect any information on the ordinary people but we did record some personal data which came from the evolved humans"

Luo Yuan was slightly disappointed after hearing this explanation. His primary goal had been to investigate the genes of ordinary people. If he had managed to get his hands on the genes of ordinary humans and compared them to the genes from evolved humans, he would have easily found out the technique to increase a normal human's body strength in the future.

However, it was not a big issue for Luo Yuan even if he did not have the documents. Worse come to the worse, he only needed to spend slightly more time conducting the experiments. He looked at the 30,000 clone pods and told himself that he had a long way to go.

...

During that period of time, apart from leaving home at night,

Luo Yuan was in the lab most of the day. He was hardly seen at the Firearms Bureau anymore. As time passed, the clones that had been successfully cultivated in the lab were immediately sent out while new batches of clones were carefully handpicked by him.

All the embryos came from a single carrier. While only a few of them did not have any substantial changes, a majority of them had gone through a specific minor gene modification. All 30,000 clone pods in the lab had been fully utilized to cultivate the human genomes.

The genes that were used for modification came from ordinary people. There were 10,000 ordinary gene samples which roughly covered most of the gene mutations that could be found in a human. Luo Yuan slowly identified the functions of each gene by carrying out various experiments. He then proceeded to change the base of the genomes after he had identified them. As Luo Yuan made more and more major changes to the genomes, he realized that there had been an increase in the quantity of deformed fetuses formed, which he was not able to find a solution for. After conducting an analysis and recording the data that was collected, the deformed fetuses were killed before they could be fully formed. Though it was cruel, it was a normal practice in the science field.

Many new results had been discovered over the experimentation period and as time went by, the researchers began to have a change of heart towards Luo Yuan. From what began as a passive attitude and an unwillingness to help him, they became more enthusiastic and passionate about working with him and did not mind following his lead. Luo Yuan also noticed that there had been a major change in their attitude.

Their faces displayed an indescribable excitement as the clones developed into babies, the functions of genes and the effects due to a change in its base were identified with precision so that they had not missed out any details. The secrets of the human genes were slowly unfolding to them.

Rumors about the experimentation caught the attention of the Reconstruction Area over time. There was a significant increase in the amount of researchers that wanted to join the project and even politicians involved themselves. The land surrounding the lab had been emptied to make way for the expansion of the cultivation area of the lab. Many clone pods had been added, increasing the total clone pod count to 1,500,000. Luo Yuan was rather happy with the decision to expand as this meant that he had more resources to utilize which increased the rate of progress of his experiment.

The analysis of ordinary people and evolved humans were completed within two months. Luo Yuan started to clone himself as he had understood how the genes worked; their functions and even the effects of a change in its base was all in his head. In order to avoid having too many clones that looked the same as him, he altered the features of the clones such as skin color, height, gender and even the shape of their face.

He stood in the passageway of the cultivation area and looked at all the clone pods. The tiny embryos were growing. Luo Yuan, who used to have no feelings towards his mundane work at the lab, had become much more enthusiastic about his work. Soon, the human modification project would officially commence. Most of the clones had been implanted with a variety of superpower genes. Their superpowers were not limited only to the initial 5,000 gene types that had been identified at the start of the project but had

increased to over 20,000 different types which included most of the gene types that could be found in an evolved human as more resources had been pumped into the Reconstruction Area.

He noticed that even Xu Zhiqiang, Ling Zhong-an and his own genes had been included though he was unsure of when those had been collected. Of course, there were still more evolved humans that had not been found by Luo Yuan and though they were not as strong or as famous as the ones he knew, he was sure that they would still come in handy.

Chapter 417: Four-Dimensional Cloning

Though many of the evolved humans were not popular, it did not mean that they were incapable. Some of them had not performed well mainly because they had not been given the proper training while the majority of them had just been unlucky. For example, there was a batch of clones that Luo Yuan took extra care of whose embryos had been inserted with a unique gene which came from an evolved human that died in the purge. If he had been alive, he would have been a super evolved human even without any improvements in his abilities.

The records in the document stated that the evolved human had super strength which was similar to that of Hercules. He could lift up a tank which weighed 50 tons and toss it at his enemies. He could also easily jump several hundred meters above the ground. Luo Yuan could not believe that any human would have possessed such strength. Contrasting to Luo Yuan's own Strength (currently at 17), he was only able to lift up objects as heavy as one ton. As far as he knew, only insects could lift weights which were three times their size.

There was no record of how the evolved human died but based on some information that had been mentioned in his file, the military had issued a bounty for his death and his body had been preserved. He had the same body structure of an ordinary human and though his body looked fit, the physical structure did not seem to be any bigger than the body of an ordinary human. What made him unique were the body cells or to be exact - the mitochondria which his body had possessed.

Luo Yuan noticed that his mitochondria were special. Not only

was its structure complicated, the cell had a series of enzymes which allowed him to carry out a cold fusion reaction. When water entered the mitochondria, its molecules would be broken down into an ionic state where the hydrogen atoms would then fuse into nitrogen parathion and other elements. Elements such as oxygen and hydrogen were converted into several amino acids which were required by the body while the energy that had been generated by the fusion reaction was used to run daily chores.

The reaction process of the fusion was slow as only two hydrogen atoms could be formed by each mitochondrion every second to be converted into nitrogen parathion. Even if there were a total of fifty trillion cells in the human body, the amount hydrogen atoms that were able to go through the fusion would have only been 1/10,000 grams.

However, the energy that was produced from the fusion process was incomparable to the energy that was produced by a normal reaction. As the energy from the cold fusion reaction was stronger than a hydrogen bomb explosion, the energy that was produced from a small amount of 1/10,000 grams of hydrogen was equivalent to that of a standard coal combustion. Therefore, it was more than 8,000 times the amount of energy an ordinary human required, which was about 30 times what Luo Yuan required.

The existence of such mitochondrial cells also meant that the amount of food he needed to survive was extremely minimal. He did not even have to breathe so all he needed was water and some standard elements to survive. No creature like it ever existed on Earth. When Luo Yuan first discovered this fact, his mind was blown away. He knew that his abilities would have gotten a huge upgrade if he possessed such mitochondria in his body. His power

and strength alone would have been increased by 10 folds.

...

Suddenly, Professor Guan had appeared before him along with a few other researchers. "Captain Luo, we have bad news! The egg cells in Group A1 to A10,000 are dead." He ran towards Luo Yuan and said nervously. He knew that those had been the groups of pods which were most important to Luo Yuan. Unfortunately, none of them had survived.

"What happened? The embryos had not even started to split so how could this have happened?" Luo Yuan mumbled to himself. As long as the cells were active, they should not have faced the problem of not being able to split. Furthermore, based on his experience through working in the lab, regardless of how much the genes changed, the first splitting was always successful and the death of the embryo usually took place when they were almost developed into a fetus.

Luo Yuan did not even consider the possibility that the researchers would have made a mistake as it was a simple task to carry out. After all, the cloning process was not something new to them and they were definitely familiar with the technique. Every step had been written clearly on the manual for them to refer to if they ever forgot. All they had to do was to follow the steps in the correct sequence like workers working on an assembly line would. Even non-researchers could have taken over their roles if they had been given the proper training.

"According to the operation records, the transplant of the egg

cells were active and the level of nutrients were normal. The amount of hormones required had also been added accordingly but the split just did not happen." Professor Guan said as he paced around the room pondering as to what was the cause of the failure.

"What do you think?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Putting all possibilities aside, I suspect that there was something wrong with the chromosomes which caused the cells to refrain from splitting." Professor Guan answered hesitantly as he turned to look at Luo Yuan.

All the genes had been personally edited by Luo Yuan himself. If there was no problem with the operation procedures, then something must have gone wrong during the editing process. Though the acknowledgment of the project done by the Reconstruction Area had been credited to Luo Yuan, there had so far been no improvement in the genetic modification technique. It felt like entering a mountain filled with treasures but there were no proper tools to attain them. None of them had the ability to edit the genes directly like Luo Yuan could.

Luo Yuan was not offended by how straightforward Professor Guan had replied him. He took a moment and pondered to himself while he circled around the room saying, "Let's see."

There were 10 clone pods in each group. The death of group A1 to A10,000 meant that 100,000 genetic modifications had failed. It was standard procedure to remove the core of the egg cell before transplanting it into the carrier cell. Although it was the largest cell in the human body, its diameter was only 0.1 millimeters,

which was equivalent to the thickness of a strand of hair. While it is floating in the nutrients, only Luo Yuan could see it without the aid of any lab equipment.

He looked at the cells and saw that they were broken and shriveled because most of the liquid in the cells had leaked out. The cell was dead and Luo Yuan did not have to look at all of them to tell that most of the embryos in the area were dead as well. Each and every cell in the area had been imprinted with Luo Yuan's Will and was partly connected to him. Though they were not directly attached to him, there was a special connection between them. Sadly, he felt that the connection between him and all the cells in the area had completely vanished.

"Apart from these groups, are the rest okay?" Luo Yuan decided not to use his Will to check but turned around to ask Professor Guan instead.

"There are no problems with the rest. Those that were growing at a fast rate had gone through their 10th split while even the slowest ones' had made it through their 1st split."

Luo Yuan had the same thought too.

The clone pods between Group A1 and A10,000 had mostly been implanted with at least one ability gene while some even had two to three. Group A10,000 had been implanted with 12 types of ability genes, but regardless of how many types of ability genes that had been implanted, all of them had one thing in common – they had been implanted with Xu Zhiqiang's ability gene.

Xu Zhiqiang had a life that was close to the fourth dimension and so naturally there were four-dimensional secrets in his genes. Unfortunately, it was difficult to explore the fourth dimension. Even though Xu Zhiqiang's genes showed no difference compared to an ordinary evolved human's and the editing process had gone well, the results obtained were negative.

All the embryos with Xu Zhiqiang's genes were dead because they could not split. Luo Yuan suspected that he must have missed something during the gene modification process.

"Fourth dimension!" he thought. Perhaps a part of Xu Zhiqiang's genes did not exist in the third dimension and was an entirely different organism. Xu Zhiqiang did not possess the real four-dimensional life and had only adapted to part of the fourth-dimensional world, which was the same in Luo Yuan's case. There should have been some difference in their genes.

Luo Yuan told Professor Guan, "Get rid of the dead embryos and get someone to individually clone the cell labeled S36778. Clone one hundred copies of them and send a sample to my office."

S36778 was Xu Zhiqiang's gene. He wanted to see if the cell could be cloned.

"Alright!" Professor Guan said immediately.

When they were done talking, Luo Yuan quickly headed back to his office. After he had closed the door, he removed his headband

and launched his four-dimensional vision while using his inner vision simultaneously. The inner vision of his Will gave him the ability to see everything. Luo Yuan noticed that there were significant amounts of dark energy in his vision. It was as if the world was a floating sea of energy and they were flowing into his body.

The energy did not feel real as they easily entered his body with no trails left behind. A slight change in Luo Yuan's Will made the energy dance as if they were being controlled. However, Luo Yuan did not know how to control it and stopped after a couple of attempts. Though the energy seemed calm and harmless like a flowing river, it made him worry. He was not sure if there would be any serious consequences if he was to conduct an experiment on himself, especially since it had to do with the inside of his body.

He diverted his attention from the energy towards a chosen somatic cell. The cell was enlarged and he stared into the core of the cell and later into the chromosomes. Luo Yuan searched for the chromosomes of the genes located inside the brain, however, he could not find any that came from the fourth dimension. He frowned and thought to himself, "Could I be wrong?"

He just could not figure it out and decided to look at Xu Zhiqiang's cells as a last resort. He hoped that he was wrong.

Soon, Xu Zhiqiang's cell sample arrived at his office. He waited for the assistant to leave before he closed the door and then proceeded to use his Will to investigate the cell sample. In the cell, he found a group of "fourth-dimensionalized" chromosomes. It was a Klein bottle structure that was formed from a third and fourth

dimension gene. There was no way to see the four-dimension genome in the third-dimension but he was able to see the complete genome in the fourth-dimension. When the fourth-dimension gene was removed, the genome became invalid.

Luo Yuan was doubtful of the two results he had just discovered. He had suspected that there was something wrong with Xu Zhiqiang's gene, however, there was nothing wrong with it and the characteristics of the gene were in line with the characteristics that would have been found in a fourth-dimensional creature. The problem lied with Luo Yuan's gene.

Could it be that his brain cells had gone through a gene mutation while the rest had not? Could it be possible that his gene had remained in the third-dimension while some of his brain cells had entered the fourth dimension?

...

On the fourth day, the cloning of Xu Zhiqiang's cells had failed and all the embryos had died in the process.

Chapter 418: Cold

Luo Yuan was not entirely disappointed by the failure of the four-dimensional cloning. He was actually on the fence about it. Deep down, encountering the unpredictable four-dimensional world made him feel a little afraid and against the idea of cloning. Risks aside, even if Luo Yuan managed to turn the three-dimensional cloning to four-dimensional cloning, there would still be a transformation in their lives. The transformation was not limited to the dimension nor the upgrade of strength, but it was a transformation of the mind and body.

It was like scrap material turning Godlike, with its extraordinary strength, endless information, and wide vision. When one becomes a four-dimensional creature, what he saw was different from what he used to see. In comparison, the three-dimensional world now becomes insignificant.

Just like a child's favorite toy, it would become nothing when the kid grows up, as it was all part of growth where they see the world changing before them. The changes from a three-dimensional state to a four-dimensional one would be 10,000 times more intense than that.

He had the feeling that if he were to enter the four-dimensional state fully, he might not be able to stay in the three-dimensional one anymore.

...

When the foundation of the experiment was over and done with, Luo Yuan's presence in the lab was not required anymore. What happened next was the results. No matter how bad the result was, there should at least be one perfect clone from the base of 1,500,000 attempts.

He left the lab to New Capital City and to the Firearms Bureau.

"Captain Luo!"

"Hi, Captain Luo!"

...

Many staff and members of the team were stunned to see him, as they greeted him. He nodded at them in acknowledgment. He had not been in the Bureau recently, but he would show up every three to four days. Essentially, most of the people in the Bureau knew him.

He went into his office, took off his clothes and walked into the bathroom. He switched on the tap and allowed the water to cascade down from his head, getting rid of the smell from the lab.

Suddenly, the door flung open. Familiar footsteps walked towards him. Luo Yuan smiled.

A few minutes later, moans came from the bathroom. Chen Xinjie was held against the wall by him. Her long and fair legs were

hooked onto Luo Yuan's waist. Her cheeks blushed and her clothes were messy. Her bra was on the floor, while her breasts bounced vigorously according to Luo Yuan's rhythm. She was like a fish that had been hooked, gasping for air.

"Slowly, slowly. I can't do this anymore, my legs are weak, bring me to the bed!"

Then, they went into the bedroom.

"It's my turn." Chen Xinjie said while blushing. Luo Yuan loved it fast, and although it was fun, she could not handle it anymore.

Luo Yuan could not turn down such offer. He laid on the bed and smiled. Chen Xinjie bit her lips, looked at him flirtatiously and sat on him!

...

It went on for half an hour before it ended.

Chen Xinjie rested her head on Luo Yuan's arm, just as she had an orgasm. Sex was like a drug to her, not getting enough after a few times. She hesitated in the beginning as she was playing hard to get, but as time went by, she could no longer resist.

Moreover, not seeing Luo Yuan recently made her want it even more so. Whenever Luo Yuan was in the bureau, it became their secret rendezvous activity.

"I think my mom has found out what we've been doing!" Chen Xinjie said after a while, worried.

"How could she possibly know? Did you tell her?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Of course I didn't tell her, I've always behaved myself at home. Maybe my mom noticed the bleeding when she washed my clothes. It's your fault that you always go so deep... what do I do now?" Chen Xinjie pinched Luo Yuan after telling him.

That wasn't an act at all; she was genuinely worried. She was already 24 years old. Before the apocalypse, a lady her age was considered young, but not anymore post-apocalypse. Ever since her mother found out about their hanky panky, she bugged her to bring Luo Yuan home but all efforts were in vain.

It was unrealistic as whatever she told Luo Yuan would appear as lies.

"So, what should we do?" Luo Yuan started to worry too.

"Let's just delay it!" said Chen Xinjie. "Is everything going well at the lab?" she asked.

Luo Yuan did not hide what he was doing, as many people already knew about it.

"It's going quite well. We should be able to see the results a month later," answered Luo Yuan.

"I don't understand why you would want to spend all your time dabbling into this cloning stuff. What's the point of it? Do you really want to be a scientist?" Chen Xinjie asked in curiosity while drawing circles with her fingertip on his chest.

Luo Yuan could feel her heart beating fast out of nowhere. He looked at her and asked, "Why are you asking me this? Is this coming from somebody else?"

If she happened to ask something else, Luo Yuan would not have minded. However, this was serious, as what happened at the lab was indeed crucial. He did not want to cause a stir in the Reconstruction Area, which might destroy the outcome. Although the damage would not be obvious, accidents and unforeseeable factors should be avoided altogether.

"How can it possibly come from someone else – I'm just curious!" She felt that Luo Yuan had turned cold... her body soon became stiff yet she could still force a smile.

She seemed to be hiding something!

"If somebody else is keen to know, you don't have to bother about them!" Luo Yuan said.

"He knows what's going on!" Chen Xinjie thought to herself.

There was a chill running down her spine, as she felt insecure and did not know how to respond.

Luo Yuan broke out from her cuddle, stood up and put on his clothes, "Okay, take a good rest and don't think about it too much. I'm doing to the lab now!"

What Chen Xinjie shared had made him a little more aware of his surroundings. From what she had said, the Reconstruction Area was now more and more alert with the experiment. Without his supervision, he was worried that there would be people trying to destroy the experiment in the lab.

As the door was closed, Luo Yuan soon walked far away.

Chen Xinjie laid pale on the bed; her eyes were blank and not moving a muscle as if her soul had seeped away. A while later, she started to sob. Perhaps their relationship was meant to be a disaster since the beginning.

Chapter 419: Choice

Back at the lab, Luo Yuan gave Huang Jiahui a call to update her on the recent happenings, where he spent most of his days there.

Time went by; bad news had befallen every day. The embryos were neither deformed nor dead. The first batch found faulty were those that were implanted with more than ten types of ability genes.

Perhaps there were too many ability genes present, hence the DNA chain was not able to handle them. Besides, the abilities had clashed with each other too, which caused the gene to mutate before the embryos started to split.

Next were those that were implanted with more than five ability genes – many issues had arisen from there. It then happened to those with four, three and even those with only one ability gene.

As the clone pods were cleared one by one, there were less of them every day.

On day 10, the initial 1,500,000 clone pods were decreased to less than 300,000.

On day 15, there were only 100,000 of them.

By the time day 18 came about, there were only 10,000 left.

The alarming rate had made Luo Yuan nervous. He spent more and more time in the cultivation room. Sometimes, he would even take a look in the middle of the night, so that he could sleep in peace.

Since the apocalypse, there were more than 100,000 evolved humans in the Reconstruction Area. However, most of them had similar powers, while the outstanding ones could only be counted with one's bare hands. Luo Yuan attempted to look for a breakthrough in the experiment, so failures were expected.

Fortunately, not all of the embryos were faulty. In many of the clones, there was bound to be a miracle.

The remaining 10,000 embryos were not lumps of flesh anymore. They were already in human form, as their internal organs and brains developed.

At this stage, they had already passed a high attrition rate, where the probability of success was high. As long as there were no major accidents, at least one-third of the embryos would survive and grow into a perfect human.

From the initial 1,500,000 embryos to only 3,000 now, the success rate from the data was pathetically low. From the production itself, the project was a total failure. If the pods were meant to clone an ordinary person, it was enough to clone more than ten million of a population in the Reconstruction Area. However, if the clones were meant to be cultivated into a better version of Luo Yuan, its value would be priceless.

The Reconstruction Area needed plenty of ordinary people. At the same time, it needed super evolved humans. Most of the 3,000 super evolved human possessed the ability of a level seven mutated beast. Results-wise, it was comparable with a large-scale military squad. Moreover, through brainwashing, these clones would not be rebellious like the other evolved humans – they would be loyal to the Reconstruction Area.

As Luo Yuan walked down the aisle to check on the fetus floating in the fluid, he felt a sense of connection with them. It was not an exaggeration or a prejudicial illusion, but a true connection. The fetus had his blood; they were from a part of his body.

Though they were not fully formed, he could feel an indistinct emotion that was sent to him whenever he was close to the fetus. To be exact, the emotions felt were reverence and respect!

The growth of the fetus was different; some were fast and some were slow. Usually, the stronger the fetus was, the slower the growth and the higher the concentration of the nutrients were. However, there were exceptions, where some of the cells could provide energy especially those that were implanted with genes that could cause a cold fusion in the mitochondria. When most of the fetus had grown to the size of a fist, the other batch of fetuses was almost formed.

The exceptional batch did not even need the nutrients anymore.

...

On Day 20, the first batch of babies was out of the pods. It was not because they were fully formed, but they were forced to be taken out as they were destroying the pods with their incessant, subconscious kicking.

The first batch that was out was those that were implanted with cold fusion genes. The babies' skin was soft yet tough; their bones were as strong as a level five mutated beast. All of them were as tough as an evolved human with moderate powers.

Despite that, they were just babies where their bones were still not fully formed and their muscles were still weak. Once they were fully formed, even Luo Yuan could not imagine how powerful they would grow up to be.

As compared to common babies, these super babies were hyperactive. To top their liveliness, regular beds could not contain them. Before their eyes even opened, a slight flip could toss them out of bed. The half a meter fall did not hurt them at all; they were crawling everywhere like nothing happened. What was more frustrating was all the crying heard from the cultivation area which was converted into a nursery. There was no peace in the lab at all when it was filled with babies' cries. Apart from being stunned, the researchers were irritated by the racket.

There were nurses that were sent from hospitals from the Reconstruction Area to take care of the babies. But after attempts of getting close to the babies and ending up getting hurt in return, they gave up on controlling them. They were crawling freely in the nursery. Apart from sending food, nobody would step inside.

They did not need much food, as they could survive even without feeding for a couple of days. It was not always chaotic, for as soon as Luo Yuan walked into the nursery, the babies would quiet down miraculously.

Those who were crying would stop crying, while those who were in the midst of making a mess would stop too. There was complete silence in the nursery!

However, for some reason, Luo Yuan was hardly in the nursery.

He noticed that the conscience of the clones were the derivatives of his Will when the cells were implanted. The babies were like his clones; he could even control these babies, as long as he wanted to.

...

Time flew by. On day 28, the remaining babies were out too. On day 32, the last batch was out of the pods. There were more survivors than expected – 4,100 of them categorized into 450 groups.

Although some of the embryos were deformed or dead, there were some lucky cases. Some of the unstable genes were gotten rid of by Luo Yuan, as he did not want any unforeseen accidents to happen.

Within the 450 groups, there were only two groups that were

implanted with three ability genes, 28 groups with two ability genes, while the rest were implanted with only one ability gene. What Luo Yuan noticed was that those with two ability genes and above were also those that were implanted with the cold fusion gene.

He guessed the failure of those that were implanted with many genes were not merely caused by the clash, but the ability that resonated from the bodies.

After a week of patience, the medical reports of the clones were out.

Luo Yuan used his ability to scan through the reports multiple times and tested some samples. After verification and getting rid of those with congenital gene defects, there were 321 groups left.

He was relieved as the preliminary work was completed. What was left was the gene modification. He carefully placed each and every cell sample in his backpack and left the lab.

Just when he was out of the tunnel, a heat wave struck him.

He had been in the lab for more than a month. It was January when he first came in and it was now already March. As winter was ending, the temperature was rising.

Luo Yuan looked up at the scorching sun and walked slowly out of New Capital City. As he was out of the area, he started to fly

without heading to Hope City.

He was flying into the wild. Although he was not flying via the Space-Time bubble, his speed was tremendously fast. He was more than thousands of kilometers away from the Reconstruction Area surrounded by mountains and lush. To be more cautious, he flew via the arc to pass through the mountain.

As the Space-Time bubble faded, he was in an enclosed cave about ten meters wide. He put down his backpack, took out the cell samples and opened each and every one of them. He picked carefully as the weakest one could give him an extra evolved ability. However, all the hard work was not merely for his personal gain.

The first that he eliminated were the weaker ones. There were only 80 groups left from the 321 samples. He eliminated those that were implanted with three abilities as he was afraid of possible instability in the genes, while those that were with only one gene were eliminated too, as they were not deemed valuable.

Soon there were only 12 samples left. He picked again until there were only three.

One was a cold fusion substance dissociation, the other was a cold fusion plasma defense and the last was a cold fusion space shift.

Looking at the three samples, Luo Yuan was indecisive. Choices can be a pain at times. Among the three samples, cold fusion aside, there was one ability that was powerful – the substance dissociation.

According to documentations, an evolved person could use his finger to shoot a laser to gasify substances.

However, such ability was buried deep in the evolved human instead of being fully utilized due to weak physical strength. A single shot of laser would drain his strength for half a day and the effect was nothing to shout about. Apart from a scratch on the surface, it could now kill a low-level mutated beast.

However, if the ability was utilized by Luo Yuan with the help of cold fusion, the effect would be a thousand times more. By then, even a level eight mutated beast would not be able to endure it.

Another one would be plasma defense. Luo Yuan was familiar with such an ability as his undergarments were made of plasma. If not for that, he would have been overwhelmed by the four-dimensional vision.

Such ability would produce a high-temperature plasma field with a high functioning plasma state, where it was able to absorb energy and physical attacks, as well as the detection of electromagnetic waves. It was similar to a sci-fi energy shield.

The last one needed no explanation – this ability came from the crazy Mr. Wang from the Firearms Bureau in Hope City. Luo Yuan had been envious of the ability since the beginning. As soon as he had the ability, with the help his two-second Prediction, his ability to survive would be increased.

However, he could only choose one of the three. After much

consideration, he chose the space shift. What he could benefit from the substance dissociation was the extra attack power which he did not need, especially with the Zhanmadao. The only thing his saber could not do was to attack long-distance.

As for the plasma defense, it could work on mutated beasts, but encountering a high-energy laser from the extraterrestrial civilization's spaceship was nothing to him. Even with the cold fusion from the mitochondria, it was incomparable with the spaceship.

He lifted the cell sample up and took a deep breath. Will began to fill his body as he took in the basic foundations of the cell.

Chapter 420: Terrifying Power

There was a total of three billion pairs of bases in human DNA. It was impossible to copy all of them even with Luo Yuan's +15 Intelligence. Even if he were to eliminate 98% of the useless DNA, there were still 60 billion pairs of bases, which was still a great number to work with.

But in reality, it was not as troublesome. The genetic materials of the cell were basically molded after Luo Yuan. The modified gene had been removed to avoid the clone looking exactly like Luo Yuan, but the rest of the genome had remained unchanged.

As compared to Luo Yuan's DNA, there were only eight groups of gene differences between them. At the same time, there were 1,350 groups of genes that faced a minor change. The least would be two groups of bases and the most were less than a hundred, while the remaining 30,000 groups were exactly the same with his own genes. The change in bases were 60,000, or 56,406 pairs of bases to be exact. Of course, the number was still big, but to Luo Yuan, he could forcefully copy all of them.

Time had passed, while Luo Yuan immersed himself into the chromosomes. He was awake three hours later, and as he opened his eyes, his Will was once again immersed into the cells. He took a look – the copying had progressed well.

He lifted up his head; it was aching. He breathed out slowly.

All was completed and the transformation could be launched

anytime now. But since he had been waiting, there was no rush for that. He had to take a good rest to gain all his energy and be in his best form.

He flew in the space-time bubble and left the place.

The inside of the cave was air-tight. Although it was safe, it was not ideal enough for resting.

The three hours he spent in the cave had made the oxygen grow thin. Although Luo Yuan could hold his breath for four hours, his head was hurting and his body was weak when he was awake. Recovery aside, he was fortunate to be able to stand.

...

He flew out of the cave and found a tree hole that he could stay in. After killing the insects with his abilities, he curled his body up and fell asleep in the hole that was filled with stench.

He slept for ten hours – it was dawn when he woke up.

He stretched his body and looked at the time. Exuberantly, he walked out of the hole. The sun had yet to rise; it was still dark. Countless mutated beasts were roaring from afar.

The beasts' roar did not worry Luo Yuan anymore; it was more of background noise to him now. Apart from some rare level eight creatures, the forest had completely lost its mysterious charm to

him. Likewise, the Reconstruction Area was not as dangerous as it was before anymore.

A hungry mutated beast noticed Luo Yuan. Its eyes widened and crawled to him...

Luo Yuan spotted it and grinned – it was like a free bounty to him! Ten minutes later, the mutated beast that weighed 100 kilograms was spit-roasted over a fire pit

He ate a third of it and kept the rest, before going to a creek nearby and drank as much as he could, after removing the parasites. He then used the beast's skin that he sliced and filled it up with water. There were about 10 kilograms of water.

Genetic modification was the first step of human transformation.

To cells, genes were the base of the formulation. The highest theorem where each and every cell activities were involved in includes metabolism, growth, and death. There was no room for mistakes.

As soon as a gene discovered that the body was out of coordination with the cells, there would be a special mechanism that would trigger splits in cells to kill the parent cell. If the parent cell was conscious, it would probably be an injustice as it was killed due to the modification, even though it did everything by the book.

That being said, as soon as the genetic modification was

completed, Luo Yuan would have new cells in his body, where all of his old cells would be eliminated. The time taken would be shorter than expected, as the splitting would be over in a few minutes.

The intense splitting not only drains a massive amount of energy, it also required plenty of materials and water.

He carried the food and water on his back and checked if he had left anything behind. Luo Yuan then started flying in the Space-Time bubble and entered the cave again.

The noise from outside had disappeared – it was complete silence. However, he hesitated. Although he had experimented the genetic modification on his own a few times before and they were all successful, it was scary to do it on his own body.

Genetic modification was nothing trivial, it would change the root of his whole body.

Although it seemed like only a $1/200000$ of change, it would bring a tremendous change in the body. A tiny mistake would deform him beyond recognition or even crash his genes.

Till now, he had no confidence to modify his brain.

He thought he had come a long way. He sighed and figured that if he were to give up now, it would mean that all the effort he invested in would be gone to waste. No matter how risky it may

seem, he had to take it.

To be safe, Luo Yuan memorized the modification one more time!

He used Will to immerse his body. The very first part to be modified were his soles. But first, he wanted to experiment before the attempt. He then chose a surface cell on his sole. Since he had a +19 Will, he did not have to modify each and every pair of the base.

Considering that the bases were arranged by memory, his Will allowed him to look into them like a microscope, magnifying even the tiniest details.

With just a thought, the modification of cell would be completed.

He checked through the DNA chains on all the chromosomes – they were perfect.

Seeing that everything was going well, Luo Yuan started the large-scale modification. He then expanded his vision; countless cells of the size of the tip of a needle coagulated. Though invisible, his Will spread out and modified up to 100,000 of cells in silence.

Looking at the good progress, Luo Yuan expanded the modification again. Now he was not looking at the cells anymore, but focusing on his skin and the blood vessels covered in his Will. There were more than ten million of them...

In a mere 20 minutes, the modification of his legs was completed.

Then it was his hands, skin, muscles, organs, and backbones. His Will was akin to water in a dam, gushing all over his body thanks to his +19 Will and +17 Sense. If he was in his earlier state, he would be drained by now.

Two hours later, he had modified his neck, face, and scalp.

When it was approaching his brain, he had to stop the modification.

As the Will came from his brain, it was a prohibited zone as it was the most crucial part of his body. He knew this before he even started the modification. He only had two options – one was to leave it alone. As long as the rest of his body was completed, the genetic difference was not an obstacle at all. There would not be any conflict in the cells.

A good example would be an organ transplant, where an organ receiver would live in harmony with somebody else's organ inside their body.

However, the rejection was a risk that Luo Yuan took into account.

It was natural for the human body to reject something that was foreign, as it would be for the organs. Rejection acts as protection for all creatures; the immune system in the human body was to identify what should go into the body and what should not and releases antibodies for defense.

Of course, a brain was nothing foreign but after the genetic modification, it had become one. In medical terms, there was still suppressive medication for organ transplants for the patients to adapt and live, but it did not apply to his condition. He figured there should not be any medication to suppress his antibody, the only way to live depended on his luck.

On the other hand, the second option was to release his Will without the ability to see what was happening. That would be a black box operation in his brain and the success only depended on luck.

The first option seemed negative. With the risk of rejection aside, it could be a long-term disease which Luo Yuan was not keen to endure. The second option, however, was 100 times more dangerous than the first one. Putting the failure of modification aside, the worrying part was that any mistakes in the genes could be fatal.

No matter what, he had already decided before the modification. Nothing was easy and it was an obstacle that he had to cross over. Since both depended on luck, he would rather take the risk regardless. As long as he had enough time and Will, there was a possibility for his Will to immerse in the chromosomes and complete the modification.

Upon feeling that there was only a third left in his Will, he closed his eyes to recover.

Many hours later, Luo Yuan stood up.

Although his Will had not fully recovered, it was two-thirds completed. The cells in the brain only occupied 0.028% of the 14 billion of cells in his body, hence the amount of Will was sufficient.

He closed his eyes again to avoid any distractions. The place was quiet and enclosed; there was no disturbance in all his senses.

After a long breath, he blanked out his mind and gathered his Will.

Suddenly there was a dim glow that lit up the pitch black cave. It got brighter; he was like a glowing man, shining brightly in the cave.

At the same time, a powerful vibe spread out.

Perhaps he knew that it was a matter of life and death; his Will was purer than ever. It was like liquid flowing through every inch of his skin. They were sparkly and clean. Soon, the glow disappeared, but it still remained on his head. The glow got brighter and more intense... and in seconds, it peaked.

There were DNA chains floating around him – it was a spill of his thought from his Will.

The procedure took an hour. As his Will was used up, the modification ended. He sat on the floor and held his aching head.

He had lost his control of thought. Worried that the modification would fail, fear had turned his hands ice-cold. Will was the control of his emotion, but since his Will was drained, his emotions had spiraled out of proportion.

However, his strong body strength allowed him to calm down after ten minutes.

There was an itch on his sole. He took off his shoes, and there was a layer of dead skin detached from his sole. The dead skin was spreading all over his body.

The splitting of cells had begun!

Perhaps that was the message exchanged between the genes in the cells; the splitting went faster than Luo Yuan had imagined. It was like a chain reaction. Five minutes later, the skin of his legs and body started to shed.

Not only on the surface, the insides of his body was transforming too.

At the same time, a powerful and terrifying energy was developing in his body. The intensity of his power and body strength were increasing on the attributes panel.

He let out a groan, as the unimaginable energy in his body shook the cave walls.

Chapter 421: Out Of Control

As more and more mitochondria were working, his power seemed to increase endlessly. His body was like a volcano ready for an eruption of boundless power. He started to sway; he could not stand still. The human body was a tight system where it kept the body balanced. When a person stands, countless of muscles does plenty of minor adjustment to make that possible.

However, as more and more power overwhelmed his body, his brain could not send signals throughout his body in time. Every minor adjustment made his body float a little.

Luo Yuan looked around and noticed there a wall just a step away. He attempted to walk by leaning against the wall, as his body was stumbling. However, he had underestimated his power. Although he used only minimal strength, a slight move made his body plunge towards the wall.

A loud thud was heard, and his body went straight into the wall with his legs sticking out. Stuck, he knew that he definitely had underestimated his power.

Irritated, he used his hand to push against the wall. The tough wall crumbled like a biscuit, and he managed to open up a ten-centimeter hole.

He then used his hands to hop down off the wall. Just as he landed, he noticed something terrible. Gravel had splattered all over, blanketing the space in dust. His body was planted into the

ground, buried from the waist below.

His Will had yet to fully recover, which made his emotion spiral out of control. The series of incidents infuriated him. Luo Yuan was furious, his temples were throbbing, and a fire rose in him.

He let out a terrifying vibe and groaned. The veins on his arms were like tangled roots; a strong energy wave exuded from his muscles. There was a wave in the air, as he punched the wall.

"Bang!"

Even before his punches hit the wall, the air was compressed and a hole appeared. It was like a meteorite hit, a thousand tons were gathered on his fist. When his fist hit the wall, the kinetic energy was moving at six kilometers per second.

The rocks were crumbling. Even giant rocks that weighed more than ten tons were cascading like feathers. It was like a massive bomb had collided with the wall. The mountain was trembling and a shockwave could be seen spreading all over the place.

The worst part was, as the cave was air-tight, it caused the shock waves to echo, making the effect a few times more powerful. The cave looked like it had been weathered; it expanded twice the initial size after the wave had subsided.

The powder from the rocks rained down, engulfing the place with dust.

"Cough! Cough! Cough!"

Luo Yuan could not stop coughing while closing his eyes. It was a mess, as he was buried in the gravel. What was left was his head sticking out with rock powder all over him.

He did not have a choice but to pause lest the cave might collapse.

All he could do was to wait for his body transformation to be complete. Fortunately, his strong body had allowed him to breathe normally under such circumstances.

...

Suddenly, he felt light-headed, almost as if he was drunk.

He realized that there was a change in his brain, which was the most dangerous part of the transformation.

It got worse. At first, he could still think straight but slowly, he could not anymore.

He was getting sleepier by the minute. He bit his tongue hard attempting to stay awake but it did not work. As time went by, his thoughts turned static and his brain wave had stopped. He could feel an eternal peace in him.

He was jolted awake. He did not feel sleepy at all but the direct opposite. His thoughts were clearer than ever before, and he could feel his Sense had become more sensitive.

His eyes were closed, and he could not breathe as his nose was not working. But he could still hear and feel even the tiniest movement outside the cave, despite how it was buried in up to 100 meters of rocks.

His touch was upgraded too. Initially, he could not feel the pain while being buried in the rocks, as the senses were not sent to his brain. He was stunned, as that feeling should only appear if he had an upgrade in his Intelligence.

"Could this be?"

Luo Yuan thought to himself and launched the attributes panel immediately. The panel was shown in his brain so even with his eyes closed, he could still read it clearly.

Character: Luo Yuan

Occupation: Hunter

Level: 12

Experience:47120/614400

Attributes

Strength:29(10)

Agility:16(10)

Physique:30+13(10)

Intelligence:16(10)

Sense:16+1(10)

Will:18+1(10)

Skill:Science20,Math19,Mandarin19,English16,Finance17,Computer
Combat1,Saber Skill:7,Gun Skill:6,Casting:15

Special Skill:Identification technique, Synthetic technique, Detection

Natural Ability:Earth Stomp (Level 5) ; Body Fusion (Level 2) ; Focus
Brain (2%);

Battle beast: Giant lizard (Level 3), Raging Ape (Level 2)

Unassigned attribute point:0

Unassigned skill point:5

...

The attributes made him giddy. He looked at it over and over again to make sure that it was real. 29 Strength and 30+13 Physique! What was that?

Luo Yuan began calculating and came up with a conclusion where his Strength weighed 150 tons, which was twice as much as that of an ordinary person.

While he was not able to calculate his Physique, his bare attributes were 3,000 times more than an ordinary person. If he were to stand on the ground, the energy that he could absorb from below would be 562,500 times.

The numbers were crazy, which meant as long as Luo Yuan stood on the ground, his strength was endless.

As compared to these numbers, his Intelligence which gained +1 was nothing worthy of mention.

He then looked at his natural ability. Earth Stomp was upgraded to level 13 due to the increase of Strength, while Body Fusion and Four-Dimensional Travel was added.

The Body Fusion was understandable to him, but the strange thing was Space Teleportation was now Four-Dimensional Travel, and it started with level 9, while Body Fusion was only at Level 2.

He looked further into the selection of the Four-Dimensional Travel.

"Four-Dimensional Travel"

"Level: 9 (related to Will)"

"Effect: The journey from the three-dimensional world to the four-dimensional world, and back to dimension would cause a point-to-point movement in space. As the four-dimensional world was much faster than the three-dimensional one, a short distance (in a light year) in the three-dimensional world was akin to time passing so slowly that it was almost $1/100000$ seconds in the four-dimensional world. Besides, the travel distance in the three-dimensional world and the time you stay in the four-dimensional world is related to Will."

"Remarks: Such a travel method was a common way that was used by civilization in outer space. There is a danger to it, as during your travel, you will be exposed to a tiny chance of meeting four-dimensional lifeforms."

Luo Yuan was stunned. He did not expect the space teleportation to be related to four-dimension. From what he saw, the Four-

Dimensional Travel's speed was ten thousand light years per second. As long as he had sufficient Will, he could travel the entire universe in a short period of time.

He thought of a scientific article that he read on the internet before the apocalypse. The article talked about the intertwining of Quantum speed, where it traveled at different speeds. In the latest experiment, the intertwining of quantum was also ten thousand light year per second, which was the same with the four-dimensional speed.

In theory, the limit of speed in the three-dimensional world was 300,000 kilometers per second. The law was yet to be broken. However, it was a contradiction that the intertwine of quantum could travel at such a high speed. But through four-dimension, it all made sense now.

Luo Yuan stared at the panel for a while to digest said piece of information.

He could tell that the system came from a super civilization that was many times more advanced than extraterrestrial civilization, where its four-dimensional travel technique was more mature.

From what he read, he suspected that they had met some four-dimensional lives and might even be at war. Luo Yuan laughed and forgot about what he was thinking about.

No matter the real four-dimensional creatures or super civilization, those were too far away from him and it was

impossible that they would ever meet. Even if they had met, with his ability, it was a sure death.

He then looked into Body Fusion. The ability was much simpler.

"Body Fusion:

"Level: 2 (can be upgraded through body training)

"Effect: Tremendous strength and tough body for physical defense."

"Remarks: You are now in the first stages of becoming an interstellar lifeform where you could survive for a short period of time in space!"

When he saw that he could earn an upgrade just by physical training, he was excited. Although his mitochondria were mutated, its function to the body was somewhat similar where it was still a semi-autonomous organelle. When the need of physical strength increased, the mitochondria would split on its own to cater to the body.

The only trouble was, his body strength was impossible to be drained unless his feet were detached from the ground.

Hmm! Luo Yuan thought to himself.

Maybe I can try draining my energy in the fourth-dimension.

The four-dimension in his brain had always been the one that drained his energy. When he flew in the Space-Time bubble, his strength was drained when the Will was still sufficient. It was a major headache for him. But now that his Physique's bare attribute was +30, as compared to his +19 Will, it would be a different story.

...

Now that the renewal of cells was complete, his Physique had stopped growing. Luo Yuan immersed his body in Will and looked around his body in curiosity. He noticed that the old cells had been completely replaced by stronger cells.

The cell membrane was a quarter thicker than the old ones, they were rich in color and elastic. They were tough and strong, while each of the cells was arranged properly.

Perhaps the new cells needed fewer nutrients and oxygen than before, as they hardly relied on blood anymore. The blood capillaries were thinner by half.

He was stunned, as his main arteries were one time smaller. He figured that the blood in his body was only a third of the initial amount. He finally understood what outer space life meant.

In this endless space, the distance was always a massive number

where there was no food to be found if one were to fly in space for more than 10 days. To survive in such conditions, one should have minimal reliance on materials or even possess a self-substantial body.

It seemed like his body was ready for space.

Next, Luo Yuan took a look at his cells. There were two mitochondria in most of the cells, which was twice more than what the gene owner had.

He did not know how that happened. Perhaps his Agility helped in this. After all, his Agility was high and was a human instead of a machine – such comparison felt unfair.

After a thorough check, he switched off the panel.

There was dust floating in the air. He shook his head lightly to get rid of the dust on his face and shove the gravel that surrounded him away. He managed to get out of the wall.

He stood still on the ground and dared not move to avoid from going out of control again, which may cause the cave to collapse into rubble.

He removed his headband, started to fly via the space-time bubble and left the place.

Chapter 422: Adaptation

Ten minutes later, Luo Yuan was out of the cave. He got out of the space-time bubble and descended from the air. As he landed, he fell onto the ground. He accidentally uprooted a tiny tree as he struggled to get up.

He sighed and got up carefully with both his hands and legs.

Luo Yuan's body was like a powerful speeding car that was sensitive to instructions but the trouble he faced now was that his body used to be akin to a tractor. Although he had a perfect score for his driving skills and was able to control his tractor of a body perfectly, controlling this speeding car was a whole new ballgame and required lots of practice.

Having full control aside, standing up was an arduous task now.

He had to be careful with every inch of his movement, as he was unable to contract his muscles too much, lest his body would be plunged to a distance away. At the same time, neither could he exert too little pressure on his muscles to avoid falling to the ground.

He was like a baby, taking his first steps for the first time, learning the basics of how to stand upright without faltering.

From stumbling around to standing still, it took him two hours of practice. He then finally learned how to walk.

Luo Yuan had lost count of the number of times he collapsed and how many plants he destroyed in his wrath.

He was killing mutated beasts and the plants in the area; chaos had struck within a few kilometers away. Most of the trees had been crushed and holes were made in the bigger trees.

His Strength was said to only be about 150 tons, but that was purely his Strength. On the other hand, his ability to destroy was not included, as speed was involved. With Luo Yuan's +16 Agility, when combined with his Strength, the force of his punch could weigh at least 3,000 tons. With such mighty power, his punch could very well destroy the armor of a battleship.

...

The sun was setting; dusk was approaching.

Luo Yuan sat on a tree branch while scratching his head. He realized that he should have remained in the forest for the next few days, as he was still unable to take control of his power within such short period of time. If he were to go home now, he could foresee what would happen. Heck, he would even have the tendency to subconsciously cuddle a person that he wasn't supposed to, in his sleep.

He had goosebumps while he thought about it, but soon, he left those thoughts behind.

Luo Yuan was frustrated and smacked the branch. A loud thud ensued and the tree broke into half.

Pieces of dead leaves landed on his head.

He shook his head and let out a deep breath while trying to suppress the anger deep down in his heart. He knew very well that it was caused by the imbalance of his attributes, where his body was bursting with information. Luo Yuan was easily infuriated and had a lack of control over his emotions, that even his 19 points of Will could not control him.

He figured that the owner of this gene might be a bad tempered one, or perhaps his death was somewhat related to his poor anger management.

...

It was getting later into the night, when carnivorous mutated beasts were most active and where strange noises and terrifying roars could be heard. The sounds of insects chirping were everywhere – it was irritating.

However, that racket was inaudible that night, as there was a loud explosion coming from the distance. The noise was intense, as there were 100 of them every second. Without ear plugs, it could be disastrous for an ordinary person.

All the mutated beasts fled the place after hearing the explosions. Even the level seven mutated beasts did not want to fight an unexpectedly strong enemy just for the sake of food. Those insects that were chirping kept quiet and hid underground and amongst trees. Some of them even hid behind the leaves fearing for their lives.

Luo Yuan punched hard on a big tree. A shockwave that could be seen by the naked eye immediately spread through the area.

Before his transformation, the speed of his punch could only be compared with the speed of sound. Now, his speed was 12 times more than that and the damage was 150 times more than ever before.

The bushes within a 30-meter radius had been smashed to pieces. With his power, the shrubs within 50 meters had fallen and there were no branches or leaves left on trees.

The tree that he punched was the biggest tree in the area; it was a level seven. Although it could be compared with the lightning tree, its diameter was more than 50 meters with the height of 700 meters. It was as tall as a hill!

However, Luo Yuan's impact managed to shake the entire tree - dust was flying everywhere out of it.

As the hole on the tree expanded from his punches, it was so deep inside that Luo Yuan started to punch the air instead. The impeccable speed had compressed the air which made his punches

more focused. 50% of the force went to the bottom of the hole and created a mini hurricane.

The hole was wrecked even further by the hurricane, causing rumbling noises to follow.

After many slices, the tree that was weighed more than 10,000 tons collapsed, crushing other smaller trees.

A loud thud was heard, as the ground shook and filled the air with sand and debris.

Luo Yuan turned around immediately and ran, but the sandstorm was faster than he was. He only managed to run more than ten meters away, as he was buried in dust and sand, not being able to escape. He then used his Will to fly far away.

He flicked his fist that was flushing red from the collision, and miraculously, the temperature soon went down.

The capacity of his body heat conduction was alarmingly low. If he were to be a piece of metal, under such high-speed collision, he would have melted by now. However, there was only redness on the surface of his fist and no increase of temperature in his flesh.

Escaping far away from the dust, he descended immediately and started to regain his bearings while running around looking for a new target. Those mutated beasts that bumped into him suffered an unfortunate fate. They were all dead in his hands.

Although he was moving, his was not as agile as he was before. But as long as an object within 20 meters was less than five tons, the force of air that was created from his punch proved to be fatal.

However, his journey was not a smooth sailing one. He was swept away by this and was mauled by claws. Although he foresaw that using Foresight, but it could not be avoided as he was not agile enough. But with a slight leap, he was able to fly in the air where even a level six mutated beast could do nothing to him. All these were unnecessary but Luo Yuan refused to take cover.

The Body Fusion was unbelievably powerful. Even when he was hit with the speed of light and ran into countless trees, he was not hurt at all. The power was reciprocal. As the force of his punch was 3,000 tons, this meant that his body was able to handle the same amount of attacks, or else, he would have collapsed by now.

Soon, the day turned bright. Luo Yuan walked towards a creek, with bare parts of his body covered with blood scabs and exposed flesh. He was reeking of disgusting blood stench.

He took off his clothes and hopped into the creek. There were piranhas in it but he did not care less. He then washed himself clean.

Ever since Luo Yuan was out of the cave, he was busy training for a full day where the blood on his body had attracted many mutated beasts. This caused him to be attacked with almost every step he took. It was endless trouble.

However, he was not tired at all.

...

It had been a week since Luo Yuan's stay in the forest. Apart from adapting to his newfound powers, he was battling away. He had long forgotten about his Zhanmadao, and his battle style was now with his bare hands.

In the beginning, he would pick those mutated beasts that were low-level. Whenever he met a level seven mutated beast, he would use his Earth Geyser to tackle them. The power had been upgraded by more than 100 times, and its effect was better than he could ever imagine.

One hit could even smash a level seven mutated beast and disintegrate it into a pile of flesh, leaving all his bones broken.

On the fifth day, he was able to control his power better and as he was adapting, a level seven mutated beast was nothing to him now.

Comparing Strength alone, a gigantic level seven mutated beast would naturally be more powerful than Luo Yuan, but just like how a nail could easily be hammered into a piece of wood, a metal chopstick that was heavier than a nail would be harder to hammer, as the force exerted was different.

Moreover, with Luo Yuan's Body Fusion, the level seven mutated

beast was akin to said metaphor of a wooden chopstick.

With his Agility and lightning speed, a few punches could easily kill off a level seven mutated beast. The damage inflicted was like an electromagnetic bomb attack spreading towards a large area.

Now that he had adapted well to his powers, it gradually was ingrained into his instincts. He had also been training his Four-Dimensional Travel. Possibly because his Will was strong, the Four-Dimensional Travel was much easier than he thought it would be. He did not even need to gather his Will; his mere thoughts would execute such an ability. But when he did use his Will, the distance of travel would be multiplied.

Chapter 423: Back Home

After adapting to his increased power, what was left was polishing those skills and keep training to get even better.

At the break of dawn, Luo Yuan took a bath in the pond to wash away all the blood stains on him. Putting on his clothes and picking up his Zhanmadao, he gathered his Will to fly back to the Reconstruction Area.

Half an hour later, he knocked on the door at home.

Wang Shishi, who opened the door, was surprised to see him. She hugged him and said, "Boss Luo, you're finally back!"

Luo Yuan patted her tiny shoulders and apologized, "I have been busy working these days, but it has finally come to an end."

The mutated human in the living room heard the familiar voice, put down her toy and ran towards him. She hid behind the door and only revealed half of her body. She stared at Luo Yuan in such excitement to a point that her body was trembling.

Luo Yuan looked at the mutated human and noticed that she had gained weight after a month of not seeing her. Her face was plump now.

Apparently, she was living a good life and well-fed with good food.

Soon, Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui came out too. They were surprised to see Luo Yuan. Only Wang Xianguang was working at that time.

"Let's go in." Luo Yuan let go of Wang Shishi's hand, much to her slight disappointment. All of them then followed him into the living room.

She thought his hug was strange, and she squeezed his arms to confirm. Curiously, she asked, "Boss Luo, why is your body so hard? It's as hard as a rock."

"Really?"

"You should touch your arms."

Luo Yuan was stunned, there was nothing strange about his arms – they were soft.

Suddenly, he realized that his senses were completely different from those of ordinary people.

Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali heard what Wang Shishi said and gathered around him to squeeze his arms too. His arms that were soft to him, were hard for them. No matter how hard they tried, they were not able to squeeze it.

"What happened to your body?" Huang Jiahui was worried.

Luo Yuan explained, "I was blessed recently where my ability had a massive upgrade. To be honest, I was in the wilderness for the past few days trying to adapt to my powers but until now, I have yet to gain full control. It might take a long time, and until then, I will have to sleep alone!"

"Sis Huang and Sis Zhao were ordinary people, so it might prove dangerous for them. My body is much tougher than theirs; I will sleep with you." Wang Shishi could not hide how happy she was. Women are the same when men in dominance were present, same goes to Wang Shishi.

Hey, I'm an evolved human too, remember? Zhao Yali thought to herself while staring at Wang Shishi. As she was a reserved person by nature, she had to take it all in. It was impossible for her to argue with Wang Shishi over a man.

Luo Yuan sighed and shook his head, "Bring the broken pressure cooker that's in the kitchen corner for me!"

When Zhao Yali snapped out of her reverie, Huang Jiahui had already made her way to the kitchen and presented the pressure cooker to Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan broke the handle of the pressure cooker and tossed it aside. He covered the cooker while holding its top and bottom. Then, without using any strength, he pressed against the cooker and broke it.

All the ladies were scared and took a few steps back.

It was not the end. Luo Yuan proceeded to pinch the metal like he was playing with dough. The inside of the pressure cooker was thick & tough, and could not be easily deformed, especially a normal Flesh Series evolved human, who could not do anything to it.

If not for the noise that was coming out of the metal pinched by Luo Yuan and seeing it turn red, they would've thought that it was all but an illusion.

Within seconds, a metal ball the size of a fist appeared on Luo Yuan's hand.

It was dark red; even Wang Shishi who was standing two meters away could feel the heat. It was at least 600 degrees Celsius. However, the metal ball sitting on his hand directly on his skin did not hurt him at all.

After showing it to everyone, he walked into the kitchen. He switched on the tap and washed the dark red metal ball with water. An explosion was then heard, and smoke was then everywhere.

They stared at each other in confusion.

Huang Jiahui felt insecure. She realized that her distance with

Luo Yuan was getting further by the day. Not his status nor identity, but rather his way of life.

Just like ants and humans, there was a big gap between them. As time went by, the distance was greater than ever before.

Perhaps one day, he would leave and never come back.

Zhao Yali did not think as much as Huang Jiahui. She was worried that his power would prevent them from having sex.

Even Wang Shishi was scared. She dared not ask Luo Yuan to sleep with her anymore.

But soon, Wang Shishi had cast her worries aside and went up to Luo Yuan in excitement, "Where's the metal ball? Show it to me."

Looking at Wang Shishi's innocence, it lifted Luo Yuan's mood. He took the metal ball out from the kitchen and gave it to her, "Be careful, it could be a little hot."

Wang Shishi received the metal ball and realized that it was still hot. She used her telekinesis to levitate it in the air.

She looked at it and yelled in exaggeration, "Your fingerprints are on the ball!"

"Boss Luo, how much strength do you have? Can you lift a truck

up?" Wang Shishi asked in curiosity.

"That's easy," Luo Yuan said. A 4X6 24 wheeled truck was only 10 tons – which was nothing to him.

"How about a tank?"

"Any type of tank would be no problem for me!" Luo Yuan answered.

"How about a large aircraft?"

The more she asked, the more excited she was. Her face was blushing and her eyes lit up. Luo Yuan happily played along with her. "It depends. If it's on the ground, it should be fine, but not when it's in the air!"

"Does that mean you're Superman?" Wang Shishi asked in excitement, "Do you think you're stronger or is Superman?"

Luo Yuan was speechless, how could one be compared with a fictional character?

He thought about it, Superman in comics aside, if he were to compare his strength with the Superman in movies, they both had their advantages. Perhaps compared to Superman who could lift a mothership, he would pale in comparison, but a real battle would have a different ending.

His two-second Foresight and Space Teleportation alone were sufficient to defeat him. With his level eight Zhanmadao, it was a sure win for him.

As they were talking, Huang Jiahui approached them. Seeing that Luo Yuan was no different from what he used to be, she was relieved. At least he would return with a heart filled with everyone back home.

However, Zhao Yali was in fear. She was blushing and did not even dare to look at him. Nobody knew what was in her mind.

Luo Yuan sighed. As he got more and more powerful, it can sometimes be a burden to him. He realized that his strength had grown during the training last week.

From the initial 150 tons, his force was now 200 tons.

Although his Strength attribute remained at +29, the growth rate shows that his Strength would be more than +30 in less than half a month.

That was the reason why he could not control his power. He was not able to keep up with such a growth rate, unless he stops any of his training, or else he would have to be on his own for a long time.

The mutated human stayed by Luo Yuan quietly while staring at him. As she listened to him, she was worried that he would leave

again.

"Oh right, where is Chen Jiayi?" Luo Yuan suddenly realized that he had not seen her since his return.

"She's still sleeping! She has been like that as of late, despite how much I yell at her, she would only wake up in the afternoon." Huang Jiahui said helplessly. She was far from being Chen Jiayi's mom where she could be strict to her. There was no choice but to only let her be.

Luo Yuan was stunned and stood up instantly, "Let me take a look!"

Chapter 424: Coma

Luo Yuan opened Chen Jiayi's bedroom door and saw that the energy saving lamp was turned on. It was her habit ever since she had moss growing on her.

The room was quiet, there was barely any sounds of breathing in there.

She slept without a blanket in her gray pajamas. That outfit did not make her look the least bit boring. In fact, her silence made her look pure and innocent.

Both her hands were placed on her thighs; she was sleeping peacefully.

What bothered Luo Yuan was the moss that was growing on her. Countless of them had covered her head. It had been more than 40 days since he was last home. The moss was already eating into her body.

"Can she be healed?" Zhao Yali asked in sympathy.

"I'll try, you guys wait outside." Luo Yuan said.

Just as they were closing the door, Luo Yuan noticed that the mutated human was still in the room. He attempted to chase her out but she had become very stubborn. She even had the audacity to scream at him. Not sure what she was saying, but she refused to

leave the room. After much hesitation, there was nothing that Luo Yuan could do but to allow her to be in the room.

Luo Yuan sat on Chen Jiayi's bed and held her weak wrists. His Will allowed him to look into her body easily. Luo Yuan turned solemn. The plant cell had already invaded her blood, coating all her blood vessels. Her blood was clogged, as her red blood cells were surrounded by plant cells. This meant that her metabolism was at the lowest point where ordinary people would have been dead by now. What kept her alive was the nutrients that were secreted from the moss.

It was such an irony!

Luo Yuan then put his hand into her pajamas. Feeling her soft skin, he was aroused. He took a deep breath and proceeded to do what he was doing.

He took a look at her heart; it was filled with greens. It gave him goosebumps, and his lust had soon disappeared. It seemed like all her organs were covered in moss; there was no flesh left that could be seen in her.

The mutated human was curious about Luo Yuan's hand in Chen Jiayi's pajamas. She hopped onto the bed and stared at Luo Yuan's hand. He glared at her. Although he was being a doctor to Chen Jiayi, the mutated human's innocent and curious stare made him feel awkward.

As soon as he was done checking Chen Jiayi, he frowned.

The case was serious, and it should not be delayed any longer. Now that she was sleeping for 20 hours a day, if nothing changed, she would soon not be able to wake up.

Under such circumstances, with the risk of his Will getting infected, Luo Yuan insisted to kill all the moss in Chen Jiayi's body.

He carefully took off her pants to reveal her smooth, long legs. He closed his eyes instantly so that he would not be aroused again. Now that he had not had sex for more than 40 days, he was as dry as a piece of burning wood where his lewd imagination alone could make him lose all control.

He held her shins and released his Will. As compared to genetic modification on a nano-level, the killing of cells was 100 times easier. Her legs which were all green soon faded and regained its original color. With her blood clogged, her skin was still pale.

As he was moving upwards, her legs soon went back to normal. Luo Yuan opened his eyes to take off her underwear and pajamas. He could not help but peek. He almost lost control.

He closed his eyes immediately, it took a while for him to calm himself down and start the healing.

As he was touching her tummy, he did not notice that Chen Jiayi was awake. Her eyes were half opened. She then noticed Luo Yuan, who was sitting in front of her.

"Boss... Boss Luo!" She was stunned.

Luo Yuan heard her and his hands shook. He felt like a thief. He opened his eyes and said, "You're awake."

"I woke up from my nightmare!"

She sat right up and looked at her naked body. She was confused but soon calmed down. "Boss Luo, what are you doing?"

It was strange to Luo Yuan that she did not react like how a girl usually would. With her body bare-naked in front of others, a girl would usually feel shy.

However, there was no emotion on her face. Although she was questioning him, her tone remained calm.

Apart from her first words where she was slightly surprised, she was emotionless.

But that made Luo Yuan feel somewhat relieved, as it made the situation less awkward.

"Don't get up, I'm healing you."

"Boss Luo, it's okay. I like myself like this, there's nothing bad about being a plant." Chen Jiayi said coldly.

She grabbed her pajamas and prepared to wear them, only to realize that she could not control her legs.

Luo Yuan noticed that there was green in her eyes. When she was talking to him just now, her eyes were normal. He suspected that it was not Chen Jiayi herself talking, but rather the conscience that was formed by the countless moss.

"You don't get to decide!"

The green in her eyes became intense. She struggled for a while and grabbed Luo Yuan's face. The force and speed were comparable with a level three Flesh Series evolved human.

But unfortunately, her opponent was Luo Yuan.

He pushed down her head softly, while her hands flailed wildly in the air. She could not reach Luo Yuan.

"Lie down quietly, this will only take a while."

He laid her down on the bed.

He was hesitating if he should heal her head as well, as it was rather different from the genetic modification of his own body. But this time, he was using his own Will to invade somebody else's brain to influence the person. He did not know what consequences

that would bring to Chen Jiayi.

But looking at her attack, she was obviously controlled by something more superior. This was the worst it could get, as even if he were to kill all the moss in her body, as long as there was moss in her head, the problem would not be solved.

He had to do it despite the risk.

Fortunately, moss belongs to the plant species where they can be tamed, or else it would be risky to his family.

...

Luo Yuan hastened his speed – the healing process took an hour.

As he helped Chen Jiayi who was in a coma to put on her clothes, he was relieved.

The one hour had drained his energy. It was more exhausting than battling for a few days continuously.

The lust he had was too strong, and there were many instances where he almost could not control himself.

Of course, the mutated human who was watching did play a part in helping him do that.

He did a check on her body. Her blood was flowing normally, and her skin had regained color.

The only thing was, she was now in a coma.

As compared to Chen Jiayi's Will that was loose, Luo Yuan's was strong and condensed. Just a touch could bring about an intense effect.

Ever since the killing of the moss in her brain, she fell into a deep slumber. Now it all depended on her Will and luck, whether or not she would wake up.

He hoped that she would wake up one day!

Luo Yuan looked at her and sighed. He turned around and left her bedroom, and the mutated human followed suit.

Chapter 425: Outer Space

"How's Jiayi faring?" Zhao Yali asked instantly as she saw Luo Yuan coming out of the room.

Luo Yuan shook his head and told her everything.

There was silence in the house. Chen Jiayi had always been the quiet one in the group. She had always felt that her existence in the house was somewhat... insignificant but she was a good girl.

Everyone emphasized with the situation she was in.

"Maybe we should bring her to a hospital!" Huang Jiahui suggested.

"That's a good idea!" Luo Yuan nodded and said.

Luo Yuan had a full understanding of the human body since he had the ability to modify genes. Although he knew that the hospital may not be able to help, it still gave them a little hope.

Everyone moved fast. Luo Yuan carried Chen Jiayi and they made their way to the hospital. The mutated human attempted to follow them but she locked in the house, screaming as she saw them leave.

Soon, they arrived at the hospital.

The hospital was not too far away, the distance was only four kilometers. It was the first time Luo Yuan was there. If memory served him right, the amount of people in the hospital right now was significantly lesser compared to the time before the apocalypse. Most of the people there were couples who were trying IVF as well as volunteers. There were not many patients, most of them being those who were physically injured.

Now that the meals were rich in nutrients, the human body was stronger compared to pre-apocalyptic times. Even without training, an ordinary human right now would have the body of an athlete if they were compared to humans before the apocalypse.

After all, the diseases were caused by viruses and bacterias. The first virus had a simple structure, similar to the antidote virus. Perhaps viruses were the only organisms that were unaffected by the antidote virus after the apocalypse began.

Bacteria, on the other hand, had a difficult time invading the human body since they now had better and improved immune systems

Although there were not many people at the hospital, they had complete medical equipment. Before long, Chen Jiayi was called up for her medical check-up.

Five hours later. They had her medical report in their hands.

Her body was normal. In fact, it was even better than the body of

an ordinary human. Her brain was totally fine, with the exception that she had messy brainwaves. In a nutshell, she was a completely healthy individual. That being said, they still lacked a proper explanation for her coma, being only able to guess the possible reasons.

After they rejected the doctor's advice to stay in the hospital, Chen Jiayi was carried home by Luo Yuan. He knew the cause of the messy brainwaves. It was caused by the Will he had used to heal her. Even if she were to stay at the hospital, it would not help her condition. The only thing they could do was to wait for his Will to gradually dissipate.

In theory, she was no different from a vegetable.

...

Luo Yuan put Chen Jiayi down on the bed and covered her with a blanket. Before he left, he took a good look at her closed eyes and her smooth face. She looked like a tiny white flower on the sidewalk. He sighed and walked out of the room.

He had the urge to smoke but he managed to control himself. Having seen countless disasters and deaths ever since the onset of the apocalypse, he had a cold, tough heart but he still had feelings for the people around him.

Though Luo Yuan had seen everything in the world and had killed many people, he was lonely deep inside. Within that exterior was just an ordinary person. It upset him when things happen to

people close to him.

...

The next morning, Luo Yuan put on his clothes after he woke up.

He took a look at the mutated human who followed him to his room, looking helpless. In an attempt to prevent her from entering his room, he locked the door to his room before he slept. It did not deter her though, she broke the lock and came into the room.

He stared at her but she avoided any eye contact and pretended to yawn. Of late, she had become more human-like and less fearful of Luo Yuan. She was a shell of what she used to be when she used to shy away from human contact.

Luo Yuan put on his pants and shoes and carried her Zhanmadao with him as he walked out of the room. Once he was done showering, he walked towards the door but she pulled his legs, not wanting to let go. Luo Yuan lifted his leg but she continued to hold onto him. Not wanting to entertain her, he walked a few steps while she held onto his legs. He then pointed at her bedroom after he opened the door.

The mutated human shook her head and mimicked him as she pointed outside the door while she screamed. He thought to himself, "This girl was getting smarter." Perhaps the reason why she clung onto him was that he was the first person she ever knew. Though she spent most of her time with Wang Shishi, she would not leave Luo Yuan alone if he was at home.

Another possible reason was that he had been away for too long and that she was worried. Though she was very persistent, he did not want to bring her along.

He was up to something and she would not survive in the cruel place he was headed to. He removed her hands from his pants and gestured to her, looking like he would smack her. Being scared, she took a few steps back and Luo Yuan took the chance to run out the door before closing it instantly.

Looking at the closed door, the mutated human was upset. She went back to her room unwillingly.

...

Luo Yuan left Hope City into the wilderness. Stopping to look at the sky, his heart was beating fast. He was headed to outer space for adaptive training. Since the system told him he was a lifeform that could survive in space, it would be ridiculous if he had never been to space. At the same time, he wanted to know if he could really survive in outer space and how long he could survive.

He removed his headband. His body used to drain quickly whenever he entered the four-dimensional world but this time, he did not feel a thing. It was no different compared to when he was his regular self. The amount of strength that was used when he had +30 Physique was felt like nothing. The amount of strength he consumed was slower than its recovery.

He then took a deep breath and began to fly within his space-time bubble.

There was a total of five layers in the atmosphere which were the troposphere, stratosphere, mesosphere, ionosphere, and exosphere. However, those did not affect him at all as he was traveling at a high speed. Even before he reached his maximum speed, he was already in the exosphere. As he accelerated, the earth beneath him seemed to get further away.

He could not help but turn around to take a good look. The earth was like a gigantic ball before him that was sparkling, it was majestic.

He had seen many images of earth that were taken from outer space. It was a completely different experience to look at it with his own eyes, from outer space. The feeling he got was incomparable with what he got when he was looking at two-dimensional images.

In outer space, oxygen was thin. The once blue sky was now a pitch black, a complete darkness with countless mesmerizing stars scattered around.

There was a scorching light that came out from the white fireball that was above him. Without the filter and refraction from the atmosphere, the sun seemed smaller than when he saw it from earth. However, the light coming from it was much stronger.

20 minutes later, he reached his maximum speed. He was flying at 150 kilometers per second. It was his first time in space so he

faced many uncertainties. For safety reasons, he did not dare venture too far from earth. He maintained his speed and flew for another minute before he left his space-time bubble.

The oxygen within the bubble faded while the remaining oxygen within his lungs was forced out by the air pressure. It was uncomfortable, feeling like something was being pulled out of his body. He did not feel too good but managed to adapt to the conditions of outer space after a while with his powerful body.

The mitochondria within his cells were able to release water particles and when fusion took place, it would create oxygen. He was now able to survive in a vacuum.

He floated in space, allowing the weak gravity coming from the earth to move his body. It had no direction and was neither up nor down. He found it difficult to adapt his body to a zero-gravity environment as he had been on the earth his entire life. No matter how hard he tried to stand upright, it was to no avail.

It was extremely quiet and there was no sound at all. Having only been there for half an hour, he already started getting goosebumps as his imagination ran wild. In such an environment, the loneliness an individual would experience is sufficient to drive one to the brink of insanity if there was nothing to keep occupied with.

All of a sudden, he saw something approaching him. His eyes were sharp and identified it as an artificial object that had been discarded. Luo Yuan gathered his will and flew towards the object. Since there was barely any gravity in space, a slight movement was enough to propel his flight to a high speed.

Soon, he arrived at the object and found that it was an abandoned satellite with the European Union logo on it. Both sides of the solar panels powering the satellite were burnt and he found that there were many such satellites in the area, being able to spot on every thousand kilometers or so. Some were still completely intact while others had been scattered to pieces.

He recalled the time it took to fly to space within the space-time bubble as well as the distance he travelled. He realized that he was at the distance where he was in a similar orbit with satellites.

It was a dangerous place as broken pieces were constantly coming at high at high speeds. If he was not aware of his surroundings, he would be crushed by the floating pieces.

Though Luo Yuan was immensely strong, under such high speeds where the projectiles traveled at 10 kilometers per second, he would be easily impaled.

However, with his foresight ability, he had nothing to worry about. He flew forward at full speed for more than an hour and stopped when he felt he had only half of his Will remaining. The place he was at was not safe and he had to preserve his energy if he needed to fight off spaceships from the extraterrestrial civilization. Besides him, there were other life forms wandering through space.

The glimpse of the super-creature that he saw in the alien's dream gave him the knowledge that such fearsome creatures existed in space. However, he did not come across any life forms

along the way.

Come to think of it, such fearsome life forms were rare. The chance of being able to encounter them in the vastness of endless space was smaller than the chance of striking the lottery!

Chapter 426: Out Of Reach

Located within one of the mysterious corners underground the New Capital City, this place covered more than 50,000 square meters which were the equivalent of six or seven football fields. Tens of thousands of staff and a troop of elite soldiers have gathered in the giant hall.

However, it would seem that everyone was quiet and there was a pin drop silence as everyone stared hard at the screen, looking at various images that changes in the data that was being shown without so much as a blink. There was only the sound of the computer fan along with the constant sound of typing that came from the keyboards. The atmosphere was tense and depressing.

The High Commission that was directly under the command of the Land Observation, Strategy & Security Bureau was located in this place and was the most mysterious department in the reconstruction area. It ruled over the most powerful force mankind had on their side to this very day and at the same time, they were the last line of defense and also happen to be the best chance the reconstruction had in their arsenal.

From satellites to pre-emptive warning airships modified with the hides of high-level mutated beasts to unmanned aerial vehicles (UAV), they even had a ground penetrating radar (GPR) which served to turn the entire reconstruction area into an airtight surveillance network that closely monitored everything that posed a deadly threat to the reconstruction area.

Among all those, oversight of level eight life-forms as well as the

execution of strategic attacks on them whenever deemed necessary were the main task of this department. The way they judged safety standards were based on the distance these life-forms were from the reconstruction area. All level eight life-forms wandering around the reconstruction area were grouped into three hazard classes.

If they were within 400 kilometers, far away from the control boundaries of the reconstruction area then they belonged to the group that needed to be attacked immediately. If they were within 400 to 800 kilometers away, they would fall into the medium-risk group where heavy surveillance was still necessary on top of constant vigilance. Those that were between 800 to 1000 kilometers away were considered to be in the low-risk group. The necessity for attention for life-forms in the low-risk group is significantly lower and the only action was a focus on their underlying movement.

For life-forms that were at greater distances, it was still like a blind spot for the reconstruction area based on the level of their strength today. Only satellite images could get traces of images. Of course, the further these life-forms were from the reconstruction area, the better insulated the reconstruction area was from an attack.

Today, within the observable range, they have already confirmed the presence of 12 level eight life-forms within range. Four were within the medium-risk group while the rest were in the low-risk group.

...

Out of the blue, a staff member stared at the screen with a changed expression. Without hesitating, he immediately sounded the alarm from the table.

All of a sudden, a staff member stared at the screen, with his expression changed. Without hesitation, he pressed the alarm button on the table. A loud, confusing alarm sounded in the empty, giant hall as the atmosphere tensed within the hall, making everyone stop their work subconsciously.

Soon, a group of people made their way into the hall. Across the passageway, an aged Colonel General with a solemn face could be seen saying, "Everyone, continue your work. Control station! Shift the UAV with the serial number A7990 to the central screen. The UAV team! Move all the UAVs in the A7 area to the coordinates we discussed prior to this and focus on monitoring their movements!"

Within a few moments, the image appeared on the screen. On the screen was a level eight mutated beast with the codename 'Blue Dragon'. It did, indeed, look like a dragon but it looked more like a Chinese dragon than the evil dragon hailing from the west.

Its body was slender, wavy like a snake with four thick, strong, incurved claws. There were two ferocious horns on its forehead and it had a horse-like mane. Aside from some minor differences, its appearance was strikingly similar to the dragon from the myths and legends of China. In addition to that, it even looked more dignified and ferocious than the dragon of legends!

If Wang Shishi was here, she would have recognized this deadly life-form which was similar to the one she and Luo Yuan encountered while they were seeking the heart of wisdom outside the city. It seemed like interference in the signals were causing the image on the screen to jitter incessantly. The screen was blurry and the signal was even completely lost at certain moments.

Even though the screen was somehow distorted, everyone still noticed that the level eight life-form was quite unhappy. It stood on a hill, jumping up and down from time to time, roaring towards the sky constantly. Its body gave off a strong aura that caused awful changes to the climate of nearby areas.

The white clouds in the sky were changing rapidly as they surged endlessly. At times, they would appear and sometimes, they would suddenly disappear.

Even if they had a screen separating them from the incident, they still looked at the chilling images. The life-force a level eight life-form had was immensely powerful, far beyond human comprehension. Such life-forms should not exist in reality and should only be in myths and fiction movies.

"It seems a little uneasy." A young Major gave his advice. He looked at the screen for a moment and after some analysis, he calmly said, "It seems like it's afraid of something. Control station, try using the unused lenses and point them at the sky."

Soon, the huge screen was divided into four smaller screens.

"What is this?" he looked attentively. Instantly, he noticed a small dot which was moving slowly in the sky from the top-left corner of the screen. He shouted, "Enlarge the screen!"

The enlargement caused the image that was originally clear to become blurred. At the same time, the true identity of this dot on the screen was slowly revealed. Looking at its shape, it seemed to be a bird that was apparently a level eight life-form. It seemed to be the cause of the Blue Dragon's irritation.

The Colonel General looked at the screen in anger. This was an absolute failure to perform their duty, failing to even notice a level eight creature that had gotten this close to the reconstruction area. However, it was not the time to point fingers. In a heavy tone, he said, "Lock the radar on it and calculate its height immediately!"

"The radars are unable to see the target. It's seemingly invisible to our radars. Shifting to nearby satellites!"

"Through laser imaging, its height seems to be about 56,400 meters above the sky."

"The satellite has locked onto the target!" The satellite team reported after a short moment.

"Notify the review team of the High Commission for a nuclear attack!" The Colonel General said with a heavy tone.

A middle-aged man, wearing the military uniform of a major who

was almost unnoticeable on the side, quickly took out a secret phone, walked to the side and muttered a few words. He hung up the phone moments later and walked back to the Colonel General and said, "They've been notified, a temporary approval has been issued!"

The nuclear keys were still a symbol of power. Even nuclear bombings had become so frequent that they were now treated like conventional weapons. Without a temporary approval issued by the review team of the High Commission for a nuclear attack, even the Colonel Generals in the reconstruction area would not be able to fire a nuclear weapon.

"Get the strategic forces on the line and sound a level one alert! Then inform the military in the southeast region to prepare their anti-nuclear efforts well!"

...

"The military in the southeast region has been informed, sir! They've acknowledged!"

"Connection ended. Colonel, we await your instructions!"

The Colonel General did not give the command to launch the nuclear attack immediately. Instead, he waited in silence.

It was uncommon knowledge that there were in fact, not many nuclear bombs that remained in the reconstruction area. Unlike

Russia and the United States who had a large reserve of nuclear weapons prior to the apocalypse that they could squander at their pleasure, the nuclear weapon stocks in China were not even one-tenth of the combined stockpile for both countries.

In addition to the continuous use over these past two years as well as the scarcity of enriched uranium in the area surrounding them, the reconstruction area was only left with no more than ten nuclear bombs that got lesser following every detonation. Even the detonation of a hydrogen bomb would require an ignition by an atomic bomb.

The leaking of this information would cause widespread panic among humans. If this was not the case, how else would the reconstruction area tolerate such harsh living conditions and dangerous life-forms such as these who wandered around its periphery?

Time passed, second after second as the slender body of the Blue Dragon coiled around a hill, crawling around with unease in a meandering manner. It had gotten more irritable as a red light, similar to a mist of energy enveloped its body.

The images on the screen shuddered even more as the bird and the beast began to confront each other after more than ten minutes.

The small dot that was initially in the sky enlarged swiftly with a speed that was visible to the naked eye. There was a glowing smoke trailing its body in various enchanting colors, making it look extraordinary, like a supernatural being.

It dropped like a meteorite falling from the sky, swooping down from the high altitudes in a flash. It approached the ground within a dozen seconds as a pair of sharp claws were bared at the Blue Dragon. It looked like a streak of lightning as it swooped down from a thousand meters in the sky.

The Blue Dragon roared at the giant bird that was swooping down but it was just a fake show of strength as it did not really dare to fight the bird. Within a moment, it jumped slightly to balance its unstable body and leaped across a few kilometers, falling on another mountain in an attempt to evade the bird.

The next moment, the hill the Blue Dragon was originally on had been shredded to pieces by the claw of the giant bird.

The wings of the giant bird flapped vigorously, causing the wind to howl and the trees could be seen falling. As the wind blew up sand and stone, it took control of its posture and flew back into the sky, making a few circles. It was eyeing its prey at the bottom patiently. Once again, its body began swooping down at the very next moment towards the Blue Dragon that was desperately fleeing

Following that, there was a chase between the two giant beasts. Whether intentional or unintentional, the Blue Dragon was approaching the reconstruction area rapidly.

"They've almost broken through the cordon!" The young major reminded.

"Wait a little longer!" The Colonel General said in a heavy tone. He frowned as he stared at the screen hoping for a turnaround. Compared to killing two level eight life-forms, these nuclear bombs were undoubtedly more precious to the reconstruction area.

"Another two minutes remaining..." The officer reminded again after a short while.

"One minute..." Beads of sweat began appearing on the forehead of the officer but he dared not wipe them away.

"Launch the nuclear bomb!" The Colonel General sighed.

...

The cap on top of the underground silo gradually opened. The next moment, a medium-range missile that was carrying a hydrogen warhead was fired from the underground silo and sped into the sky.

The Blue Dragon had been caught in a more difficult and vulnerable position this time. One evasion after another had inevitably caused its body to get clutched by the giant bird for several times. Although it managed to eventually escape, its body had already ended up with its skin being ripped off and flesh being torn off, dripping in blood.

This giant bird was its greatest enemy. This was entirely in the

mind of the Blue Dragon, causing it to lack the courage to fight back. Ever since it had been discovered by the giant bird during its morning hunt, the giant bird had kept its eyes on it like gangrene clinging onto the bone.

As a level eight life-form, its IQ did not differ much from that of a human and was perhaps, even higher. Even from afar, it could sense clearly the powerful energy fluctuations that were being released by the nuclear explosives one after the other.

It was becoming very clear to the Blue Dragon that moving ahead, it would get more dangerous. The region before it had been long determined as a restricted area and it would not have dared move one step further to the west in the past. However, today its life was at stake and it could neither fight nor escape. It had no choice but to run toward the restricted area in an attempt to scare the giant bird away.

Unfortunately, it seemed that the opponent had no idea on the danger that place posed and was in complete ignorance. The Blue Dragon was continuously chased by the giant bird. At this moment, the Blue Dragon had a very feeling of danger that came from its heart.

Its entire body shuddered, causing its horse-like mane to stand erect. It suddenly opened its eyes wide, not daring to move an inch forward. It moved its limbs swiftly, and then turned its back and ran. At this moment, the giant bird in the sky had already been forgotten. Compared to the critical danger that it faced now, the greatest enemy above its head could be completely ignored.

Expectedly, the giant bird had no intention of letting the Blue Dragon escape. A gust of wind was shot towards the Blue Dragon's head three times. The pain could be felt all over its body before it could even react. A pair of large, ferocious, sharp claw, similar to old roots gripped its body.

The very next moment, its body felt light and it was taken away, flying off the face of the earth quickly.

Frightened, the Blue Dragon roared once as its body moved vigorously. The sharp claws were like iron claws, deeply embedded into its body. Aside from getting a larger, deeper wound, the struggle was of little use. It continued to fly higher and higher towards the direction of the restricted area.

This discovery frightened the Blue Dragon even more. Its body went stiff. In a moment, the wind whistled, and the hill seemed to move backwards swiftly. However, a dazzling light appeared a few kilometers behind them at the very next moment, spreading quickly as endless energy and radiation spread out in all directions.

They seemed to have reached the sun's surface! Under the high energy rays, green smoke was coming out from the bodies of the giant beasts as their scales and feathers began to melt. In this moment of crisis, the giant bird spread its wings and fled as quickly as lightning. The shockwave from the hydrogen bomb's explosion simply could not catch up. Unfortunately, the giant bird was also struggling to support itself and managed to only fly for half a minute and was unable to support itself any longer after sustaining such terrible injuries. It fell down mid-flight with smoke coming out from its whole body.

...

"Oh no! Hope City is below it!"

A group of people in the Land Observation, Strategy & Security Bureau have been looking at the screen and their expressions changed. They were covered in cold sweat and were least expecting such a situation. The two giant beasts were obviously still alive now, though they were severely injured.

This is the second largest city, just after New Capital City. This was one of the most important industrial bases within the reconstruction area. The entire reconstruction area would be greatly affected if it was destroyed.

"Notify the guardians and the Firearms Bureau of Hope City as well as the squads in nearby cities to immediately kill these two level eight life-forms." The Colonel General said, with a heavy tone.

The headquarters for the Firearms Bureau situated in New Capital City was too far a distance from Hope City. Distant water is powerless against immediate fire. It would already be too late when they arrived and based on the size of these two beasts and widespread damage would occur even if they were to just walk around.

At that moment, he recalled seeing a confidential file and quickly said, "I remember the new vice-captain of the Firearms Bureau

staying in Hope City. Notify him quickly, there is still hope for a turnaround."

"I foresee the notification will be sent in vain!" A staff member nearby that was responsible for screening the satellite images said after bracing himself and stood up with a peculiar look on his face.

"Why is that so?" The Colonel General asked with a serious look on his face. The rest also looked at him, a puzzled look on their faces.

This young staff member looked tense, being noticed by a person from a high position. With a slight tremble in his voice, he said, "Report...., I... I've seen a face, which looks exactly like Minister Luo, from the unprocessed satellite images earlier."

All the people took a deep breath and looked at each other, right after the voices stopped.

Chapter 427: Deterioration

Without even a warning signal, the siege on Hope City began.

Unlike pre-apocalyptic times, both in the frontlines, as well as the cities behind it, was prepared for battle at any moment and any incident would be met with swift reaction from all quarters.

The two level eight creatures have not even landed, but every single anti-aircraft network system in every corner of Hope City had already lit up. In just a second, endless streams of weapons fired, ripping through the air in the sky like a flaming scourge that is the Grim Reaper, attacking the two creatures and spontaneously bursting into a gigantic fireball.

Despite such ferocious attacks, the damage done was really minor.

All level eight creatures evolved comprehensively. Aside from their powerful Physique, they have also mastered the application of energy in force fields. Every creature at this level would have a protective force field around itself when battling an opponent on the same level and such battles may result in minor injuries. However, against anti-aircraft weapons like these, its protective barrier would not probably be broken through without a long fight. Though the explosions seemed to be stunning, the damage it did to them was akin to being hit with a feather.

The hulking beast's size was astonishing.

The Blue Dragon had a width of 20 meters, a length of 170 to 180 meters, weighed several tens of thousands, perhaps even hundreds of thousands of tons.

Though the giant bird did not have large wings, when it was fully erect, it stood at a height of 70 to 80 meters! For a flying creature, it had to be as light as a feather but it still had a weight of 3000 to 4000 tons.

Both life-forms plummeted from high altitudes, like mountains breaking away from the heavens.

"Boom!"

An explosion erupted, a chemical factory that took up thousands of acres in Hope City was instantly laid to waste, accompanied with a violent outburst of fiery ruin and a blazing hell that towered into the sky. However, even with such a horrible disaster, the two dreadful life-forms survived.

After a few moments, the two beasts struggled out of the thick smoke and the blazing fire that surrounded them. The blazing fire was close to being put out when they went through the flames, jolting, twisting, and turning around before it eventually extinguished as the bodies of the beasts got closer to the source of the flames.

The fall had completely separated both beasts.

Such a critical injury had hampered the giant bird's ability to hunt down the Blue Dragon. Its feathers had vaporized from the intense radiation of the hydrogen bomb. Even its skin was extensively charred, as a gush of bloody pus and melted fat was seen dripping down from its body. Besides that, its eyes were covered with a layer of gray, it was clearly blinded.

The Blue Dragon's condition was just as good as the Giant Bird. Even before the hydrogen bomb exploded, it was already wounded. Without the protection of its scales, its injuries were even more severe, even to the extent that some of its internal organs were almost cooked.

If it were a normal creature, it would have died. However, they were still able to struggle and move around. As time passed, they wounds began to heal.

Every level eight life-form had an energy crystal within their body. As long as they did not receive a fatal blow or suffer direct damage to the brain, they could recover from injuries of any severity steadily with the help of the revitalizing energy of the energy crystal.

Everything was happening too soon, it was too abrupt. The nearby factory could not react in time and thought it was just another sudden occurrence. Some of the factory workers even banded together to carry out a search and rescue.

Within minutes, groups of workers were seen carrying buckets, fire extinguishers, and wheelbarrows filled with sand had filled the streets.

Humans were selfish, but sometimes they could be kind.

For the past two years, the reconstruction area had suffered countless hardships and disaster but it endured and survived every single time. This was only because of the sacrifices the soldiers made at the frontline but was also because of the great number of sophisticated weaponry they had in their arsenal. To top it off, they also had to thank the common folk that worked day and night. Now, the people were even more united, disciplined, and aware than before.

Unfortunately, this time they were neither facing a blazing fireball nor a reactor that could explode at

any time but rather, two monsters that managed to survive a nuclear bomb.

The earthquake was accompanied with the occasional crashing of buildings as an unspeakable horror crept across the town. The workers on the street involuntarily slowed down their pace.

An indescribable terror lurked within their hearts.

In the beginning, it was only a slight odor. The workers felt something was wrong but they still moved towards the factory. Still, they felt a deep sense of danger as they move forward. When they passed the corner, everyone stopped walking.

"Woong!" Their minds became blank.

There were no fences in the factories after the apocalypse and it seemed like something had fallen and everything collapsed. Suddenly, the place seemed to become very broad and wide. Everybody witnessed a shocking scene - a huge body shuttling within the factories.

The Blue Dragon was about 20 meters in width which was the equivalent of about seven to eight floors. It could even swallow a level six mutated beast while a level seven mutated beast would take just two to three mouthfuls.

Even if it was two to three kilometers away, the people were still stressed. The worst part was, it was slowly making its way towards them.

Furthermore, this was not an ordinary creature. Though the injured Blue Dragon seemed slow, it was just a matter of perspective. Its huge body meant it moved at a faster speed, even if it was just crawling slowly.

While the crowd was stunned at the sight before them, it had already traveled a kilometer.

The crowd recovered and there was chaos. Everyone was running and those who could still run were considered to be brave. Many of them have been scared until they were numb. They wanted to run but they just could not move their bodies.

When the Blue Dragon was just 500 meters away from them, the fear became even more unreal.

The magnetic field on the ground was a total mess. Even the high voltage tower was sparkling. There was a group of people who lay on the ground, white foam flowing from their mouths while their bodies shook vigorously. Some of them were scared to death.

...

The chief of the Security Division in Hope City was sweating profusely when he received the news.

That has never happened before. He could not believe that a level eight creature had broken into Hope City and the worse thing was, there were two of them! Fortunately, both of them were injured.

Hope City was different from the other cities. It was the industrial zone of the reconstruction area and was also the base where they launched rockets. Because of that, the defense system here was also stronger, not to mention the various types of weapons they had in their arsenal.

There were more than 20 electromagnetic cannons as well as a nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank in Hope City.

However, the town was complicated and had many buildings that acted as a shield. It was not a good idea to if they shot at the beasts with the machine guns.

The only weapon they could use was the nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank and truck. As the situation was worsening, many military orders have been issued. The aerial defense alarm was sounded immediately.

Many workers evacuated the grounds. Within 15 minutes, the entire city was empty. Even those who were at the basement one had to move to a few levels underground.

At the same time, many of the tanks, rockets, cannon trucks, and even the nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank were driven rapidly into the streets.

The nuclear electromagnetic tank was like the naval ship of the ground. Its size was huge, fully occupying four driving lanes in the street at once. The concrete ground cracked as it moved along the street.

Hope City had to take rapid action.

Even then, the recovery speed of both level eight creatures was even faster. Initially, they moved slowly they struggled to move. However, as time passed, the charred parts of their bodies slowly recovered and new skin began to grow.

Their injuries rapidly recovered and their wounds closed. Their speed of recovery had become even faster.

Wherever they passed, factories would collapse and machines would be damaged. Some parts of the ground which could not withstand the weight of the two giant beasts collapsed as well. There were a few tons of giant rock and soil that fell into basement one.

Fortunately, most of the workers have evacuated so there were very little injuries and casualties.

The giant bird was closer to the military base and it had a difficult battle with one of the groups. It was a group with 12 military tanks.

The battle began when more than 10 missiles were launched into the air, flying rapidly towards the bird. Though it was blind, it could still sense the danger around it. Its huge body managed to avoid the missiles with a flexible jump. Immediately after its jump, it roared towards the direction where the missiles came from. Its voice was sharp and had a high pitch which caused very powerful sound waves. A few circles of waves could be seen around it, causing a ball of dust to form.

All the tanks had lost their control and collided into one another. Some had gone straight into the factories nearby while some collided with the buildings like a mad cow. None of them returned, seeing that the soldiers were probably all dead.

The loud sound of the explosions had made the frightened giant bird felt rather insecure. It was a level eight creature which came from foreign places. It had no idea what the humans and the reconstruction area were all about. However, the bad experiences

it had here one after the other hinted at it to leave this fearsome place as soon as possible.

Its bald wings moved constantly, producing a high-pitched sound causing strong waves to spread out from its body. The surroundings seemed so beautiful as it flapped its wings under the sunshine. It definitely looked mystical and amazing.

Its body slowly floated into mid-air before it flew to a higher altitude. However, an electromagnetic bomb hit its body when it was just 20 meters off the ground.

It screamed frantically and fell onto the ground again with a lot of blood on its chest. There was a big hole with a half meter width on its chest and blood was gushing out like a geyser. The giant bird rolled around several times before standing up in anger.

The wound on its body was shockingly huge to humans. However, it was considered to be a minor injury for a creature with a 70 to 80 meters body. Unfortunately, the severe pain and the insecurity it felt had made it even more ferocious!

It turned around to look at the direction of the attack and it heard a loud, strange sound coming from afar.

It hooted and the next moment, a pair of 30 meters tall, five to six meters wide legs rapidly moved toward the direction of the sound.

It was like a super-bulldozer, all the obstacles along the way were

destroyed with ease. The driver of the tank had seemingly lost his mind as he continued aiming the bomb at the target.

The worst thing was, the electromagnetic bomb required a lot of energy for every launch which required a buffer of a few minutes before it could be launched again.

That being said, the giant bird had already crossed three to four kilometers within one minute. Its heavy, huge claw was pressed against the nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank.

As a giant bird which could lift the Blue Dragon's 10,000 tons of weight, its strength was definitely fearsome. Under its crazed attack, a buzzing sound could be heard from the metal. The entire object was totally destroyed.

Even after that, it seemed that it was not the end. Perhaps, the giant bird thought of it as an opponent at the same level and pecked on the tank with its beak. It was a rapid attack which was even faster than speed the electromagnetic bomb traveled at. It was ten times faster than the speed of sound.

"Bang!"

The entire tank was broken, the components flying everywhere and the soldiers within the tank tragically dead.

...

The people who monitored the screen seemed pale and began to sweat.

The chief of the Security Division was shivering as he spoke on the phone, "Two of the level eight creatures were recovering speedily and the situation is worsening. Our troops have been attacked terribly and many have died. The nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank was totally destroyed. We need immediate support or Hope City will be finished!"

His lips were still trembling when he put down the phone.

"Sir, what should we do now?" An officer asked anxiously.

The chief struggled to answer as he was paced back and forth. He gritted his teeth and said, "Get ready to launch the bombs! Clear all the buildings that are in our way and open a way for the electromagnetic bomb!"

"Hope City will suffer a huge loss!" Someone hesitated.

"We can't delay any further. We have no time to wait for the support!"

...

On the other hand, the sub-team of the Firearms Bureau in Hope City had arrived on the other side of the city. However, they saw no way to get closer to the Blue Dragon. Its ferocious outlook was

torture to their minds. Some of them even lost their courage as they approached the Blue Dragon from hundreds of kilometers away.

A few of the team members bent their bodies down and hid at the corner as they watched the slender body of the Blue Dragon pass by the streets.

"Captain! Do we really have to kill it? I think... it might be a bit difficult." Xie Junhui said with a trembling voice.

"He's right, it's not something we can kill." Li Dong said.

As a woman, Lin Feiyan was afraid reptiles. However, she was the captain and she needed to be a good role model. "Hold on, let's observe the situation first."

After a while, the Blue Dragon left. The stressful atmosphere improved and everyone felt relieved.

"How great would it be if my master was here." Fang Peibin whispered.

"I've heard that Brother Luo has become a Deputy Minister! That's amazing!" Xu Zhiqiang said.

"Yes, I think that's true. I have a few friends who are working at the headquarters of the Firearms Bureau who heard that Brother Luo has beaten Minister Ling. However, no one believes in me

when I tell them Brother Luo was from our team." Wu Qianru said. Her eyes were shone with admiration when she spoke of Luo Yuan. She used to be in the reserve team in the headquarter of the Firearms Bureau, so she had many insights.

As the crowd judged the situation, Lin Feiyan paid close attention to the situation with her tightly clenched fists. Nowadays, Luo Yuan had become her enemy. Though he had left the Firearms Bureau of Hope City and she had full authority over the entire department, everyone still had a strong impression of Luo Yuan. She was angry at the fact that he seemed irreplaceable.

Lin Feiyan wanted to run out and prove that she was better than Luo Yuan as she looked at the giant beast that stood before her, almost disappearing from their vision. However, her legs felt numb and she remained stationary where she stood.

She subconsciously raised her head to look up at the sky and realized a tiny spot that landed from above. It moved at an amazing speed and was unbelievable as it could not be detected by the naked eye. In half a second, it disappeared from her vision again.

"What's that?"

Chapter 428: Blue Dragon

The giant bird was unable to escape and felt extremely insecure and hysteric. After it shredded the nuclear-powered electromagnetic tank, its huge body was rampaging everywhere and most of the factories in its path were all destroyed. Several explosions happened and the sound of the explosions stimulated the giant bird, sending it into a frenzied state.

At this moment, a human shadow appeared on giant bird's head unexpectedly. The giant bird seemed to feel it. It was still running but its action got slightly erratic as its heart throbbed. However, before it had a chance to react, the shadow took out a knife and a strong wind blew the very next second. A saber was immediately whipped out from its sheath and a bright light instantly shone like lightning, a high-frequency wave coming off it and spreading around.

The giant bird suddenly trembled and stopped any movement, time seemed to have stopped that very moment.

With the remaining inertia in its body, it continued to move forward a few steps. However, half of its head suddenly tilted and began slipping down from its body, the wound smooth like the surface of a mirror, exposing the gray brain. It was then that it finally stopped walking but the body still managed to shake a few times before it eventually slumped on the ground.

"Boong!"

The ground was strongly shaking and it seemed to cause a chain reaction as the nearby buildings also slowly collapsed one after another. if there are people here, they would find that those fallen buildings were having a similar fracture as the giant bird head as both were as smooth as a mirror.

By the time this happened, the human shadow had disappeared.

...

Headquarters of the Security Division.

The chief kept walking back and forth anxiously. He was stressed out from the updates and news from the battlefield as well as the upper management.

"Sir, the giant bird is dead." A soldier who was monitoring the movement of the screen suddenly stood up and said. Perhaps it was because he was too excited or maybe it was so strange, bizarre, and incredible that even the chair flew away when he stood up.

"Are you serious?" The chief suddenly stopped walking and said in a staggeringly loud voice.

Then he quickly went to the monitor. It was not only him but everyone in the headquarters who came to confirm the news.

It was not completely accurate to say the bird had died. It was still exciting to see it move its body as it seemed to struggle to

stand up again. When it fell down again, a huge pit was formed in the hard cement floor. However, everyone could see that it was dying.

On the screen, everyone could clearly see half of its head missing. The entire upper section was full of blood and cerebral fluid was splashing everywhere due to its struggle.

"What just happened?" The chief asked with an agitated look.

"I ... I didn't see it clearly!" The soldier said nervously. In fact, he found it strange as the image appeared out of the blue and the screen seemed to violently shake a few times as the giant bird walked a few steps before it fell to the ground.

"Replay the video!"

The soldier quickly replayed the video but they did not find the cause of its death except for a blowing wind before its death, a shock that caused many groups of people to stare at the screen with their eyes wide open.

The soldier replayed the video in slow motion without the need of a reminder.

At the moment, the chief calmed down from his excitement as what happened was too bizarre.

If the bird had died due to their efforts, then it would certainly be

a surprise. However, they may have to face a creature far more terrifying than the two giant monsters before them.

It would be a totally different story if the creature had the intention to become an enemy of mankind.

The video was replayed again and again in slow motion. Three times, five times and it was only at the tenth time that they found some slight changes in the images.

There was an insignificant shadow next to the giant bird's head. Both seemed so close together, the shadow was so insignificant when compared to the head of the giant bird which was eight to nine meters wide.

Even then, when it was played in slow motion for so many times, the shadow they saw only appeared for half a second before it disappeared. Without paying full attention, the shadow may be impossible to detect.

"This body, is that a human?" An officer looked at the screen and mumbled uncertainly.

They looked at each other as they felt it was unreal.

"Continue to play the video slowly."

The soldier simply skipped ahead fifty times.

Fortunately, in order to cope with various situations of endless bizarre incidents after the apocalypse, unmanned aerial vehicles were installed with a miniaturized high-speed camera so even if the video was played in fifty times slower than the regular speed, the video would still remain clear and smooth.

This time, they were absolutely certain that it was a human. In the image on the screen, the man was dressed in black and his body seemed unclear. It was difficult to see his features as the air around him seemed to be dense.

Especially when his hands were holding the saber, the video got distorted and they were unable to see clearly.

Although they could not see the face, the black suit and saber helped the chief recall something. He turned around and said, "That should be one of us! Get the video uploaded to the intelligence department!"

Suddenly, a loud sound from a massive bomb came from far. The cannon on the wall had begun firing.

The chief's face became pale and he quickly pressed and held the built-in microphone in his helmet to connect to the communication channel, he then loudly ordered, "I am the chief of the Security Division, Chen Junde, please cancel the current command immediately. Stop firing immediately. I repeat, stop firing immediately."

...

30 minutes ago.

Luo Yuan was still wandering in the space when the explosion of the hydrogen bomb explosion emitted a strong light. He could clearly feel the shock.

His vision was far beyond the limits of the human eye and was comparable to the resolution a satellite can provide. The cities and factories in the reconstruction area were clearly visible and he could even identify the trucks on the streets.

After the hydrogen bomb exploded not far from the reconstruction area, Luo Yuan paid very high attention to that spot.

The very next moment, the situation deteriorated rapidly when the two monsters were seen escaping the nuclear attack. The city seemed like it needed help, and the system gave him a mission.

"C-Level Mission: Saving Hope City"

"Time Length: One day"

"Accept / Decline"

He was shocked but did not hesitate to accept the mission.

Not to mention, his power has been upgraded several times and he had been waiting to try fighting the level eight mysterious lifeforms. Based on the description of the mission, he had no time to hesitate at all.

Hope City was his lair with a population of over one million. All his wives also lived there, if he allowed the two level-eight creatures to rage in the Hope City, it might not be safe even if they were living in an underground city.

He quickly initiated the space-time bubble and returned to earth.

Although his speed was faster now, his level nine Four-Dimensional Travel only allowed him to travel at a maximum of only about three hundred kilometers in a single leap, and each use consumed quite a lot of his Will. Even if he was at his optimal condition, he could only manage to leap 11 to 12 times which would bring him 3000 to 4000 kilometers. Unfortunately, that was only one-tenth of the journey based on the current distance between him and the earth.

Before his Will became more powerful, the ability to teleport was merely a means of traveling between planetary bodies. In the vastness of space, the space-time bubble was still the best way of moving about.

It was only when he reached the troposphere that he teleported

nearby the giant bird to kill it.

Perhaps it was due to the injuries the level-eight creature sustained or his sudden appearance, the battle seemed too easy and was beyond Luo Yuan's expectations. He had thought it would have been a risky battle but it would seem that one slice was enough to kill it.

...

After withdrawing the saber, Luo Yuan immediately teleported to a higher altitude.

The entire view of Hope City was kept under his powerful vision.

Later, it came to his realization that he could not find the other level-eight creature, it seems that the scream of the giant bird before its death had completely scared it away. He searched over and over again and finally found the footprints. No matter how hard creatures of this size tried to hide, they would always be betrayed by the fact that they would leave huge footprints and accidentally hit buildings around it.

The creature disappeared again and when it reappeared, it was standing by the edge of a huge pit.

The hole was a hundred meters wide and two levels underground were opened up by a violent force. Several footprints which looked like huge ponds seemed to have completely halted there and then.

Apparently, the creature drilled a hole.

At this moment, Luo Yuan felt someone watching him and as he turned around to look, he found a few acquaintances. However, it was not a good time to talk so he just nodded his head slightly. He then turned around immediately without hesitation and jumped into the hole. With his foresight ability, he was not afraid of an attack from the creature.

...

"The man looks like my master!" Fang Peibin said surprisingly as he stared at him from a few kilometers away.

"I think it's him! The silhouette seemed very similar especially since he's also holding a saber!" Xu Zhiqiang said with a dignified face, "I guess only Brother Luo has the courage to kill such a monster."

Lin Feiyan turned pale as she overheard their conversation. She clenched her fists and she felt an uncontrollable chill, immediately taking a deep breath in an attempt to calm down.

Her blinking eyes had a firm stare at the hole as several members looked at one another while hinting secretly. They stepped back quietly to avoid suffering an unexpected disaster.

Within half a minute the ground violently shook as a loud sound was heard.

"Boong!"

The beast which had been secretly drilling into the ground suddenly jumped out and ran along the streets. Its huge body destroyed the factories along the streets as well as breaking countless blocks of buildings, causing a lot of stones and dust to fly everywhere.

The atmosphere became scary and a few members who were hiding at the junction with pale faces quickly turned around and ran in desperation. They ran for about 400 to 500 meters before they finally stopped after seeing the monster's body disappear completely from the junction.

Several people who still lingered around in fear looked at each other, finding what had happened completely unbelievable. Only Lin Feiyan's face became dark due to being overly frightened but she continued to press forward.

"Captain, which way do we go?" Wu Qianru quietly asked but unfortunately, no one cared about this.

Li Dong breathed heavily and said, "You... Have you seen it?"

"See what?" Wu Qianru was lost and asked miserably. She was busy running when the giant beast came and completely forgot what she had seen.

"That was Captain Luo, you didn't see him standing on the head of the monster?" Xie Junhui seemed scared and excited as his entire body trembled. He answered on behalf of Li Dong as he was still gasping for air.

"You saw it? I thought I was wrong, what is happening?" Xu Zhiqiang said.

...

In fact, Xu Zhiqiang was not the only miserable one but Luo Yuan did not even know what was happening.

When he entered the cave, the level eight creature in the shape of a dragon was resting at a corner, motionless. However, it seemed scared and was shivering when Luo Yuan came closer.

Initially, the Blue Dragon was not so weak. Although it was powerful, its attack pattern was not aggressive. In fact, the human body was actually quite tempting for it.

However, Luo Yuan just killed and the blood of the giant bird tainted his shirt. Its screams before its death had taught the Blue Dragon a lesson and caused it to be in fear.

Especially more so when this 'tiny creature' did not even seem afraid when he saw the dragon. As a highly intelligent creature, this fact alone was enough to scare it to death when it imagined the consequence, notwithstanding the fact that this dragon was a

coward!

Before Luo Yuan taken any action, the system sent him a message.

"The light purple Blue Dragon has completely surrendered to you. Do you want to keep it as your war beast?"

"Cancel / Confirm"

Luo Yuan was stunned and hesitated slightly but he finally accepted the surrender of this creature.

In fact, with his current level of Strength, this war beast would be of little help. It would be the same even if it were a level-eight creature. The war beasts would not be able to augment his ability to move super-fast and fight rapidly.

He had something else in his mind. Such a high-leveled organism appearing in the reconstruction area would ensure its safety and will also serve as a precaution to prevent the upper management from attempting anything bad.

The newly surrendered Blue Dragon had a very low level of loyalty which was just 60%.

Since he had experience in monitoring the giant lizard and King

Kong previously. Luo Yuan believed that this was just temporary.

Luo Yuan stood on the Blue Dragon's head and traveled across the street. Perhaps, the monitor back at the headquarters had already received the message as they were not attacked along the journey. After half a minute, the Blue Dragon leaped and flew about 1000 kilometers upward, jumping over walls before it landed in a forest.

As the Blue Dragon saw the forest, it felt relaxed and could not help but make a long howl.

Chapter 429: Finding Another Wisdom Tree

The dragon looked to be in very low spirits, Luo Yuan could hardly find any scales on its body. The entire body of the dragon was burnt and was full of foul blood. Besides that, there were some wounds which have not completely healed and the larger wounds could even fit several people.

From a human perspective, those wounds were simply shocking.

It seemed to have released all its fear and anxiety in a long howl that sounded like endless thunder.

Within a radius of several kilometers, all the bushes were blown away and those nearby the dragon turned into ash. Even Luo Yuan who was sitting on its head experienced loss of hearing and had buzzing in his ears for a short moment.

From this incident, the level-eight creature was not as scary as what Luo Yuan imagined. Its giant body and horrifying force determined how destructive of a force it had regardless of whether it was intentionally destroying an object or not.

When it inhaled, it was as strong as typhoon winds blowing and the air rewinded as it inhaled. To such a creature, it was merely breathing regularly.

Based on the amount of destructive power it had, Luo Yuan was not even 0.1% of it.

However, battles were not always about how strong one was. It was totally different when it came to a real fight. By possessing both abilities to teleport and foresight, there would not be much different in the result even if the Blue Dragon managed to recover. The only difference would probably be one slash versus many slashes.

As Luo Yuan saw the amazing lung capacity the dragon had when it roared endlessly, Luo Yuan dug into his ears and gave it a punch on its huge head in dissatisfaction.

He did not dare punch too hard to avoid breakings its head. The strength of the dragon was undoubtedly small compared to his natural strength but his hand was relatively small as well compared to the surface area of the dragon's head.

His best punch was far beyond the current speed of the electromagnetic gun in the reconstruction area. If he really wanted to, its skull would probably break.

The Blue Dragon felt a sharp pain on its head like a needle was poking on it. It roared once and stopped as it was angry from the irritation. It turned around and bit hard, looking around at the same time. However, it could not find the thing which was irritating it but in the next moment, it got another attack on its head. It was then that it recalled there was a violent creature still standing on its head.

In fact, it had forgotten.

It could only blame the violent creature for being too small and light as it thought Luo Yuan had disappeared until it got that stinging reminder on its skull.

It looked back at the city that it just escaped from and saw more than a [dozen tiny tubes](#) which had caused it to be in danger. It did not dare stay any longer as it twitched its thick nose, identifying the direction it would head at and immediately walked away with heavy footsteps.

The tiny tubes here are referring to guns

Many huge footprints were left on the ground, its long body which was more than one hundred meters was swaying along the journey. Its pace seemed slow but it was actually shockingly fast. In just ten seconds, it had completely disappeared.

At this point, everyone who was observing immediately felt relieved.

...

Luo Yuan was sitting on its head and left together with the dragon.

He patted the dragon's head once in a while which made the Blue Dragon scared that he would suddenly hammer its head again.

The head of the dragon was not flat, there were many golden

blotches regularly lined above its skull with a dense serrated texture. It looked very rough and thick with a strong defense. Besides that, there was a protective force field on the surface of its head which was about half a meter thick.

In fact, although he seemed to sit on the head of the blue dragon their bodies were not in contact; he was basically floating right above its head. Therefore, he could not blame the Blue Dragon for thinking he was gone because it did not feel his weight on its head.

He has done some experiments and was shocked by the effects of the protective force field. It was just a palm-sized area but it could withstand five to six tons of weight. Besides that, the force field was smooth and flexible, it could hardly absorb other forces.

Of course, his speed was four to fivefold the speed of sound, causing the defensive effect to be greatly reduced.

However, that was just him. If a human army was going to fight the dragon, a normal weapon would not probably even cause any harm to the dragon, not even when it was hurt.

The rate of its recovery was shocking. Over time, wounds on its body were healing and closing up at a visible rate.

From time to time there were dried blood stains and burnt scabs that constantly fell from its body and at the same time, the energy coming off its body had also become stronger.

The Blue Dragon seemed like a normal creature the first time he saw it. Perhaps, its size was slightly larger than regular creatures but now that it was under the sunshine, it seemed different.

Apparently, the reconstruction area has already received the message for everyone to temporarily evacuate. Luo Yuan did not see a single soldier when they passed by and the dragon and he were free to enter and exit the area. He looked up at the sky and realized that there were seven to eight unmanned aerial vehicles lingering mid-air but he did not care.

...

Luo Yuan could obviously feel the excitement of the Blue Dragon when they entered the jungle. It shook its body and its mane seemed to have disappeared. Luo Yuan could not see its charm like he did before.

The next moment, it took a leap and its slender body slid across the sky like a beautiful arc in the air and lightly landed on a mountain a few kilometers away.

Luo Yuan was amazed. If ordinary people were to see this scene, they would only think that it could jump amazingly seeing that it landed so beautifully. However, Luo Yuan could see through the nature of that leap.

He was distracted the first time he saw it jump and could not see it properly, but the dragon leaped again which allowed him to see the whole process clearly.

It was not an ordinary leap. When it was about to jump, the gravity around its body changed. The phenomenon was quite similar to his four-dimensional travel. Before he could completely get out of the space-time bubble, he often used his Will to have glide momentarily in the air like the Blue Dragon.

Luo Yuan pondered and opened its attribute panel.

"War beast: Blue Dragon"

"Rating: 8 (Light Purple)"

"Attribute"

"Strength: 63 (65)"

"Agility: 16 (17)"

"Physique: 65 (68)"

"Intelligence: 14 (14)"

"Sense: 45 (45)"

"Will: 16 (16)"

"Experience: 0/2400"

"Skills: Biting - 19, Tear - 15, Winding - 17, Tail strike - 15, Forest Survivability - 19, Plasma Breath - 5, Gliding - 18"

"Natural Abilities: Protection"

"Condition: Weak"

"Loyalty: 60 (Escape is possible when the value is less than 50. The full value is 100)"

"Unassigned attribute points: 0"

"Unassigned skill points: 0"

Luo Yuan was amazed by its attributes, 65-point of strengths was about six hundred times his Strength and its Physique was even more amazing, which was 68 points.

Even Agility, which Luo Yuan had always felt so proud of it has been downgraded as the Blue Dragon's was even higher. It was not an easy job to kill the dragon when it was in its best condition.

Luo Yuan was only still confident in some of the complementary attributes but the Sense of the dragon was an amazing 45-points.

Apparently, the level eight creature had a comprehensive transformation. In comparison to a level-seven creature who would be like it was standing on the ground, the level-eight creature would be in the clouds, being much more powerful than the former.

Luo Yuan pondered as he looked at its high amount of Sense.

Every drop of blood and flesh consists of Will, which made the dragon a genetically-superior aggressive creature. Plants would die whenever they were contaminated with its blood and its flesh would not rot for long periods of time.

However, Luo Yuan could not understand why his genes did not show such aggressive properties as his genes consisted of Will as well. He finally realized as he looked at its exceptionally strong Sense.

Will and Sense are spiritual powers that come together as one. Will leaned more towards quality while Sense leaned toward quantity. However, since his Sense was not as superior as the level-eight creature, the Will within his flesh was not sufficient for such aggressive properties.

...

As for the skills, Luo Yuan only took a glance. He paid more attention to the Plasma Breath and Gliding ability of the dragon.

When he saw the 5-point Plasma Breath, Luo Yuan understood that the ability is either less important or was a potential powerful skill. Of course, the latter would most likely be the truth.

Luo Yuan looked at the message notifying him of the completion of the task before switching off the system.

The requirement of the task was to rescue Hope City instead of killing the two level-eight creatures. In any case, the mission was considered complete.

However, the increase in experience was more significant and a mission would not be enough if he only wanted to rely on the system to obtain an attribute point.

Perhaps he could attempt killing the level-eight mutated beasts nearby the reconstruction area next. Luo Yuan felt that nobody would find additional attribute points a burden. More importantly, his attributes were currently imbalanced. Regardless of an upgrade in Agility, Intelligence or even his Will, there would be a significant effect.

When he recovered from his thoughts, the Blue Dragon has gone out of hundreds of kilometers from him.

It's had quite a unique way to travel whereby it did not take the usual route but instead, keep jumping from hill to hill. As its body gradually recovered, its speed got faster and the distance between each leap before it glided became larger.

Before long, it could be seen leaping over three or four hills consecutively in a single leap that spanned over 20 or 30 kilometers.

At this point of time, its scales had gradually regrown. The newly grown scales were relatively new and was colored in a light-blue and white tinge. However, within a few minutes, the color rapidly darkened and turned into a sky-blue color.

Each of the individual scales had golden, complicated patterns on them that shone brightly under sunlight, like its entire body was glowing with a blue light. Its red mane grew out once again and swayed as the wind blew. When it jumped into the air, its slender body with four claws seemed like they were dancing, making Luo Yuan felt he was in a mythical world.

10 minutes later, it finally returned to its nest. It was excited and its entire body was trembling with joy as it looked at all the familiar thing at its home. It wrapped a mountain with its body and roared in joy as it faced the sun.

This time, Luo Yuan did not interrupt it.

In fact, it was also very exciting for him to witness a familiar environment.

He now realized that this was the mutated beast which caused him to run before he managed to finally escape by hiding in a puddle of mud.

However, revenge was not the reason behind his excitement.

He suddenly teleported away and the next moment, he appeared next to a waterfall in the valley. He looked at a tall hill nearby and found a plant that stood sixty to seventy-meter-high swaying by the breeze.

That was the wisdom tree!

Luo Yuan had cut it off once but now, it had all grown out.

Perhaps at that time, he was too eager to get the wisdom fruit. He removed the wisdom fruit before the nutrients were fully absorbed which resulted in the formation of the wisdom fruit with its remaining nutrients which in turn germinated and grew again.

Under the care of the Blue Dragon, the wisdom tree has grown even taller than the previous one. He suddenly recalled the natural ability of the Blue Dragon.

He was not sure whether it could help him to get rid of danger, but the Blue Dragon could definitely help him to find the things he wanted. Perhaps, the Blue Dragon was born with the power of attracting treasures.

Chapter 430: Complicated feeling

The Blue Dragon that was still excitedly shouting suddenly noticed that Luo Yuan had come close to its [baby](#) and subconsciously became tense.

Its body curled up and it wriggled in unease around the hill while staring at him without so much as a blink.

If it were another mutated beast, it would have slapped the mutated beast to death but for Luo Yuan it dared not, his strength still impressed it.

In fact, it did not even know the usage of this the tree and had no knowledge of obtaining the Heart of Wisdom. It just instinctively liked it. After occasionally seeing the tree, it occupied the area and learned of the intelligent race that continued to tend for the tree.

Soon it felt a wave of relief after seeing Luo Yuan touching it and immediately flew away, leaving the place. The Blue Dragon stared at him intently until he disappeared from its eyesight.

Once Luo Yuan left, it immediately jumped to the bottom of the hill, its huge body leaning cautiously against its 'baby'. It held its breath because it was afraid that if it exhaled, the breath from its nostrils would hurt the little tree.

It carefully looked up and down for a short moment, focusing in particular on the place Luo Yuan had touched. It repeatedly looked at it several times.

It was only when it found that the tree remained exactly the same as before that it became completely relaxed.

The Blue Dragon moved its body away and drank all the water in a nearby pool before curling itself into a ball. It felt comfortable with the gentle rays of sunlight that shone on its body so it lazily lied on the edge, not wanting to move anymore.

It was still excited over what happened today. In the beginning, it was hunted by the giant bird before this '[sun](#)' appeared, almost burning it into a crisp. Fortunately, it was able to survive the struggle but immediately a horrible demon appeared. Today could be considered to be quite a brutal day for the Blue Dragon.

Fortunately, everything was now over. It was still alive unlike the giant bird that was killed by the [demon](#).

Fortunately, everything was all over, it was still alive and not like the giant bird that was killed by the demon.

There was a price to pay for the ability to self-recover. It would consume its own energy reserves in order to recover its injuries so once it was relieved and fully recovered, it tried to get some sleep as its eyes slowly closed to doze off.

...

While Luo Yuan was flying, he noticed on the property panel that

the Blue Dragon's loyalty had dropped dramatically. It took only a few minutes for it to drop to 52 points which was very close to the bottom line of 50 points.

He shook his head as this was within expectation.

Lower level mutated beasts were hard to control but once they were successfully controlled, they would not likely betray you. In contrast, it was easier to get control over higher level mutated beasts when they were under threat of death but it would be hard to win their loyalty. Once the threat is eliminated, they would most likely betray their master just like how the Blue Dragon had almost forgotten about Luo Yuan even though he had not left for long.

If he did not show up for several days, it would probably betray him already. However, this time he only took a temporary leave and would be back after a few hours. In addition, since the wisdom tree was there he would definitely continue visiting this place.

He had mixed feelings on the identification results of the wisdom tree. Although the level of the wisdom tree was higher than the previous one he encountered, it was still only level seven. Both level six and level seven life-forms were categorized as light-green and green ranks and had little difference.

With his 16 points of Wisdom, there would be no effect if he used the Heart of Wisdom at this level unless he kept growing the tree until it evolved to level eight.

At this level, the flesh and blood from level six or seven mutated beasts had little effect on the tree and it may need a longer time to grow. If he wanted to accelerate the tree's growth, he would need to feed it with higher level food such as those from level eight or nine creatures.

The flesh and blood of level nine creatures were very impractical for Luo Yuan to attempt but he could still try to get those from level eight creatures. There was already a ready level-eight corpse in Hope City and that was the reason for his sudden return.

He flew at high speed with only his Will but he managed to reach a speed of two to three kilometers per second. When he was riding the Blue Dragon, this distance took him 20 minutes but now, when he returned alone, it took him only four to five minutes to reach the destination.

At this point, Hope City had started restoration work. There were people everywhere below him. Since it was difficult to get so many equipments in a short time, it required a lot of labor-intensive resources to carry and clean up the ruins that have piled up like mountains.

Though the duration where the two level eight mutated beasts raged in Hope City was not that long, the city took a bad hit. When Luo Yuan looked down from high above, nearly one-fifth of the area had become ruins. Some parts had badly collapsed to the point where even the underground base was impacted. The amount of work needed to restore the city back to its original state will definitely not be one or two days.

Some factories were even still ablaze and smoking, looking like they would explode at any time.

Several aircraft that were once used to spray insecticide were now being used as fire trucks. They flew back and forth, spraying mists of water but the results seemed insignificant and redundant.

Fortunately, despite a huge amount of materail losses, there were not many casualties due to the timely response from the top management. During the apocalypse, people have been trained to be sensitive toward unexpected events so they managed to react very quickly. Aside from the few thousand casualties in the beginning of the disaster, there were almost no casualties after that initial hit.

Luo Yuan rapidly landed and walked towards the isolation area.

The location where the giant bird was located had already been isolated by the soldiers. Within the cordoned off area, there were more than 10 tanks which blocked off most of the streets.

"Stop! It's dangerous in front and everyone is prohibited from entering!" A young soldier shouted when he saw Luo Yuan approaching the area.

Luo Yuan did not stop. Instead, he took out his identity card as he walked and asked, "Who is the leader here? Please bring him to me."

The soldiers knew he had to be a bigshot when he spoke in this manner. One of the soldiers took the identity card and was shocked. He immediately returned the identity card back to Luo Yuan and greeted, "Hello Chief Officer!"

As the Deputy Minister of the Firearms Bureau, his level was definitely not low. His rank of lieutenant was even more shocking.

The soldiers did not dare neglect his orders and immediately contacted the highest superiors they could find and from there, their superiors contacted their superiors until the message went up several levels.

Before long, a middle-aged old soldier who wore a camouflage suit walked towards Luo Yuan. He looked at the familiar black suit on Luo Yuan's body and suddenly felt like he was being burnt so he immediately looked away. He greeted Luo Yuan formally with care, "Hello Minister Luo, I am Chen Junde, the Divisional Commander who is in-charge of this area. May I know if there's anything I can do to help you?"

He knew the Firearms Bureau was a special department that was completely out of the military's control, so he would not address him as Chief Officer like how the regular soldier did.

He secretly took a look at Luo Yuan and as he thought of the shocking scene when Luo Yuan killed the level eight creature, he felt a sudden insecurity creep up from within him. The feeling was like standing before a giant beast; if he did not pay extra attention, he would probably be killed at any moment. It felt awful.

"Hello, General Chen. I am sorry that I need you to personally come over. You could have just assigned someone to talk to me. What I want from you, is the corpse of this giant mutated bird as it has a little usage for me. Can General Chen spare it to me?" Luo Yuan apologized and asked.

Chen Junde was relieved when he saw the easygoing attitude of Luo Yuan as he smiled and said, "No, it's no trouble at all Minister Luo. You killed it, so it actually belongs to you. You do not need to get my permission on how you plan to handle it. It would be even better if you can take it away from this location."

He was telling the truth. Level eight creatures were strong but it had little value to the reconstruction area as the flesh and blood of the creature had been mutated, making it inedible. Unless they used a small part of the corpse for research or to manufacture accessories for weapons, most parts of the corpse would be burned and disposed of.

The thing that was more troublesome was its the frightening force field around it and the serious radiation its body gave off. Even after it died, the effects its body gave off were still present in the atmosphere. Without wearing any clothing to isolate these effects, none of the ordinary people could even get close to the corpse. It would definitely spell trouble when they needed to move and carry it away.

"Excellent. In that case, can you please evacuate the weapons and tanks you have here?"

"You... Are you ready to move it now?" Chen Junde was a little surprised. This was a 70 to 80 meter high corpse of a giant bird which was comparable to the size of a 20 storey building. He could not imagine how he could move the corpse. Regardless how strong he was, it was impractical to move such a giant size creature alone.

Luo Yuan nodded, confirmed and said, "The sky is getting dark and by then, it will be even more difficult to move."

Chen Junde was confused and almost wanted to say that it did not matter with the sky was dark or not but in the end, he held his tongue and agreed, "Yes, you are right."

Then he immediately ran to command the soldiers to evacuate.

Within a moment's notice, all the tanks drove away, leaving only Chen Junde and a few more officers. Apparently, they were interested to see how he would move the corpse of this giant bird.

Luo Yuan did not care but just went straight to the other end to the giant bird.

After such a long time, the corpse of the giant bird was still energetic and was still fluttering before them. Even if the brain was damaged within the skull and the cerebral fluid was all gone, it still had a strong life-force and took a very long time to completely die.

This was also the reason why a large number of tanks surrounded

the area earlier. The giant bird was too dangerous, even if it managed to struggle out of this area by unconsciously rolling around, it would cause enormous damage and casualties.

As he looked at the giant bird's head that was struggling endlessly, his arm blocked the stones that flew over in his direction like a bullet.

Although these stones would not hurt his skin at all, it would still hurt him if they hit his eyes. Luo Yuan scowled and began thinking that it would not be easy to move the corpse at all.

The life-force of a level eight creature was too strong and Luo Yuan estimated that even if he cut the corpse into two, it would still struggle for some time. It seemed like he had to break all its bones.

He walked a few steps to the back of the giant bird. There were feathers that made it seem a little thin, almost to the point where most of the bones were visible, especially the spine. It was covered only by a thin layer of skin that allowed Luo Yuan to see the gap between the joints.

He proceeded to the location of the spine and got ready to begin from this position. He looked at the few soldiers who stood at 500 to 600 meters away and said, "Stay away from me, I am going to break its bones."

Chen Junde and the rest suddenly felt a chill run up their spine. Without hesitation, they quickly stepped back. They had watched

the video so they knew how strong the impact would be when he attacked. It was very impressive to them.

"Keep going. You need to go a little further!" Luo Yuan scowled and said.

"Carry on!"

A group of people had stepped back to a distance of a thousand meters away. Luo Yuan roughly estimated the impact of his attack and thought that they should be safe at this distance.

Then he took a deep breath. His muscle slightly inflated until his joints made a popping sound. The air surrounding started to stir up until his face became twisted and at the very next moment, he landed a full blow.

"Boom!"

A loud noise was heard and the air instantly exploded. The air surrounding the corpse had completely turned white as a result of the dense air in the area.

Following that, a cracking sound ensued. He had broken a piece of its spine and it was followed by a series of explosions which happened one after another.

Chen Junde and the rest who stood far away half-hunched their bodies. A strong sandstorm surrounded them and the wind stirred

up small gravels that hit their bodies, making them feel an aches on their bodies.

They quickly retreated another two kilometers before the situation finally improved.

They stood in a nearby ruin and used a telescope to continue observing Luo Yuan. However, their line of sight was blocked by the sandstorm and the strong winds before them. A few of them took down the telescope together, feeling shocked by what had happened.

Three minutes later the explosion finally stopped.

"He threw about 3000 punches!" One of the soldiers quietly estimated and looked a little pale.

Another said, "The size of the giant bird is so huge! It is impossible to punch continuously."

Everyone was silent, an evolved human of this caliber had completely broken the concept of what a human could be. With power like this, it was possible to destroy a country with just the power of a single man.

...

The breeze in the air soon blew away the dust, revealing the giant mutated bird. When they saw that the air had cleared, a few of

them quickly used the telescope to see what had happened.

At this moment, the body of the giant mutated bird was now limp as it lay on the ground after its bones were broken by Luo Yuan. Only a small area of muscle remained twitching but compared to the fierce struggle of its body earlier, it looked way less dangerous now.

When they looked in more detail, they saw countless small wounds everywhere on its body and they were still bleeding. In fact, the wounds were not small as each of them were about two meters in diameter.

Beside the body of the giant bird was a small, almost negligible silhouette with his hand in its body, his entire body covered in blood.

"Isn't he afraid of getting a gene infection?" An officer felt a chill run down his spine when he saw the scene and asked in doubt.

"Do you think someone who is able to kill level eight creatures would be afraid of its blood? I'm just wondering what he's doing. Does he really plan to drag the body in this condition?" Chen Junde said while looking at the huge gap in size between Luo Yuan and the giant bird. He was amused but when he thought about what had happened earlier, he could not laugh at all.

After five minutes, Luo Yuan still remained in the same posture and did not move.

"Hey, he's moving!" One of the officers suddenly shouted, "He is moving with the giant bird!"

After hearing him shout, everyone noticed that Luo Yuan had moved about half a meter away from his original location. Over time, the speed he was moving at seemed to get faster and finally they could clearly see him move with their eyes.

...

10 minutes later, Luo Yuan could be seen flying in the sky with the giant bird and as they passed through the area, they left a huge shadow. This scene was unbelievable as it looked like a skyscraper was suddenly flying across the sky. What's even more unbelievable was that a human was doing this, pushing the giant creature through the skies.

Everyone looked up and unconsciously opened their mouths. They looked at the giant creature slowly flying across the sky, its speed becoming faster and faster until it finally disappeared in the horizon before they came to their senses.

For a moment of time, everyone felt a dryness in their throats and nobody was sure if it was due to excitement or fear. Everyone had complex emotions that were in their hearts.

"Is the emergence of a Superman like that good or bad for the reconstruction area?" An officer asked after holding his breath for quite some time.

"It's not something that we should think about." Chen Junde said. However, inside his heart, he thought that it was, at the very least, a good thing for Hope City.

'Baby' here refers to the Wisdom Tree that the Blue Dragon is guarding.

'Sun' here is referring to the nuclear bomb the reconstruction area dropped on it while it was battling the giant bird.

'Demon' here is referring to Luo Yuan from the Blue Dragon's perspective

Chapter 431: Conciliation

At this point in time, Luo Yuan no longer cared about the impact of his actions. At his current level of Strength, he was not as cautious as he was before, his actions following the will of his heart.

He turned on his space-time bubble but found that he could barely wrap the giant bird in the bubble but still, he managed to push it forward slowly. This was the first time he expanded the space-time bubble to such a large size. Although it posed some difficulty, he still managed to do it successfully.

A lot of his Will was consumed like running water but the speed they flew at was not that impressive. He took almost 20 minutes just to fly over the city but fortunately, the speed improved after that.

After flying for another 10 minutes, he had almost reached his destination.

The Blue Dragon was still in a nap but it suddenly felt something strange in the corners of its mind and quickly opened its eyes. It was shocked when it saw the giant bird flying towards it at a fast speed.

The Blue Dragon immediately reacted by standing up and jumped to a nearby mountain. However, it soon realized that the bird had been killed.

A pair of huge eyes looked in suspicion and warily observed the flying giant bird.

It realized that the giant bird was covered in blood and looked miserable. A large amount of blood flowed down from its body that was strangely suspended in the sky, forming a lake underneath but there seemed to be a layer of transparent film that pocketed the blood, preventing it from falling any further.

The Blue Dragon could not understand what it was seeing so it quickly jumped to another mountain, further than where it originally was.

It felt relieved when it discovered that the bird was not hunting it was instead, it was moving forward in a straight line. Soon, it fell into the valley it was at before in a small collision and after that, it no longer moved.

After a moment, its fear subsided as its curiosity increased. The Blue Dragon lay on the ground and slowly but quietly moved to the front. Its movements were not insignificant because as it moved, trees began to collapse, causing a loud noise.

Not a moment later, it climbed up the hill and slowly revealed its huge head. A pair of huge eyes carefully eyed the valley below. It saw that the giant bird was now lying beside piles of white bones and had collapsed the whole mountain. There was a small, insignificant looking creature that was waving something, quickly cutting the giant bird's body.

However, it was this tiny creature that made the heart of Blue Dragon beat rapidly. It was scared and quickly hid its head; it was not until later that it revealed itself again and observed in silence.

Luo Yuan turned around to look at it but then turned around and continued to cut the giant bird's body. On the attribute column, the loyalty of the Blue Dragon has rapidly returned to a higher level.

This was a normal occurrence, especially in the wilderness as the threat of death and power were the only things that could earn respect from mutated creatures. Once Luo Yuan frightened it, the effects were seen immediately.

Luo Yuan kept cutting the body of the giant bird but it took him a lot of effort to open its chest. Then, he held his breath and jumped into its body. The giant visceral width within the bird made him feel like an insignificant parasite. He used his knife to rip off its diaphragm and not long later, he found its heart.

When he removed its energy crystal and jumped out of the body, the loyalty of the Blue Dragon had already reached 75 points. Apparently, his actions had seriously frightened it and was afraid that Luo Yuan would do the same to it.

Luo Yuan wiped the blood on the energy crystal away and took a look at it in a darker place. The energy crystal shone brightly. This was the second level eight energy crystal he has got so far but it seemed relatively smaller compared to the previous one he had, it was not even one-third of its size and seemed like it had mostly been consumed during the self-recovery process.

Luo Yuan removed the Will imprint on it and this time, it did not affect his mind like it did previously. With 19 points of Will, the imprint on the energy crystal could not resist and was totally defeated.

He took a few glances at it and put it into his pocket. He had no plans to consume this energy crystal. Ever since he obtained the Body Fusion ability, he had an enormous amount of energy. Aside from a small portion that he had to use for his daily needs, the remaining excess energy was absorbed by the energy crystal within his heart. He felt it grow every day and currently, the one in his heart was at least four times bigger than the one he had in his pocket and its color was even purer. The one he just got had little value to him.

It was then that the Wisdom Tree seemed to have smelled flesh and blood of the level-eight creature as its roots started moving. It rapidly secreted large amounts of fine silky filaments. The filaments first began to penetrate the ground that was soaked by blood, turning the translucent filaments a bloody red. As time passed, it began producing more filaments that soon covered the entire area and at the end, even the roots were pulled up and began moving towards the body.

At the beginning, Luo Yuan was worried that the genes in the level-eight creature's blood would kill the tree but it seemed like his worries were redundant. The Wisdom Tree was unaffected by the flesh and blood of the level eight creature.

The branches and leaves on the Wisdom Tree gently shook as if

they were celebrating in joy. The green leaves above were also getting some of the blood while its spiral trunk screwed the body in a circular motion. It was growing at a slow speed that could barely be seen.

Luo Yuan observed it for a moment and found that at this speed, it may take two to three days in order for the tree to fully absorb the body. He did not have much time that he could continue waiting here.

He turned around to look at the Blue Dragon which was hiding behind a hill and warned it. It revealed only its head and he quickly flew back to Hope City.

...

"It's fortunate that you came back! There were two horrible giant mutated beasts on the ground and I heard that many people died from the disaster! Many factories were destroyed too." Zhao Yali said with a little fear in her voice after she returned home.

"Why are you the only one home? Where are the rest of them?" Luo Yuan asked with a smile. He found that only she and the mutated human were left in the house.

"I stayed here to take care of Chen Jiayi. The rest of them went to help clean up the ruins. It must be a huge loss of Hope City this time. I'm not when they'll be able to restore it to its original state." Zhao Yali looked worried and continued to say, "Why were there such terrible monsters in the world? It's better that you don't go

out in the future or you might be in danger if they accidentally hit you."

"Don't worry, it's not that easy to meet such creatures. Even if I do meet one, it wouldn't be a big deal to me." Luo Yuan thought there was no need to hide, so Zhao Yali would not have to worry about him every day. She continued to say, "Haven't you heard? One of the monsters was killed by a human."

"Killed by a human?!" Zhao Yali looked shocked all of a sudden as she slightly opened her mouth and quickly asked, "Who did that?"

Before he could answer, the door opened and a group of people walked into the house, looking at Luo Yuan with mixed feelings. It was not only Huang Jiahui and Wang Shishi but even Wang Xianguang was there too.

"I thought you all went to clean up the ruins. Why are you all come back so early?" Zhao Yali asked. This was especially so for Wang Xianguang who as a government servant should be at her busiest but was also back here.

"You need to ask Luo Yuan, we were asked to come back." Wang Xianguang said snappily.

"What happened?" Luo Yuan asked but in his heart, he had some guesses as to what had happened already.

"I don't know. Even the mayor personally met me to ask if we

were okay. He even asked if we needed any help needed in daily life and so on. So kind of him!" Wang Shishi said with an excited look.

Luo Yuan scowled and had some thoughts running through his mind.

...

In fact, this matter was far more complex than they thought. They were almost begged to come back by their respective leader.

In the beginning, the top management of Hope City did not think that much. After the disaster, everyone in the city was called to support the massive reconstruction works. The district where Luo Yuan lived at was also on the calling list. Aside from Zhao Yali who needed to take care of Chen Jiayi and the mutated woman who could not be revealed in public, everyone else went to help.

Even in the reconstruction area, there were no special privileges. At least on the surface, everything had to be done in a fair and just way. Even the Mayor of Hope City and his family could not avoid coming out and taking the lead.

After the apocalypse, this was a regular occurrence but when the Mayor received a private call, everything changed.

The impact caused by Luo Yuan was still spreading not only in Hope City but also in New Capital City.

The video of his fight were played over and over again in various departments and was finally sent to the first and second officer. Everyone almost lost their voices when they watched the video

In the video, he demonstrated ultra-fast speed, powerful strength, and abilities that seemed like he was able to freely move through space. All these shocked everyone to the core, making them feel weak inside, breaking the usual preconceptions they had of power. The weapons today seemed like they could do little to stop him. Rules and regulation no longer applied to him.

To humans, he was almost like a god. If he became evil, the government would be toppled by him in a single day and if he was like an angel, humanity would see great improvement. Fortunately, Luo Yuan has shown no ambition to be in a position of authority thus far. If such an incident did not happen in Hope City, nobody would know that Luo Yuan possessed such power, far more than they thought he had.

It was ridiculous to say that the safety and security of a country depended on one single person, but it was a cruel fact that they needed to accept.

Some people even had a premonition that a new era was coming.

Unless the government took a risk with the whole situation, the only thing that the reconstruction area could do was to compromise and conciliate or at least avoid doing something that could trigger Luo Yuan's dissatisfaction.

...

Luo Yuan explained a little bit of the situation to everyone so that they understood the unexpected treatment from the top management. Everyone was silent except for the simple minded Wang Shishi.

Not only were they shocked by the scary amount of strength Luo Yuan possessed but also worried about the attitude of the reconstruction area. Huang Jiahui and Wang Xiaguang who had a better sense of politics deeply understood that no matter how harmless Luo Yuan seemed to be, the government would never have peace of mind with him having uncontrollable power.

What they currently did was to conciliate with Luo Yuan, getting him into the team but there were no guarantees that the situation would not change in the future.

In the case Luo Yuan was unfortunate enough to meet an accident, get injured or fall into a coma, nobody could guarantee that the top management would not take that chance to eliminate him.

"Luo Yuan, promise me. Don't go to New Capital City any longer and don't get involved in politics. We will live our lives." Huang Jiahui sighed and said worriedly after a while.

"Don't worry, I have a plan." Luo Yuan said to comfort her. At the very least, before the threat of extraterrestrial civilizations was resolved, the reconstruction area would not do anything to him.

However, when he noticed that everyone looked at him with a look of discontent, Luo Yuan had no choice but to surrender and say, "Well, okay. I will not go to New Capital City in the future. There's nothing there for me to go to anyway."

Chapter 432: False Alarm

After dinner, Luo Yuan took out a thermos, put several cups on the table and poured four cups of water. Then, he took out the energy crystal and sliced it into four thin slices before he put them into the cups of water.

As soon as the slices of energy crystal made contact with the water, they turned into small cyclones that rotated at a high speed in the cup. It seemed like there was an invisible force that pushed the cyclones forward and it looked pretty amazing. The whole process lasted for only a few seconds before the slices fully melted in the water.

The four cups of water immediately emitted a fluorescence that could barely be seen.

"Brother Luo, what are you doing?" Wang Shishi saw Luo Yuan's strange behavior and walked over, intimately clinging onto Luo Yuan and asked curiously.

"These are for all of you to drink." Luo Yuan said without looking at her, "In the future, you will all have to drink one cup every few days."

"Why are you so secretive? What is that thing in your hand? Let us see." Wang Xianguang protested coquettishly.

"This?" Luo Yuan took up the energy crystal. When it was revealed, the mutated woman at the side started to stare at the

energy crystal and looked nervous. She was restless and kept looking at Luo Yuan, hoping that he could give her a slice too.

"This is an energy crystal." Of course, its name listed in the system was the "energy collector" but Luo Yuan thought that a crystal better described this object.

"Where did you get this from? Is this some kind of jewelry?" Zhao Yali asked.

"It looks like jewelry but it was taken out from the mutated beast." Luo Yuan smiled and said, "It can be found in most high-level mutated beasts. This is the source of their energy and this energy crystal on my hand was taken out from a level eight mutated beast.

"I took it once before and it had an immediate effect to improve my physical fitness. Even if it was taken by an ordinary human, the effect would not be any weaker than if an evolved human took it. Though the situation today is much safer than before, there might still be unavoidable accidents. After all, getting stronger is always better."

Zhao Yali who was next to him opened her mouth and could not say anything at the time. Apparently, the energy crystal had been taken out from a level eight mutated beast that was killed by Luo Yuan earlier today. Before today, when they used to listen to his stories, they were never able to visualize what an energy crystal looked like. It was only when they saw the one he held in his hand that everything became clear, allowing them to understand what he had meant.

When everyone looked at the energy crystal again, it was suddenly cast with a mysterious aura.

Each of them got one cup to drink with only the mutated human waiting helplessly beside, hissing anxiously with a pitiful look.

"It is better to drink small bits of it several times since your bodies are quite weak. You may not be able to take the effects if you drink it all at once." Luo Yuan reminded them when he saw a few of the ladies were ready to drink the concoction.

The amount of energy crystal put in the water was very little and though there were four pieces used, their combined amount would only add up to one-tenth of the original crystal and could not even compare with Luo Yuan who managed to ingest the entire crystal.

However, the rest had very weak physical fitness levels. Aside from Wang Shishi and Zhao Yali who were evolved humans and had strong physical fitness levels, the rest were basically ordinary humans. Luo Yuan was worried that the human body could not take it if there was a sudden consumption of too much high-level energy crystals.

"Can you say everything at one go?" Huang Jiahui who was ready to drink was scared and put the cup back after she listened to what Luo Yuan had just said.

"Let me drink first." Wang Shishi thought that she was an evolved human and stronger than the rest, so she took up the cup

and drank. Then, she said, "It is tasteless aside from some fishy smell."

"It was taken out from the body of the mutated beast, don't expect it to be good to drink. The fishy smell is inevitable." Luo Yuan said.

After he finished his sentence, Wang Shishi's face suddenly became flushed. She was shocked and shouted, "It's so hot! My body is burning!"

When the rest saw Wang Shishi had drunk the concoction, they did not hesitate any longer and picked up their cups to drink.

For a time, everyone's face became flushed and they felt like their bodies were being burned. It seemed that the heat was too much until ladies began to take off their clothes until they were naked.

When he saw the blushed bodies of the ladies that made them look like they were drunk, he was somewhat excited.

Unfortunately, he could only look at them but dared not do anything. He feared that any carelessness might lead to a tragedy if they got excited.

At this point of time, the mutated woman began getting anxious and pulled Luo Yuan's pants to attract his attention.

Luo Yuan reluctantly looked away from the ladies and turned to

the mutated woman instead, looking at her in amusement. He did not forget her portion but just wanted to poke fun at her.

He took out the energy crystal and used his fingernail to lightly scratch through the crystal to cut out a piece that was one-tenth of its size and threw it to the mutated woman who was waiting anxiously by the side.

She quickly took it and put it into her mouth without even looking at it. Then, she turned and eagerly looked at the remaining energy crystal in Luo Yuan's hand, indicating to him that she had not gotten enough yet.

"That's it for today, I will give you more tomorrow." Luo Yuan waved and said to her and then put the energy crystal back into his pocket.

The mutated woman was very clever as she could now understand simple gestures. When she got rejected by Luo Yuan, she was immediately disappointed and became restless but the feeling soon disappeared when heat began spreading through her body. She suddenly became dizzy and walked like a drunken person.

Luo Yuan amused when he saw the mutated woman starting to undress like the others.

...

Half an hour later, when everyone finished the drink and the heat had faded, everyone felt incredible as their bodies felt as it was full of power.

"Brother Luo, I feel like I can kill a mutated beast in just one punch!" Wang Shishi said with a look of excitement. She stood up, waiting to test her strength but she fell down after just one step after she lost her stability.

Everyone laughed.

Wang Shishi faces quickly blushed and she stood back up. She had used too much force until her body jumped up into the air and almost hit the ceiling.

Fortunately, she was able to use her telekinesis to immediately control her body and landed slowly. She cried and said, "I feel like I don't know how to walk anymore."

"Let me try!" Wang Xianguang also eagerly stood up. Because of the lesson that she learned from Wang Shishi, she was more careful but every step she walked was still unstable and she almost fell down several times. Finally, on her seventh step, she was unsuccessful and fell to the ground.

Usually with Luo Yuan fast reaction and speed, before she even fell down he would be able to hold her to prevent her fall. However, he did not have full control over his strength so he did not dare to help out. It was only when she fell to the ground that he walked to her and hold her up.

"Take your time. The sudden increase in your strength will require some time to get used to."

"How long does it take?" Zhao Yali quickly asked.

To him, this level of power upgrade was so insignificant that he would be able to adapt in a few minutes. However, their ability to control their body could not compare to the control he had over his. After he thought for a few moments, he said, "It depends on your stability as well as your ability to comprehend your own power. If you're good at it, you'll probably just need half a day of practice. If you're not so good at it, you may need to take up to a couple of weeks."

Everyone secretly looked at each other. On the surface, they looked like they in harmony but inside, they were thinking of competing secretly. Nobody wanted to be the last one to adapt to their new power and being teased as the one with poor balance and comprehension.

In the moments following that, the living room became a total mess. Several women kept yelling non-stop. They knocked over the coffee table and broke the glass, dishes on the table were also dropped onto the ground and the food was scattered all over the ground.

Looking at the broken glass on the floor, Luo Yuan helplessly waved his hand and used his Will to clean up the mess before he flew over to the trash.

Everyone had been used to the miracles Luo Yuan's performed and they were not shocked at all. Besides, they did not care about it since they were too busy falling onto the ground.

At first, no matter who fell down he would go and help up but soon he gave up because he was not able to help everyone at the same time. There were a few times where the ladies fell on purpose due to jealousy and did not want to stand up but instead, they just waited for him to help up.

He clearly knew that with the level of their Physique today, they would not feel pain with such a gently fall.

So, in order to be fair, he decided not to help anyone. He already expected to replace all the fragile items at home several times.

As for the mutated woman, she could quickly adapt to the change of her growing strength. Perhaps the amount given to her was too little that she did not see significant changes. The only things that changed were the color of the scales on her back which turned into a lighter color, close to the color of a white jade.

...

The next few days, Luo Yuan spent a lot of time in space to slowly adapt to the environment of space to adapt physically and psychologically.

The environment in space was a challenge to everyone and even the strongest fighters could not stand the weightless environment for long periods of time. Even Luo Yuan who had 19 points of Will needed some time to adapt.

Every time he flew to a further distance, he would stay for longer periods of time.

On the third day, he drifted in the space for tens hours and on the fourth day he had planned to land on the moon.

This was a super long journey. The distance between earth and moon was about 380,000 kilometers. However, with the speed Luo Yuan's flew at, it felt like the distance he would travel if he wandered around the neighborhood.

He departed at three in the morning only took an hour before he landed on the moon.

There were large and small craters on the surface of the moon. The ground was full of thick regolith that every step Luo Yuan took shot dust up into the air.

Here, where the gravity was only one-sixth of what it was on the earth, Luo Yuan could barely feel the gravity. With just a minimal amount of force, he felt like he was about to fly off the moon.

Before he was here, he was somewhat excited but after he landed, he was slightly disappointed. Aside from a few novelties which

interested him when he first reached, everything became dull as he stayed for a longer period of time.

Of course, as compared to the vibrancy of the earth, the moon was desolated and silent. There were almost no living things but an endless gray.

Bursts of Gamma rays still raged there which would not dissipate for the next few years.

There was no ozone layer to block the radiation so it was terrible. When it shone on the skin for extended periods of time, he felt a slight numbness on his skin. If it were ordinary people, they would have been killed by such radiations.

The gamma-rays triggered by the supernova was shocking. Take the sun for example, the supernova could trigger energy rays that were a trillion times more powerful than the sun within less than an hour. If this was still unclear, this energy was the equivalent of hundreds of years of radiation which was within the entire galaxy.

If the earth was close to the supernova, even if it was hundreds of light years away, our entire planet would still be completely decimated by the blast.

In some sense, the earth was fortunate as the source of the gamma-rays were so far away that it barely affected the planet. However, even if that were the case, the planet had still undergone dramatic changes.

When he looked at earth from here, the earth seemed to be shrouded in a hazy and beautiful glow. However, this scene was the main culprit that caused the ice to melt in the North and South Pole. The strong photo-electric effect after the atmosphere was blown away by gamma-rays made the earth turn into a kind of giant oven that increased the overall temperature of the earth significantly.

It was at this time that Luo Yuan sensed something and suddenly looked to the sky on his left.

He looked carefully and detected a small dot that could barely be detected exuding a faint light. In outer space where it was full of stars, it was not obvious. If he did not sense the dot, it would be impossible for him to notice the small dot.

Within a moment, Luo Yuan's face suddenly changed. The small dot was not stationary but was moving slowly towards his direction.

Though Luo Yuan was alert, he did not fear it. With his current ability, there was nothing much that he feared. Even if he could not fight it, his ability to teleport would help him escape from any threat.

He looked around and hid in a crater that was several meters wide in diameter. He squatted down and waited patiently.

The dot was not traveling fast or rather, it was slow to Luo Yuan. After ten minutes, the dot still remained a dot but was now twice

as large in size and it was then that Luo Yuan vaguely saw its shape. It had a well-proportioned, slender body.

He immediately ruled out a meteorite as a meteorite would not have such a shape so only two answers remained. It was either a mysterious interstellar life-form or the spacecraft of an extraterrestrial civilization.

Luo Yuan's look became serious as he tightly gripped the knife in his hand firmly. It was fine if he met an interstellar life-form but it would be unfortunate if this dot turned out to be a spacecraft of an extraterrestrial civilization.

He was not mentally prepared to get in touch with extraterrestrial civilizations. He had planned to increase his Intelligence once the wisdom tree upgraded to level eight and after that, upgrade himself through completing missions and only then would he be ready to face extraterrestrial civilization. However, these things were still out of his control. If the extraterrestrial civilizations planned to attack, he would never really know if it would be a year later or the next moment. At that time, he would definitely regret it if he did not stop the attack. If he actually encountered the spacecraft of an extraterrestrial civilization, it was a good opportunity to destroy it.

His heart was beating fast. Although he tensed up as it would be a brutal fight, he felt indifferent and held his knife tightly until his palms were slightly wet.

Half an hour later the original dot had now become the size of a round-table. He hid inside the crater and firmly stared at the stars,

but he was doubtful.

"This... Doesn't seem like a spaceship. It looks like a mutated beast."

Chapter 433: Tracking

At this time, the interstellar creature had gotten quite close to him and its distance was not more than several thousand kilometers away. From Luo Yuan's perspective, its body rapidly expanded as the image became clearer.

It was clear now why Luo Yuan thought it was a spacecraft previously as it really looked like a spaceship from science fiction.

It had a spinning, conical body with no hands and feet. On the sides of its body, there was a pair of semi-circular flat pieces of meat that slightly undulated as it flew. Its narrow, tapering mouth was tightly closed as two rows of fangs crossed each other. It clearly looked very grim and was not a friendly creature.

Despite the interstellar environment, the creature looked like a fish. Perhaps, it was originally born from the ocean. As it gradually approached, the faint light became clearer and brighter. Its entire body exuded a field of energy as well as an extremely oppressive aura.

This was the first time Luo Yuan had witnessed an interstellar life-form. Compared to a level eight creature, this was hundred times of times worse. The energy it gave off on the surface alone was already enough to shock Luo Yuan.

If the energy of a level eight creature was like a layer of silk that was indistinct, the energy from the interstellar creature was dense and powerful. As it got closer to the moon, the fragile magnetic

field of the moon become a complete mess.

What was even more frightening was these abnormal fluctuations even began to appear in space-time. This time, he did not have his headband so he could clearly see the subtle ripples forming in the fourth dimension from a force in a distance place.

Although the fluctuations were extremely weak, like the ripples in the water caused by water-flies which were barely detectable. Disturbances to space-time like these made Luo Yuan feel dignified.

"It was not easy to deal with such a creature." Luo Yuan thought in his mind.

A creature that had the ability to warp space-time was undoubtedly quite powerful. Even if it only had the ability to escape, that would mean that if it wanted to flee, nobody would be able to kill it.

When he saw this, he suspected it was a level nine mutated beast, Luo Yuan had eagerly wanted to try fighting it. With his ability to foresee the future as well as teleport, even if he was not able to win the fight, he could still escape.

There was no price to pay even if he failed but if he successfully killed a level nine mutated beast, he would not only gain a huge amount of experience but the precious materials on its body as well. That alone, was enough for him to take the risk.

Ten minutes later, it got closer to the surface of the moon and looked even larger in size. With space behind it, it already seemed to be larger than the earth itself. Such a stark contrast in size shocked Luo Yuan.

This was an unimaginably huge creature and perhaps it was due to the fact that it came from the sea or maybe it was due to the lack of gravity in the interstellar environment that removed the limits it had on size. The level eight Blue Dragon could be considered to be negligible if it was compared to this creature. It was more than 600 meters long and it probably weighed at least ten million tons in weight.

There was no scale and hair on its body. On its back, it gave off a dark green glow and there were golden rings and under the belly, it was completely purple in color.

It exuded a strong glow and looked daunting and at this time, a notification came to him in his mind.

"Level C Task: Kill Gerard the giant interstellar creature."

"Time-Limit: None"

"Accept / Decline"

As he expected, it was a Level C task. However, it was a bit

strange as it was the first time he saw the name of the mutated beast in the notifications he received. From its name, it seemed like it came from the ghetto.

The thoughts flashed through Luo Yuan's mind but he put it aside and thought little of it. Apparently, the power of this interstellar creature was so fearsome that the humans gave it a name.

Shortly after, it flew down and landed on the surface. It swung its tail like a fish and swam into the air 700 to 800 meters from the surface. Its speed was about one kilometer per second and this was considered to be very slow for interstellar travel that even most meteorites were faster than it.

However, this was not a problem as the speed one would use when they took a leisurely walk would be different with the speed one would use when they were running. Speed would usually be associated with feelings and urgency.

When the creature moved away, Luo Yuan quickly floated into the air and chased after it.

Undeniably, it was a little difficult to deal with it after he saw its actual size. It was far bigger than Luo Yuan expected. In addition, due to the vacuum they were in, he could attack without any air resistance but it also took a lot of power out of his attacks.

If they were on earth, when he swung his saber onto the ground it would send out a shockwave of at least 10 meters in radius and

could even increase the size of a wound on a level eight mutated beast several times. However, such an effect would be rendered useless in a vacuum environment. He even suspected that his saber would not even penetrate its skin.

It was about 600 meters long, 400 meters at its widest point and was about 100 meters tall. Its body shape was horizontal and flat. From a biological perspective, its skin was at least four or five meters thick and in consideration of it being an interstellar creature, the thickness may be more than expected.

In this case, Luo Yuan had no idea where to start if he wanted to kill it but he waited patiently for it to land on the surface of the moon.

Though the moon was much smaller than the earth, Luo Yuan realized when he landed on the surface that the moon could boost his Strength. This meant that the Earth Pulse could be used on the moon.

Since he had transformed his body with his body fusion ability, his Strength had increased significantly to 200 tons. With such an increase, Earth Geyser would undoubtedly be the most developed and powerful ability compared to his other abilities.

Compared to the Earth Geyser, the destructive power of his own strength could not be compared to it. After all, one leveraged on the power of a star while the other only relied on him. The difference between the two powers was like the difference between a piece of steel and firearms.

...

The creature seemed to continue swimming on the surface of the moon, not coming down at all. It seemed like it was searching for something. However, Luo Yuan had always been patient when it came to hunting.

As time passed, both their movement speeds got faster and soon, they had entered into the dark side of the moon. Craters were even more common here and were larger as well. A large number of craters that were attached to one another looked shocking.

The moon was both bright and dark at the same time because it rotated at the same speed that it orbited the earth. Because of this, one side always faced the earth while the other faced away from the earth. This was the dark side of the moon which faced interstellar space and there were no obstructions so meteorites would hit its surface there all the time and formed quite a number of craters.

However, though the dark side of the moon could not be seen from earth, it was not completely without sunlight. There were day and night even on the other side of the moon. It just seemed mysterious because it was hidden from view.

...

Luo Yuan noticed the sun setting in the horizon and that night was coming. Without any reflection of the sunlight from earth, it

would be even darker at night. Fortunately, after he followed it for another ten minutes, the interstellar creature finally stopped in one of the craters.

This was the largest crater in the area, with a width that was more than 600 meters high and a diameter of between 200 to 300 kilometers, it was considered to be quite amazing seeing as the moon was smaller than the earth. The interstellar creature flew around the crater slowly in a circular motion and though it was huge in size, it seemed quite flexible as if it was floating in the water.

Luo Yuan wondered about its purpose of coming to this area but just as that thought ran through his mind, the interstellar creature swooped down all of a sudden and its body smashed into the crater.

Though the crater felt huge to Luo Yuan, it felt just like a small hill to the interstellar creature as it could barely fit its length.

Along with a sudden, dazzling flash of light that suddenly shone in space, a huge gap appeared under the crater with such an impact. This was a collision between two huge forces which caused a large amount of ten-ton boulders to fly in all directions, breaking past the moon's gravitational pull and broke out of its orbit into outer space. The entire moon was shaking intensely.

The interstellar creature did not seem pleased with this hit so it swam to a further distance and swung its tail fiercely, causing spatial ripples as it swam towards the crater again, slamming into it at a high speed. It seemed faster this time as it almost reached

three kilometers per hour when it slammed into the crater.

Luo Yuan was shocked and quickly made his retreat.

With such a speed, coupled with its body that weighed millions of tonnes, 16 points of Intelligence helped him reach a conclusion that the impact of its hit was roughly the equivalent of 100 million tons of TNT which was about 5000 rounds of the [Little Boy bomb](#).

In contrast, the full force of his punch was equivalent to [0.00004%](#) of the impact that the difference seemed like it was between heaven and earth.

The very next moment, the collision between the interstellar creature and the crater was like when an asteroid hit the earth. A dazzling light that was a hundred times brighter than the one before this shone at him and a scorching temperature could be felt everywhere. Luo Yuan thought of testing his limits but figured that he could only last a few moments. His body generated a layer of Will automatically but it was soon broken. Fortunately, by the time the layer of Will broke, Luo Yuan had used his teleport ability to escape 1,000 kilometers away and even then, he still felt the heat on his body.

There was no air on the moon and except the radiation from the heat, there was not much of a blast wave which made the impact weaker by half.

Luo Yuan looked down from above and saw that the entire crater had mostly been vaporized due to the intense temperature while

the rest of the surrounding areas turned into lakes of lava with a radius of a hundred kilometers, looking like boiling water.

Fortunately, the moon was strong enough to withstand such a hit and aside from the lake of lava and the earthquake, no other significant damage was seen.

Of course, since there were so many craters on the surface which were apparently formed due to a large amount of asteroids crashing into the moon over millions of years, an attack like this would be considered as commonplace.

The interstellar creature shaking in the air seemed to become fainter. The originally bright light had now become extremely dim and apparently, the interstellar creature also had a hard time from the impact it caused earlier. It was only a few minutes later that it recovered and regained its senses as its body stopped shaking.

It looked down into the lake of lava below it and immediately dived down, drilling into it until lava splashed into the sky. The interstellar creature had disappeared.

Luo Yuan suddenly lit up. He immediately flew down and stood on the surface of the moon, realizing later that the moon was actually still shaking at a high-frequency, causing him to be unable to stand firmly/

Luo Yuan once heard that the moon was hollow and he thought that it was only hearsay but now, it seemed like it was the truth. Still, he had no time to explore this myth.

He cleared his mind and took a deep breath, his heartbeat slowed down.

The little boy bomb was the bomb used in the Hiroshima bombings with each round having an equivalent to an estimated 16,000 tons of TNT.

The author used 0.02 but in a previous chapter, it was mentioned that Luo Yuan's punch would weigh at least 3000 tons when he had 150 tons of Strength, now that he had 200 tons, it would probably yield about 4000 tons which would be equivalent to 0.00004% of 100 million tons of force.

Chapter 434: First Contact

He began to feel the pulse of the moon.

The moon's pulse was different as the earth's pulse was low and heavy like the sound of bass while the moon's pulse felt fast and lively like someone was hitting a drum.

Besides that, the moon was also hollow, making the pulse feel much clearer compared to the earth's pulse.

After a few seconds, his body began to tremble and his heartbeat was now completely in sync with the moon's pulse. A majestic force grew beneath his feet and his body was filled with endless strength and as the emotions faded, his mind became clear and he looked at the lava lake far away. Suddenly, he disappeared and appeared on the lava when he reappeared.

He stood on the surface of the lava like there were roots growing under his feet. His body moved up and down, following the ebb and flow of the lava as it moved under him. The gravitational pull was quite weak and the buoyancy he had in lava was sufficient to support his weight. He may not be able to stand on lava in such a way back on earth.

At that moment, the lava was still rolling around like boiling water and high-temperature streams that looked like a geyser would shoot out once in awhile. The temperature was at least 1,000 degrees Celcius which was already able to melt steel.

His shoes began to melt slowly and even the synthetic war boots he wore that was made from level seven materials were not able to withstand such temperatures.

He looked at the melting shoes without any expression before he took one of the shoes and threw it into the lava. He then pulled the other off and did the same thing.

He now stood on the lava with his bare feet and although the lava had an intensely high temperature, he seemed to be alright and did not feel anything.

His body after obtaining the body fusion ability felt insulated. It could hardly conduct temperature and was also good at withstanding certain forces. It was a basic necessity for interstellar creatures. In addition from being able to sustain themselves with their abilities, they could also protect themselves from attacks in space.

Else, they would not be classified as interstellar creatures if they could not even withstand and adapt to this sort of environment.

...

His sense began spreading out around him and Luo Yuan was trying his level best to feel the body of the interstellar creature and kept moving.

The lava lakes were huge, covering a few thousand kilometers

which was almost the size of Shanghai before the apocalypse. If he needed to check every inch of it, even if Luo Yuan could move at an astonishing speed, it could not be done in a short period of time.

In fact, he did not need to do such a thing since he could roughly identify its location.

Its body was too large and was like a small mountain that would cause tremors on the ground when it drilled underground. Suddenly, he felt the waves beneath his feet move vigorously.

The interstellar creature seemed to have dove deep into the lava as he could not sense it any longer. Time passed and the lava began to cool as he felt the solid rock under his feet.

The stark difference in temperature during day and night on the moon was huge, similar to other planets without an ozone layer. In the daytime, it could reach up to 100 degrees Celcius and could go down to -180 degrees Celcius during nighttime.

At this moment, the sun had set and everywhere was dark but the temperature had yet to reach its lowest point. It was at negative 20 to 30 degrees Celcius at the moment, cooling the lava at a shocking speed under such temperatures.

The interstellar beast hid underground and Luo Yuan had no idea what it was searching for down there. He waited for more than 10 minutes and noticed a change.

The ground suddenly had an unexpected vibration as a big lump began growing underneath. After a few seconds, a huge mountain was seen coming out the ground and kept growing upwards!

The ground became red under such a powerful force as it shook vigorously. Countless red rocks began floating in the air and the planet began to crack

It all happened too fast, Luo Yuan did not manage to stabilize his body and began floating in the air as well. He moved to a higher altitude as the mountain continued its growth. The entire process happened in less than 10 seconds as the perfectly formed mountain began to crack and lava flowed out.

"You've finally come!" Luo Yuan thought to himself.

His Sense finally detected its huge body and at that moment, it penetrated the ground at the speed of a few hundred kilometers per second. The lava close to the beast had already become a milky white. It was so close to the surface when Luo Yuan sensed its presence.

Suddenly, the volcano erupted and more than 10,000 tons of lava gushed out and flew into space. At the same time, the interstellar beast rushed out of the ground and caused the entire volcano to detach itself, flying out into space.

The amount of force was shocking but Luo Yuan who was currently in his Earth Pulse state did not have any emotions.

Right at that moment, the interstellar beast left the ground so Luo Yuan quickly grabbed the opportunity to initiate the Earth Geyser.

Within a few moments, a huge puddle of lava shot up at a high-speed and splashed onto the interstellar creature which was about to take flight. Its body was shined as its mouth opened furiously and it roared in silence.

You could not hear anything in space but all the magnetic field and the gravitational force

seems to have been interrupted.

Its response was fast as it immediately glared at Luo Yuan with its cold, ferocious glare that was fearsome enough to make Luo Yuan withdraw from his Earth Pulse state. He was stunned but recovered in the next few moments.

He was in fear of being so close to an interstellar creature of this magnitude. His body froze and he could hardly move, he totally forgot to attack.

However, Luo Yuan was different from ordinary people. He gathered his Will and easily wiped away all the negative emotions he had. He held on tightly to his saber and glared back at the interstellar creature. Time seemed to be frozen as both of them became stationary, judging each other's movements.

The interstellar creature did not rush an attack but instead, floated silently. Its huge body was like a mountain as it stared at Luo Yuan, twitched its mouth and exposed its ugly, disgusting, sharp teeth. Luo Yuan sensed some sarcasm from its glare.

The interstellar creature had an intelligence that was beyond human comprehension. It was angry but at the same time it felt amused that a tiny creature would attack it randomly. It could feel a stinging body on its body and decided to burn the tiny worm to ashes.

The next moment, it opened its mouth and its throat seemed to emit a glow. It was just a mild light but suddenly became a bright light. It was like the sun in the dark side of the moon that made the surrounding become as bright as daytime.

Luo Yuan was trembling, feeling scared.

As he looked at the image that came as a result of his foresight, he suddenly disappeared. Right on the moment he disappeared, an electro-plasma shot struck the spot where he was standing at and turned the entire area into gas.

At that moment, Luo Yuan had already teleported himself to the head of the interstellar creature. Unfortunately, this level nine creature was way stronger than what he imagined it to be. Even before he could attack the interstellar creature, he was thrown out by the force that the surface of the beast's body gave off. He quickly stabilized himself and floated in mid-air.

He felt a pain on his body and his skin felt like it almost detached from his body. Such destructive force from the creature was able to hurt him in less than a second.

Luo Yuan had realized his weight was also too light, allowing the force-field on the beast's body to throw him out. Teleporting was not the best way to penetrate its defensive layer. He had to use his incredible speed to penetrate it.

The interstellar creature immediately turned around and rushed towards Luo Yuan, intending to swallow him into its stomach. However, its speed was too slow that the interstellar creature could not even catch up with Luo Yuan when he was flying with his Will.

Luo Yuan decided not to tangle with it any further. He teleported ten kilometers away and rapidly rushed towards the beast. Compared to the time where the beast hit the mountain on the moon earlier, his speed was fast and extremely shocking. He easily traveled more than 10 kilometers per second.

However, he did not dare hit the beast with such a speed as he was not sure if he could kill the beast but he would definitely kill himself.

Luo Yuan held his Zhanmadao behind his body as he flashed across the front of the beast. Under such speeds, he could even cut through steel easily, not to mention his Zhanmadao.

The beast only saw him flashing across it and felt an incredible force hitting its back.

Chapter 435: Magical Skin

Luo Yuan continued to fly another 20 kilometers and then stopped to look back.

The interstellar creature was like a fish struggling vigorously. It was angry and electro-plasma shots were gushing out from its body, brightening up the moon. The region close to the beast had turned a shade of red.

Luo Yuan had sharp eyes and could clearly see tiny spots of blood as some blood was slowly dripping down. Within a few seconds, its entire eyeball had turned red as it roared in the silence of space, frightened by its injured eye. After its initial shots, it whipped its tail vigorously in an attempt to escape.

The fact that such a fearsome interstellar creature was frightened by Luo Yuan was kind of ridiculous. However, this was expected; it was like when humans first discovered wasps, their first reaction was to run. Intelligent creatures had a way of analyzing the situation and after it did, the interstellar creature decided to make its escape when it found out it had no way of catching up to the speed of that 'tiny worm', it could not even attack it!

Luo Yuan did not go after the beast but let it go. He was already at his limit.

The strike he landed looked fearsome but it did not actually cause any grievous injuries as only the membrane of its eye was serious which was not as serious as it would have been if it was hit with

the Earth Geyser. However, the eyes were an important organ for any creature and even the slightest injury could greatly anger them. He sighed, feeling helpless against such a fearsome beast.

Of course, in a way he was also an interstellar being but the difference in strength and size were vastly different. This made it difficult for him to cause any severe injuries to the interstellar creature.

For enemies with a smaller body, it was still possible for him to kill them with his body as well as the foresight ability from his four-dimensional brain. However, against the interstellar creature, it seemed as helpless as an ant that was trying to kill a man.

That being said, it would be an arduous task for the interstellar creature to kill Luo Yuan as well.

Within the period they were fighting, Luo Yuan was thinking of entering its body via his space-time bubble and kill it from the inside-out. However, he soon realized that it was impossible because it required a calm surrounding and the bubble was also fragile, not being able to withstand too much shock as it would burst once the shock to it was too strong. The force-field around the body of the interstellar creature made it difficult for him to get close.

This situation was similar to when he was nearby objects with a strong gravitational pull. Perhaps, he could resist the shock from the force-field once his Will grew stronger.

Fortunately, he did not accept the mission earlier or he might actually fail the task.

This was something he found out by himself; the system was meant to assist him and he could fully utilize a large amount of info it gave him. For example, he did not necessarily have to accept a mission if he receives a notification. The mission would still be open as long as the target was still available. With that in mind, he could give the mission a try and make a decision later after he confirms if he has enough confidence to complete the mission. This was to prevent his experience from being deducted if he fails the mission.

Luo Yuan was floating mid-air with his bare feet when he realized after looking at his watch, that it was already almost afternoon on Earth.

It was not an ordinary watch as its glass was made from the claws of the giant bird. The claws were as clear as crystal which made it a good material to fuse synthetic products. The metal parts of the watch were also made from the beak of the giant bird which was also very strong.

As a matter of fact, since he has made modifications to his body, he could not wear or bring any ordinary objects seeing as they would break easily even if he were to punch something lightly. Even synthetic products that were made from materials lower than level seven would not last that long. His shoes were the only thing below level eight that he had but it was not gone.

The moon was now completely dark once it entered night time.

Even though Luo Yuan could see in the dark, he still found it hard to see. After a long period of being on the moon, he had lost interest.

He kept thinking of returning to earth as the Wisdom Tree was going to get an upgrade within a few days. When he was about to depart, he realized that there was a tiny spot floating nearby.

At first, he did not really pay any attention. The gravitational pull of the moon was quite weak and it was probably stones and dust that flew into space after the volcanic eruption as well as the battle. The dot was probably falling back onto the moon. However, Luo Yuan soon found out that it was not falling but was stationary in the air.

He tried his best to check it out but it was already too dark. Then, he thought of something and quickly flew towards the target. He was not able to see it clearly in the dark earlier because even though the dot seemed close, it was nearly seven to eight kilometers away.

It was an irregularly shaped black object with the widest part being 1.5 meters and the narrowest part of it being one meter wide. The average thickness of it was about half a meter and its interior was full of tiny pores, making it look mystical.

As he looked at the color and the mystical appearance, Luo Yuan already knew what it was without identification.

It was undoubtedly the skin of the interstellar creature which

had escaped earlier. It probably dropped when the interstellar creature was hit by the Earth Geyser. It was just its dead skin.

However, even its dead skin was very valuable as it was the dead skin of a level nine creature. It was even more valuable than money.

Luo Yuan took the dead skin in his hands and it felt rough and strong. After that, he held both ends of the dead skin and tried to bend it. Its shape immediately changed but it was just a small bend.

Luo Yuan was surprised because even steel felt as soft as rubber in his hands but the dead skin was so strong, it was probably the strongest object he could find.

"Tsk tsk!" Luo Yuan studied it carefully. He realized the dead skin was not only strong but was made up of many layers of tissues with countless tiny pores which were irregularly sized. The structure was like that of a composite armor, making it excellent as a defensive material.

The amazing thing was, it could float in the air!

His eyes were sharp and he could see the different waves and forces in the universe and yet he could see none of those on the skin.

Then, he threw the dead skin away and found that while it was in

his hands, it would constantly move but once it left his hands, it would remain stationary.

Its amazing properties fascinated Luo Yuan. It was definitely mind-blowing and he immediately began using his identification power.

"Interstellar Creature's Skin - Gerard"

"Rarity: Purple"

"Weight: 300 kilograms"

"Additional Abilities: Space Anchor"

"Remarks: The interstellar creature - Gerard possesses a space talent which allows it to travel freely in space. This power came from its skin."

Chapter 436: Solving Problems

Looking at what was described in the system, the skin weighed only 300 kilograms but Luo Yuan felt that it was a lot heavier.

Luo Yuan estimated that its weight was at least 10 tons when he moved the skin. Since the system would not make such an error, the remaining 9.7 tons that Luo Yuan could feel was probably the space anchor ability of the skin.

It felt like an awl that was nailed firmly in space and one would not be able to move it without great strength. To be honest, despite Luo Yuan's understanding of space, it was his first time witnessing power such as this.

Luo Yuan looked happy as the skill was quite useful to him. As long as he put on clothes that were made of these materials, the weight of his body would increase and he would be less likely to be blown away during a battle.

Before the apocalypse, humans were moderate in size and only certain species were larger than humans. Nevertheless, after the apocalypse, humans were somehow categorized as small sized living organisms. Most of the mutated beasts which included low-level beasts were also larger than human beings.

Just like the space beast Luo Yuan had encountered earlier, he was blown away by the defense of its body before he could even reach it. The weight of the human body weight was too light, rendering the strength of humans useless.

Thanks to the space anchor ability, he would be capable of using his full strength during a battle.

Luo Yuan's strength was certainly not weak at all seeing that his strength is beyond the comprehensions of biology. However, during a battle, he could not fully utilize his strength. According to Newton's Third Law of Motion, forces were always acting in opposite direction. When he exerted a force on an object, the object instantaneously exerted a force back on his body. For instance, if he were standing on the ground, the force would be acting down towards the ground.

When the force was small, it would not cause a significant impact on the ground. However, when Luo Yuan could use his full strength in his attacks, the force he would exert would be equivalent to an explosion that was the equivalent of 0.2 tons of TNT. Although this figure might seem insignificant, the explosion caused by an ordinary cruise missile was only equivalent to 0.1 tons of TNT. Therefore, it was imaginable that Luo Yuan had to overcome such strong forces every time he launched an attack. Normal steel floors would not be able to withstand such an impact.

In fact, he always managed to balance himself and had complete control over his movements if he were standing on ground. Despite his attempts to offset the forces that acted on his body, he would cause an explosion on the ground and form a huge pit. However, by doing so, the forces that acted on his body would be offset by him.

On the other hand, it would seem like disaster would strike if he

were to fight in space. If he struck a single blow, his body would be blown away due to the lack of gravity, restricting him from fully utilizing his strength.

Of course, there were some disadvantages of materials such as these as the space anchor ability was quite overpowered. If he put on an equipment made from the skin, the effects of his Will would be rendered useless.

Flying with the power of his Will seemed to propel him quite rapidly but it could not generate enough force. Even with his 19 points of Will, it could only generate 300 kilograms of kinetic energy. The only reason why he could travel at such high speeds was primarily due to the Demonic Horse's mane that he used to overcome air resistance.

However, this problem could be overcome with sufficient training of his Will. It would be similar to how he got control over his Zhanmadao when he performed slashes in space after training for a period of time.

...

He roughly removed the marks on his skin that were imprinted by his Will before he took the skin and flew away toward earth via his space-time bubble.

Fortunately, the space anchor ability did not influence Luo Yuan when he flew through the fourth-dimension. After all, the space-time bubble moved the overall space around Luo Yuan and since

the skin would only be anchored to space within the bubble, it would not affect his speed at all.

Luo Yuan returned to Hope City after an hour.

Many workers were now hustling and bustling at the construction sites of Hope City. It was only a few cities and it seemed like the entire Hope City had been emptied, making it look like a heap of ruins but the workers had already started rebuilding the factories.

Some of the factories had even started operations even though the construction had yet to be completed.

Each time Luo Yuan passed through the city, he would feel shocked within his core as he could see how hard humans were struggling to survive after the apocalypse.

Before he stepped into his house, he heard an unfamiliar voice.

He hesitated for awhile. He then opened the door and walked in the living room. Everyone stood up immediately. Huang Jiahui and the rest of them were surprised when they saw Luo Yuan walking in while carrying a big black object on his back. At the same time, there were two other people standing up, looking at Luo Yuan in awe.

Luo Yuan had some thoughts in his mind as he took a look at the man and the woman who were obviously working for the

government. He immediately put the skin aside and he could feel the atmosphere surrounding them turning to one that was quite depressing.

Despite his efforts in removing the imprinted Will on the skin, the dreadful breath of the interstellar creature remained and made it difficult for everyone to breathe as they felt like a big rock was pressing down on their chest.

It was Luo Yuan's voice that shifted their attention away from what they were feeling as he asked, "The both of you are...?"

They immediately came to their sense and glared at the object that floated in the air. Then, they buried the insecurities they had within their hearts as the woman around the age of 30 to 40 said nervously, "Hi, Minister Luo. Let us introduce ourselves. He is Bi Jianping, the deputy mayor of Hope City and I'm Ni Xue, the director of the office of the municipal government."

"Luo Yuan, have a chat with them. Both of the leaders have been waiting for you for a long time. I'm going to the kitchen." Huang Jiahui smiled and said. She then quietly stood up along with Wang Shishi and Zhao Yali and left the living room.

The mutated woman was still squatting beside Luo Yuan and looked around. However, nobody bothered about her.

Luo Yuan looked at Huang Jiahui and nodded his head. Both of the leaders and Luo Yuan then exchanged glances and shook hands. He smiled and said, "Hi, I know both of you are busy. What

brings you here?"

He knew that the Hope City was having a hard time as he heard from Wang Xianguang that the officers from the municipal government were working round the clock.

"It's too kind of you, Minister Luo. We are representing the Hope City to express our gratitude to you, Minister Luo." The deputy mayor said and smiled awkwardly. According to the report from the analysis, he knew that Luo Yuan was friendlier than the director. Though he was afraid of him, he tried to appear calm.

"Don't mention it! We're all doing it for the Reconstruction Area. I believe others will also lend a hand when facing problems like these." Luo Yuan smiled and said.

Luo Yuan frowned as both of the leaders looked tense. From their look, he could imagine how worried his superiors were.

"It's because of Minister Luo has great awareness. Hope City must do something to express our gratitude. Before I came, the mayor had even reminded me to thank Minister Luo for your contribution. If you are facing any difficulties in life, Hope City will always be there to help. The mayor would have come himself if he weren't so busy with the reconstruction." The deputy mayor continued and said.

"I appreciate it but no, thanks. Do I look like I'm facing any problems?" Luo Yuan knew what they were trying to say and declined.

He did not look like he was in trouble though. The deputy mayor thought in his heart. In current times, Luo Yuan was considered to be living quite a luxurious life as his house had all sorts of electrical gadgets and his living room was even bigger than the deputy mayor's house. He had heard rumors of the privilege given by the Firearms Bureau to Luo Yuan. He was surprised when he witnessed this.

However, he had to complete the task given to him. It was a serious issue as not only Hope City was discussing it, but also New Capital City, who was in a mess as well. As far as he knew, the General Staff Department had even created an intelligence office for this issue.

The mission assigned to him this time was not completely decided by Hope City but was also partly decided by his superior.

Based on his political knowledge, he roughly knew that this evolved man had been promoted to the highest level. He would be the state leader if he were promoted any further. His superior could no longer ignore this issue. The Reconstruction Area would experience drastic changes if Luo Yuan held any grudges against them.

Nobody dared to take the risk as both forces were powerful.

Since he could no longer be promoted, he could only be rewarded with gifts. In addition, the superior could only ask Hope City to do it as it was obviously a political duty. They must find out some

difficulty that Luo Yuan was facing no matter what.

"I guess your house is overcrowded, Minister Luo. Your house is too small and there aren't any personnel to handle your logistics. This is a dereliction of duty!" The deputy mayor then relaxed a little and said.

.....

Although Luo Yuan had rejected him many times, he could not help but accept when the deputy mayor insisted on offering him some help.

Luo Yuan initially planned to have a look at the wisdom tree to check if it had leveled up but was later delayed by this issue.

The gift from Hope City was a villa with a built up space of 1000 square meters. Apparently, construction of the villa had started only a few days ago and had just been completed as there were visible signs that they had rushed to build this villa.

After the apocalypse, the most commonly used construction material was wood. Mutated wood was tougher and it was relatively easier and faster to use when building. Besides, they would be able to reduce the usage of paint without affecting the quality of the building.

The villa had a luxurious interior design that was similar to what they had before the apocalypse. There was a pool made from white

jade, floorings made from level six materials, and a mural on the wall of an eagle. In addition, there was a fountain made out of rocks that were placed in the center of the living room.

Aside from the villa, a driver, a small medical team, and a logistics team were included as well. All of the special treatment Luo Yuan received was how a senior level leader was treated.

However, among the 18 gifts he received, Luo Yuan rejected all of them except the doctors as he needed a doctor to take care of Chen Jiayi who went into a coma.

Also, most of them were women. They looked young and enchanting. Luo Yuan then wondered if his superior considered him as a womanizer.

Chapter 437: Consequences Of Entering The Fourth Dimension

Of course, the women were extremely happy after moving to the new villa. They waited for the guests to leave, and started to look around each of the rooms in the villa.

Luo Yuan did not seem to be interested and greeted the only doctor staying in the villa. He then said, "Take a seat, what's your name?"

She looked very young and she was probably around the age of 20. Before the apocalypse, she must have just graduated from university. However, her actual age should be four to five years older after the onset of the apocalypse.

She was fair, had an oval face as well as good features. Her skin was smooth and flawless. Also, she had a graceful and charming figure and was indeed a beautiful woman. She was wearing a simple yet fitting white gown, which Luo Yuan felt as if it was a uniform fetish. In fact, including the logistic service personnel that Luo Yuan had rejected earlier, none of them looked ugly.

"My... My name is Ye Qiuyu!" She took a quick glance at Luo Yuan who was sitting on a sofa and answered with a slight tremble in her voice.

"Hi, Doctor Ye!"

"H...Hi!" Obviously, she was quite nervous as she placed both of her hands on her knees, sitting straight like a primary school student when she answered.

"Relax. I won't eat you. You don't have enough meat for me to eat." Luo Yuan smiled and said with humor.

Luo Yuan never expected that Ye Qiuyu would get even more nervous after listening to his joke. Her body trembled slightly. Before she came, the municipal government had readjusted her thoughts. She roughly knew the background of this guy and was prepared to sacrifice herself. However, in the face of it, the difficulties to do so were far beyond what one could imagine.

Every once in awhile, when she thought of Luo Yuan who was so powerful and influential, she could not help but feel scared. She was afraid that she would be killed if she did something wrong and he got offended.

It felt exactly like a gun was pointing at her brain. That was why she felt a sense of insecurity when she faced Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan was speechless as he looked at her reaction. He did not try to make jokes anymore and asked with a smile, "Doctor Ye, how long have you been working?"

"One year... Including my internship, it would be two years." She wondered if Luo Yuan doubted her ability. She immediately explained, "Before this, I was working at the military hospital. I great surgical experience and a good understanding of internal

medicine. I am qualified for the job of a family doctor."

Luo Yuan was amazed as he had never expected a delicate woman like her to be able to work in the frontline for two years. This implied that she started to work in the frontline soon after the Reconstruction Area was built. At the beginning of the war, many people died on a daily basis. When there were attacks from the mutants, many of the armies were defeated and seriously injured. Even if she were working at the military hospital, it would not be safe as well.

"It's not really fair for you to work here." Luo Yuan sighed and said. He then asked, "Are you married?"

Ye Qiuyu carefully glanced at his direction. She then recalled some information her superior provided her and remembered that Luo Yuan seemed to like married women more. However, her superior did not have a specific answer for this question so she lowered his head and honestly answered, "No!"

Luo Yuan nodded his head and was about to end the conversation, "Your job is simple. Take care of Chen Jiayi, do some of the household chores and there isn't anything else to do. Relax, I am a friendly person, you'll know soon."

After he finished his sentence, he stood up and went to the third floor.

Looking at Luo Yuan go up the stairs, Ye Qiuyu was relieved. She then shifted her gaze and felt a numbness throughout her body as

if she got an electric shock.

Soon, she had the urge to pee and stood up immediately as she felt numbness in her legs as well. After waiting for awhile, she walked swiftly to the toilet.

Just as she pulled down her pants, she let out a torrential flow of urine. She then let out a gasp her mind drifted. She recalled the conversation she had with Luo Yuan when he spoke mildly to her earlier and suddenly realized that he was not as scary as she thought. Besides, she felt that he was a good looking man that exuded an indescribable charm.

Before leaving the toilet, she tidied her messy hair and she got disgusted with herself as she was blushing.

...

There were many dishes for tonight's dinner. Of course, it was a kind of housewarming dinner.

Regardless of how insecure Ye Qiuyu was, the other women still pulled her over to the dining table while the mutated woman was having her dinner alone at a small table. She did not seem to bother them and ate her food ravenously. She looked happy though and this was how she used to be when she was living in a jungle.

After the dinner, they chatted for awhile and Luo Yuan went

back to the master bedroom on the third floor.

The master bedroom was more than 200 square meters with an individual toilet, a wardrobe, a study room, and even a small weapons storage space. The weapons room had almost everything including cold forged weapons such as knives, sabers, bows, crossbows, and even firearms.

Luo Yuan was not really interested in the firearms. Its ability to release 0.2 tons of energy during the launch of an attack indicated that the weapon itself could withstand a similar amount of energy. To him, these weapons were like toys. Even if a missile were to explode under his feet, it would not be able to break through his defense at all.

The cold forged weapons had somehow attracted Luo Yuan's attention. He opened one of the casings and took out a saber. The shape of this saber looked almost similar to the Zhanmadao. Obviously, it had been forged based on the saber which Luo Yuan was using. In fact, it was not difficult for the Reconstruction Area to do this at all.

The knife was entirely made of level eight materials. It was the only level eight weapon they had here. The rest of the weapons were less powerful, but on average most of them were level seven weapons.

Compared to the villa, these weapons were actually more valuable.

Luo Yuan placed back the saber and closed the glass casing which contained lead.

He analyzed the weapon with his identification technique and found out that compared to his Zhanmadao, the Level eight weapon did not seem to be more powerful. With his current strength, an ordinary level eight weapon would no longer have any effects on him. He now emphasized more on the special abilities of a weapon.

He then opened the door of the wardrobe. It was full of combat uniforms of the same style. The garments and accessories after the apocalypse were simple as there were not many choices available. He took a pair of combat boots from the shoe cabinet and went back to his bedroom.

The skin that he brought back had moved to his wardrobe and was now floating in the air stationary.

In order to equally distribute the power on the boots, Luo Yuan first cut the skin into half by using his Zhanmadao. Perhaps it was because of the skin's space anchor ability, regular slashes did not seem to have any significant effects on it. Consequently, he had to use his Will to cut it in half.

After 10 minutes, the skin was successfully merged into a pair of boots. It was no longer floating in the air and had completely lost the mysterious color it once had. Aside from the material still being as strong as it once was, there was no difference between this and the usual material.

The shoes were sparkling after the space anchor ability had been completely merged onto the surface of the boots.

Luo Yuan took the pair of shoes over and after immersing it in his Will, the marks imprinted by his Will were strengthened. Soon, the pair of boots seemed to have an invisible connection with him. However, it was still weak. He would still need to train with it for some time in order to have full control over the space anchor ability.

Luo Yuan was excited as he tried on the shoes. He could slightly feel some resistance when he was walking. Each of the shoes had approximately 5 tons of force due to the space anchor ability. To him, the force was negligible and he had better stability after wearing the shoes. Before that, with just a little bit of strength, his body could easily float in the air.

After walking for a few steps, he could feel that the house began to tremble. Luo Yuan could not help but stop walking. He then turned back and looked at the ground. He could see that the footprints had become imprinted in the floor of the luxurious bedroom.

Fortunately, the villa was built and furnished to a high standard. All of the materials used were quality wood which was strong and durable. Otherwise, the villa would have collapsed.

Luo Yuan sighed and thought in his heart that he should not be living on the third floor but on the ground floor instead. He

believed that the ground floor could withstand a stronger amount of force and there would not be a risk of collapsing.

Just as Luo Yuan was about to take off his shoes, his vision suddenly turned pitch black and his mind went blank as he bent down his body. The process lasted for awhile. He then regained his consciousness before falling down.

Situations like this had happened many times and Luo Yuan was prepared for the bad news.

He then opened the attributes panel.

Indeed, it was astonishing as he noticed that his four-dimensional vision had increased drastically from a meager 5% to 20%.

At this rate, he believed that the next time it increased, it would reach 100%.

His face turned sour. If he were to say that the four-dimensional brain gave him many advantages, then he should not be worried about the changes in his four-dimensional vision. He could still clearly remember the night when he was tossing and turning around.

He hesitated momentarily before he decided to untie the shoelace.

He knew that he had to face it no matter what happened. His four-dimensional vision had played an important role in his Strength. Without which, he could not fly through the fourth-dimension and enter space. He would not even be able to handle the crisis of extraterrestrial civilization.

In just a blink of an eye, a lot of information from his four-dimensional vision gushed into his head. He was absent-minded and suddenly his vision had completely changed.

He could see through the wall separating the toilet and at the same time, he could see everything behind him as well. He had the ability to look through everything thoroughly from multiple angles with no barriers and he was no longer restricted by his field of vision as it felt like he was looking at the room from a different dimension. The walls seemed to have lost their function. As long as the room was not completely closed, nothing could escape his eyes.

When a normal human being was looking at a cup at eye level, he could only see one side of the cup. It was impossible that one could see the back or the inner part of the cup. Humans were able to see because light rays reflecting from distant objects were focused on the retina. Also, since light traveled in straight lines, this resulted in human only being able to see two-dimensional surfaces that were not occluded by something else.

The distance of an object from the eyes, its shape and the degree of curvature were interpreted by the brain through the reflected light.

However, with his four-dimension vision, Luo Yuan did not need

the reflection of light in order to see. His eyes would send a pair of three-dimensional images to his brain. When he looked at the cup, he could see it from the front to the back as well as the inner part of the cup. As long as it was not an enclosed object, he could see through everything.

He could vaguely feel this effect when his four-dimensional vision was at 5%. When he was flying in the space-time bubble, he was able to see the scenery behind the mountains. Until today, he still did not know the full extent of his four-dimensional vision powers.

Besides, it was not only his vision in the three-dimensional world that had changed as he could see things clearer in the four-dimensional world. He felt like there was hidden power everywhere in his room, flowing through the wall and it seemed like it happened on his body as well. The power resembled light in the three-dimensional world but Luo Yuan still did not know how it should be used.

He had untied his shoe lace for a long time. He did not feel uncomfortable and was slightly relieved.

At that moment, he felt that something was wrong with his eyesight. He was shocked as the ceiling looked shorter. He immediately recalled the scene when he first entered the room just now to compare if they still looked the same.

His face was white as paper. He was terrified as he had grown 20 centimeters taller unconsciously, exceeding the height of two meters.

The space his body inhabited had twisted a little bit more when he looked at himself.

He was looking for a weighing scale in his bedroom. He was slightly irritated as he looked at the number displayed on the weighing scale.

His weight had exceeded 200 kilograms. Not long ago his weight was only 150 kilograms.

Spatial warping existed in the third dimension through gravity and the mass of an object was subject to the strength of gravity.

The size of his body did not change from a four-dimensional perspective, only that there was a greater amount of spatial warping. However, there was a drastic change in size and an increase in mass in the three-dimensional world.

Luo Yuan got even more irritated as he continued thinking. He had evolved into a four-dimensional being not long ago and his four-dimensional vision had already increased from 5% to 20%. Perhaps he previously grew taller all of a sudden due to the effect of the fourth-dimension as well. He did not care about it earlier as it was not obvious but he had grown a lot taller now.

Compared to his four-dimensional brain and body, his four-dimensional vision was only a small part of it.

He could not imagine how gigantic he would look like in a three-dimensional world.

Chapter 438: A Burnt Child Dreads The Fire

Things were not really so bad. The enlargement of his body had resulted in an increase in his Strength as well. This had added one point to his Strength and his Strength had increased to 40 points. He did not seem to be happy about it though.

His clothes obviously had become a size smaller and his pants were very tight and short. He could also feel that his new shoes were a little bit tighter. Subconsciously he was trying to unbutton his clothes, but he could not, frustrating him. His power gathered and stirred up the atmosphere, causing a sudden fierce wind which blew everything in his bedroom, making a huge mess. He then ripped his clothes apart including the coat made from the demonic horse's mane and his plasma inner wear in anger as well.

Luo Yuan did the same thing to his pants, tearing them apart before laying in bed to look at the ceiling helplessly, feeling annoyed.

His two-meter height was still within the range of a normal human being's height. His life would not be affected at the moment but how would he look like in the future?

Perhaps the next increase in his four-dimensional senses would cause him to go beyond human limits. From his experience, this was going to happen very soon, probably within one month or a maximum of six months. He had no idea where he would go if this happened, wondering if he had to end up alone and his women would all leave him alone.

That night, Luo Yuan was tossing and turning around due to insomnia.

.....

The next morning, the mutated woman who sneaked into his room quietly was the first one to realize the change in Luo Yuan's appearance.

She was shocked looking at Luo Yuan who was sitting on the bed as she felt that she was not familiar with him at all. She retreated a few steps backward and nearly fell down as she stepped on a broken vase.

Luo Yuan stared at her. He then shifted his gaze. Without any facial expressions, he walked toward his wardrobe and chose the biggest clothes he had. He noticed that it was still slightly smaller as everything in his wardrobe was prepared according to his initial body size. There were not any clothes that suited his size, so he had to wear this first.

He headed back to his bedroom and activated his Will. The rubbish and broken pieces floated into air, spiraled up, and formed a ball.

Luo Yuan stripped the bed and the sheets joined the ball. He then covered the bed with new sheets that he took from his wardrobe and left his bedroom along with the rubbish. The women were all awake and preparing food.

Wang Shishi who came out from the kitchen was shocked and speechless when she saw Luo Yuan.

"Why are you stunned? Can't you recognize me?" Luo Yuan smiled despite being worried.

"You... You... You... How did you grow so tall in one night?" Wang Shishi stammered.

Wang Shishi's voice immediately attracted the others to come out. All of them covered their mouth in shock of what they saw.

"Luo Yuan, what happened?" Huang Jiahui asked in shock.

"I'm not really sure what's happening as well. Just that yesterday I've achieved a breakthrough in my abilities and now I look like this." Luo Yuan said helplessly but he forced a smile.

He had no idea how to tell them about the true fact. It was impossible for him to tell them that this was just the beginning and he was going to become a giant very soon and they would look as small as an ant to him.

Everyone felt a sense of relief but was somehow worried about him. They had been living together with each other for so long. Regardless of how well Luo Yuan could hide his feelings, they could still vaguely feel it.

None of them continued asking. They looked stunned in the first

place but now they looked like they had gotten used to it. The only difference was Luo Yuan kept quiet most of the time, causing the atmosphere to be silent and dull.

Luo Yuan felt that something was wrong and quickly got back his senses. He smiled and asked, "What's wrong? Don't stop talking. It's just that I had some thoughts on my mind. Doctor Ye, don't behave like a guest, treat this as your house."

Ye Qiuyu immediately put down the steamed bun on her hand as she was scared. She said softly while trying to swallow the food in her mouth, "Yes... Yes, I will."

"He looked scary but he is just the same as an ordinary man. Don't be afraid of him." Wang Xianguang told her as she stared at Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan shook his head and smiled. The heavy atmosphere earlier was replaced by a harmonious one now.

He was aware that his abnormal emotions had influenced the women. He then decided to let it go as eventually, if things were meant to happen, it would happen. At least for now, he should appreciate his loved ones.

Luo Yuan then chatted with them and the women's anxieties had started to fade away.

After finishing his breakfast, he said, "Enjoy your meal. I'm going

out."

He took his Zhanmadao and when he was about to leave, he said, "Please buy me some plus-size clothes. My body had grown bigger and I can't fit into the old clothes."

.....

As soon as Luo Yuan left the Hope City, he started to fly into the sky.

Without the synthetic clothes made by the demonic horse's mane, the air resistance now slowed down his speed. Fortunately, he used the leftover horse's mane to synthesize a belt and he wore it around his waist.

Despite his speed being reduced to half, he still managed to travel at a speed of one kilometer per second. Such a speed was more than enough to travel short distances. He would certainly use the space-time bubble or teleport if he were going on a long journey. With his abilities, losing all of his equipment would not have any significant effects on him.

The defense provided by his clothes was no longer important to Luo Yuan as his bodily defenses system could defend against most of the level eight creatures.

Luo Yuan flew very fast and before it was even 10 minutes, he had landed in the old nest of the Blue Dragon. He stared at the Blue

Dragon that tried to escape as soon as he saw him before shifting his gaze toward the wisdom tree.

It had been only a few days the wisdom tree had grown taller, reaching the height of 100 meters. Not only did it change in size, but also in its shape and appearance, becoming more mysterious!

The tree trunk which was initially purple in color had turned black. The green leaves had a crystal-like material that looked like a carved jade. Countless tree roots were twisted like dragons tangled together, embedded deeply into the ground, slightly wriggling as though it was a living body. The wisdom tree was no longer how it used to be.

The dead body of the giant bird had completely decomposed and only bones were left. The crossover, white, jade-like ribs were placed beside the wisdom tree. Both of them were reflecting the value of life and death, bringing a very strong visual impact.

Luo Yuan's identification had shown that the wisdom tree had been upgraded to level eight.

Without any hesitation, he decided to harvest the tree. He then pulled out his Zhanmadao and teleported to a point, in front of the tree and he immediately cut the tree down. The saber slashed through the tree like lightning and before the wisdom tree was able to react, Luo Yuan had disappeared from the ground.

The moment the tree fell, countless branches broke off and the sky looked like it was covered by a lot of crushed bones.

The Blue Dragon curled up its body as it rested on the side of the ground stunned, witnessing all of the occurrences that seemed quite unbelievable.

The tree belonged to the Blue Dragon! The Blue Dragon! The Blue Dragon!

The tree took so much time to grow and Luo Yuan had cut it off!

The next moment, it was so angry and had lost its senses. Its eyes turned red and roared fiercely. Luo Yuan was frightened but he forgot about it in just a short while.

It continued to roar and eventually, it was interrupted by a shrill sound.

Luo Yuan instantly teleported next to him and broke its sharp horn with a single blow. The horn flew away and crashed onto the surface of a mountain. Half of the mountain collapsed and almost buried its body.

Luo Yuan was looking at it without any facial expressions. Just as the Blue Dragon wanted to crawl and escape from the heap of stones, its body trembled as it saw Luo Yuan so it hid his head back into the heap of stones. It was afraid that Luo Yuan would be offended and had completely forgotten about its anger.

"Damn! You need to learn a lesson!"

He was not in a good mood and his anger was triggered by the Blue Dragon. He felt better now after turning his anger and frustration to the Blue Dragon.

He noticed an increase in Strength and his attack speed had improved as well. When he first obtained the body fusion ability, it allowed him to strike a blow at 12 times the speed of sound. However, his speed was now 17 times faster and the energy released by each blow was the equivalent of 0.4 tons of TNT.

His strength was empowered in a different way this time. It was based on the enlargement of his body. He did not feel uncomfortable as well. Putting aside the side effects of entering the fourth-dimension, this was undeniably the fastest way to improve his Strength.

.....

After half an hour, the motion of the wisdom tree subsided. The tree trunk had shrunk in diameter and its outer layer had lost its glow. However, Luo Yuan waited for another half an hour patiently until its nutrients were completely absorbed. He then went forward to take out the wisdom heart when it was dead.

Once the wisdom heart was extracted from the wisdom tree, it was dead and no one could bring it back to life. Of course, Luo Yuan dared not to take such a risk.

The previous generation of wisdom tree of a dark green rank.

Despite being in a premature form, it would still produce some useful effects due to as it was the highest ranked at that time. The wisdom heart he had just obtained was light purple and thought it was a level above dark green, it was the weakest of the purple ranked life-forms.

He could not ensure that the a premature wisdom heart would have any effects on him. If it were to turn out ineffective, a great amount of time would be wasted.

Luo Yuan then took out the wisdom heart.

It was completely black. Its surface resembled the human brain and its wrinkled features were so clear. He had earlier worked in the genetics lab for a period of time and had a very good understanding of the structure of the human brain.

He was shocked as he found out that there was no significant difference between the wisdom heart and the human brain.

He used his identification ability.

"Heart of Wisdom"

"Rarity: Light Purple"

"Weight: 300 grams"

"Element: Intelligence-based object"

"Additional Abilities: Intelligence +1, with a certain probability of a special mutation."

"Remarks: This is a rare heart of the wisdom tree. It is rich in the essence of the entire wisdom tree and is very valuable. It can stimulate the brain and increase one's Intelligence when it's consumed. It is very effective for people with an Intelligence of 18 points or below, with a certain probability of a special mutation."

The identification message flashed across his mind and he saw this, "With a certain probability of special mutation."

His memory was good as he remembered the message used to be "low probability of special mutation" instead of "a certain probability of special mutation". The description of "a certain probability" would definitely be way greater than "low probability".

Luo Yuan hesitated as he stared at the wisdom heart. Remembering the parable that said, a burnt child dreads the fire, Luo Yuan had to be extra careful as the ingestion of the wisdom heart would very likely cause changes to his brain. He was worried that he might gain non-human abilities or might suffer from the side effect of those abilities such as losing his loved ones which may be too late to regret.

He wanted to consume it immediately but he changed his mind. As he recalled the incident that just happened, he needed some time to recover.

Chapter 439: Spaceship

Luo Yuan was sitting with his legs crossed.

The thick, white clouds under him crested endlessly. Looking at the vast and grand scene in front of him, Luo Yuan felt slightly calmer. He closed his eyes to avoid any distractions.

It somehow stirred up the atmosphere, causing a sudden fierce wind.

After half an hour, he gradually opened his eyes. He was prepared to pay for it the moment he gained his Strength. He was going to be out of his mundane life and become a lonely man.

He tried his best to retain the things that he was going to lose. However, his effort was fated to be in vain.

Whether it was a choice to continue entering the fourth dimension or to continue gaining more Strength, it would be difficult for him to have any intimate contact with normal human being.

He was disappointed and felt a little anxious. He kept quiet for a while and decided to unwrap the plasma band on his forehead. Suddenly, there were countless notifications coming from the system. He frowned slightly and he looked at the ground with his four-dimensional vision.

The green forest could no longer block his vision. The moment when he saw the tree leaves, he could see the condition of the tree as well. The barriers he would encounter in the three-dimensional world would have no effect on his four-dimensional vision. He could clearly see there was a low-level mutated beast dozing in a cave. Also, he could see a small worm behind the tree leaves, slowly wriggling.

Nothing in this world could escape his vision!

Of course, the giant creatures could no longer hide.

The small creatures attracted Luo Yuan's attention as they were eye-catching like torches in the dark. Most of them were basically level seven mutated beasts. Most of the mutated beasts had already evolved to level seven but it was still rare to see level eight mutated beasts.

It was difficult to encounter even one level eight mutated beast in the entire region.

Level eight mutated beasts were considered as the strongest creatures on the planet.

Further evolution would allow them to have the ability to fly into space, becoming an interstellar creature. It was not because they did not want to stay on Earth, it was because they could not.

As their body grew larger, the effect of the gravitational pull on

them would become stronger. Each and every second, they had to constantly resist thousands of tons of pressure. Regardless of how strong the ground was, it felt like a swamp to them. Every step they took forward, they would find it difficult. Jumping would even cause them to suffer from broken bones. They had to leave the Earth if they wanted to continue to grow bigger.

However, there were exceptions to this. For the lightning tree, there were no signs of its attempt to enter space. Perhaps it was because it was difficult for plants to move. It was going to stay on Earth, with its roots deeply embedded in the earth's crust.

The influence of the gravitational pull on a rare and small creature like Luo Yuan seemed to be less significant. Apparently, small sized creature would always have some advantage.

Luo Yuan then flew to look for traces of level eight creatures.

After half an hour, he had finally found his target.

Its appearance was like a giant ox, huge and fearsome. Aside from a few similarities to an ox, its other qualities were totally different. Its dark gray skin featured a silver intricate pattern and it had two pairs of curved big horns which were bright red in color.

Its mouth did not look like the mouth of an ox but looked like a crocodile's mouth instead. Its sharp silver fangs looked intimidating. Obviously, it was a carnivorous mutated beast.

At the moment, there was a dead body of a giant's beast in front of the giant ox. It then grabbed and swallowed the dead body and blood splattered everywhere.

It was obviously the dead body of a level seven mutated beast. It looked relatively smaller compared to the mutated beasts that were bigger in size. The giant ox swallowed the level seven beast in just a few minutes.

It burped, baring its bloody fangs, making it look cold and cruel.

Its body and muscles became stiff abruptly and seemed to have received some sort of danger signals. The light fog on the surface of its body grew stronger. It was like it was in a world of fantasy as its surrounding was suddenly stirred, creating wave-like ripples.

Suddenly, its head slightly tilted, attempting to bite its enemy from the side.

The bite was so fast and not even the speed of sound could describe its speed. However, it had bitten nothing.

It felt insecure and looked around, stomping the ground hard, making it tremble. It did not notice any traces of its enemy though. Perhaps it was mistaken when it felt a presence and it was all an illusion. However, it was constantly reminded of the feeling of danger it felt, like the enemy was somewhere around it.

It roared and retreated a few steps backward. Suddenly, the giant

ox saw a small shadow that quietly floated in the air. It did not notice its presence at all before this.

Previously, it would not have noticed such a small creature. However, it was terrified now as if it was facing a formidable enemy.

Luo Yuan threw his Zhanmadao aside and the sword was stabbed into the ground.

He gradually landed. He moved slowly, casually taking a stroll and did not seem to bother the existence of the giant beast at all.

The feeling of insecurity the giant beast felt grew stronger. Strong sound waves not unlike a typhoon signal number eight were produced as the giant beast roared loudly, forming intense ripples in the air.

Luo Yuan shook his head impatiently and could only feel a vibration in his eardrums and the next moment, he raised his legs and stepped forcefully on the ground. At that instant, it was like a huge explosion had occurred, resulting in a very large hole in the ground.

The terrifying shock waves had caused a strong impact on its surrounding. Luo Yuan's body flashed like lightning and he disappeared from there.

"Bang!"

All of a sudden, a loud sound was heard. It did not react to Luo Yuan's lightning-fast speed. He grabbed the freezing, cold air with his fist and struck a blow on its leg. It was like an explosion and its leg was broken.

His running speed and the speed of his blow had made the speed of this attack to exceed the speed of sound 20 times. A vacuum was created the surrounding air when his fist passed through.

Before its attack hit its leg, its leg was crushed upon its collision with his saber at that speed. The saber first cut through its skin and reached its bone. In just a few moments, the bone supporting its leg had broken.

The wound on its leg continued to grow until its ligaments torn. Until this very moment, Luo Yuan's attack was not even close to its opponent and it was merely the shockwaves traveling through the air, causing its leg to break.

Before it fell to the ground, Luo Yuan launched another attack and broke another leg.

His abilities no longer required any other skills. With his speed and Strength, he could easily kill the level eight creatures.

The giant beast moaned in pain but it was soon interrupted.

The fight seemed to have triggered Luo Yuan's long-suppressed

violence. His attack got even more furious and insane.

His ghostly fist struck on the giant's beast body like a storm. Blood immediately gushed out and floated in the air.

It was like the arrival of a demon as he launched consecutive attacks. The atmosphere was stirred up and caused the surrounding big stones to fly into the air like the landing of meteorites.

The entire area was churned up like a pot of thick porridge and normal human being would not be able to reach this place.

Luo Yuan's attack had produced an incredibly loud sound as a result. It could be heard even from a hundred meters away.

After 10 minutes, Luo Yuan ended the fight. He was still calm and did not find it hard to breathe. He gradually recovered and looked at himself, his clothes were all broken into pieces and he was naked. The blood spilled on his body, and the air was filled with the strong smell of blood.

He smiled and had suddenly forgotten that he was just wearing an ordinary outfit today as he ripped off his clothes and pants yesterday. However, even after putting on his synthesized clothes, it could not withstand such a powerful attack.

Tons of blood dripped down like rain, its flesh and blood falling down occasionally. Even the air turned into a shade of red. He

looked at the dead body in front of him.

To be exact, it was actually heaps of meat.

Its body was broken up into pieces and it was no longer in shape. Its flesh was now scattered everywhere on the ground.

Pits were formed everywhere on the ground and it looked like the surface of the Moon that Luo Yuan had once seen.

He wanted to take out its energy crystal but he had no idea where his heart was. Perhaps Luo Yuan had crushed it. He cursed and thought in his heart that he should be so extreme in the future.

Luo Yuan frowned as he looked at the blood on his body. His body slightly trembled and there was a sound that sounded very much like an explosion. The blood splattered on his body like how bullets fly out of a gun when it was fired. Luo Yuan's body was now covered in blood.

He looked at the experience displayed by the system and he thought in his heart, "Only two were left."

He took his Zhanmadao and continued to look for Level eight creatures.

.....

The crowd stared at the big screen, watching Luo Yuan's naked body floating in the air. His private parts were censored and the screen only showed his muscular body, a magnificent view on the big screen. Some of the female staffs were shy and began blushing.

"He should still be looking for level eight creatures. Should we send in information regarding the level eight creatures that we have?" One of the soldiers asked as he looked at Luo Yuan who was on the screen.

"No, if he needs it, he would have requested it from us. It would be different if he were to ask for help from us instead of the other way around by providing him information before he asked for it. It's human nature to offer help and hope to receive a favor in return. If we were the ones asking for help all the time and the Reconstruction Area could not return the favor, his attitude would change. Be it contempt or dissatisfaction, all of us would not be able to bear this responsibility. He was 100 times more dangerous than a level eight mutated beast."

The general said calmly. He belonged to the strongest group of people in the reconstruction area. He used to be more afraid of the internal forces that he could not control more than the enemies from the outside. In fact, many of the top management in the reconstruction area was like this. There would not be so many evolved beings in the reconstruction area if evolved humans were not powerful enough to threaten their superiors.

At the same time, there was a massive spaceship navigating the asteroid fields between the Mars and Jupiter.

The diameter of the spaceship was 1.5 kilometers. There were scratches all over the silvery surface of the metal. The shortest scratch was light and was only a few millimeters long while the deepest one was 30 to 40 kilometers long and there were meteorites in some of the scratches.

On the other hand, it was visible that the armor of the spaceship was incredibly thick.

In fact, the armor on its surface was 30 meters thick and the whole spaceship could only accommodate 1000 people. The spaceship was very big as there were many factories, base materials, and fuel.

The Glassians had already familiarized themselves with space navigation between planets and had even navigated out of their home system. They gradually explored around the planet but this was their first time traveling such long distances.

This spaceship was built partly for experimental purposes. It gathered the most advanced technology and had been navigating for almost 60 years. Most of the spare parts and engine of the spaceship had been changed several times. There was once that it was struck by a meteorite that weighed 100 grams at a supersonic speed and was almost entirely scrapped. They then spent a year to repair the spaceship in space.

Eventually, five years ago, it stopped here, at the galaxy.

The Glassians' embryos were cultured in petri dishes in the biology lab.

The Glassians' genetic technology was more advanced than the human's technology. Therefore, they could simply modify nano-level substances and used this technology on the Glassians' genes.

The older generation of the Glassians was weaker and had a shorter life span. On average, mankind would only live until 50 years old. Until today, regular Glassians had reached an average lifespan of 300 years.

The development of genetic technology allowed the Glassians to completely get rid of natural evolution, entering an era which self-perfection was allowed.

However, the natural evolution of the creatures from the same planet produced limited genome samples. Some of the low-level mollusks almost had similar genes as highly-intelligent creatures. However, the artificially synthesized genes were produced depending on luck. It could be said the technological development had reached its limit at the moment. It would require some time to breakthrough and for further improvement.

The Glassians' original plan was to stay here for only three years and they would launch their plan to destroy the humans.

Due to the abrupt changes of the antidote virus, it completely ruined their previous plan. All of the Glassians, especially the researchers were extremely excited to have the mutated gene banks. Soon, strong and mysterious genomes were discovered one by one and everyone predicted that a new era was coming soon.

The Glassians' next generation would be even stronger and intelligent, empowered with all sorts of magical powers. At the same time, their technology could advance further, becoming more civilized and making interstellar colonization possible.

To this extent, population size was merely a group of numbers. As long as there was sufficient living space and resources, their population size would be increased drastically. Perhaps there might be even more Glassians here soon.

Chapter 440: The Show Has Begun

A top management team meeting was held at the central conference room of the spaceship.

On the three-dimensional screen, many 3D images were displayed on its screen. There were the Reconstruction Area which was in the east of Asia, the North America, and also the Northern Europe. Also, there were scenes where a lot of chimneys released a lot of smoke into the air since there were many large-scale factories. Pictures of battles between the humans and mutated beasts were projected on the screen as well where a variety of weapons appeared.

The video continued playing until it reached one of the scenes where it stopped. It then drew the attention of the crowd. One of the Glassians got agitated and stood up subconsciously. The conference room was a total mess.

The native creature looked strict and serious with a black outfit and he had no facial expression. Ignoring the background behind him, there was no difference between him and the other natives. However, the Glassians were frightened when they saw a big planet and the moon behind him.

"It's the interstellar creature!"

"Why is he appearing on screen? Isn't it being said that highly intelligent creatures would not be affected by the antidote virus? How could he evolve at a rate faster than the virus vectors?"

Probably their genetic technology is more advanced than ours?" One of the soldiers immediately asked.

"From a microscopic perspective, creatures were created through probability. Even if the probability is low, it would be pointless to argue once something had occurred as even though the probability was low, once it happened it would be 100%." One of the representatives of the research center retorted against him and continued, "This is a low probability phenomenon and it is a miracle that this occurred. To say their technology is more advanced than us, it's just a joke. They would not be at a loss now if they have developed nanotechnology at our level."

"Keep quiet!" The captain knocked the table and said, "Please continue to watch the video."

The following videos were all about the native, showing that he was flying at a very fast speed with terrifying power.

Then, a video of the battle between him and the mutated beast came on. It was clearly shown in the video each and every movement he made had caused a strong impact to the surrounding. The Glassians were thrilled by the native's abilities.

The planet had relatively low gravity. With such gravitational forces, even the Glassians found it hard to stabilize themselves.

"This creature is scary. His maximum speed was five thousand times the speed of sound and his strength was 10,000 times stronger than the Glassians. He even had the ability to teleport as

well as the ability to sense danger. The Glassians had done thorough research on him and analyzed that he was 10 times more dangerous than regular interstellar beasts."

The degree of danger was different from the degree of destruction. It referred to the difficulty that was necessary to kill the creature. Apparently, Luo Yuan who was smaller in size with the ability of teleportation was more dangerous than gigantic space beasts.

All of the Glassians inhaled a breath of cold air. The native did it with no further support. The last time it happened, it felt like a fantasy. Despite their shock, they were amazed at his Strength. None of the Glassians believed that the native was capable of threatening or destroying the spaceship as the power of the native and the spaceship was vastly different and could not be compared.

"I believe many of you still remember the fatal incident that happened to the research group that was sent to the Earth. We assumed that the native would not be able to cross the ocean and eliminated him as a suspect. The incident was then categorized as destruction from an unknown mutant." The captain said.

"What you're trying to say is it's done by the natives, and he's probably the one!" The Glassian immediately said.

"Yes, you're right. They have some ulterior motives for doing so. If we manage guessed their motives accurately, then all the questions surrounding that incident would be answered. There were six dead bodies found on the aircraft but they did not find the dead body of the virologist. At the same time, a Model III

weaponized robot had also gone missing and in fact, our identity might have already been revealed. They have the basics of nuclear fusion and may have taken our weaponized robot. If we do not bother to take action, it would be very dangerous. For the sake of safety, I think we should destroy the enemy."

"Sir, I think you're overthinking it. Although their level of intelligence is almost the same as us and their technology had improved a lot during the war. But it took at least 30 years for them to develop advanced technology like us. We don't need to worry at all and we should follow our original plan." The research representative said arrogantly.

"It would be more valuable to have the native's gene rather than destroying him completely. There will be improvements in our civilization if we're able to decrypt his gene. Then there is no need to worry about the natives anymore."

The research center had gained a lot of information from navigating across space, be it the latest gene sample or the understanding of technology development on Earth. Therefore, the Glassians from the Research Department opposed the suggestion to start a war.

"When we first came here, the Research Department requested to wait for three years to undergo research training. After three years, you said that you'll need another half a year. It had been dragging on for too long and we have already waited for five years. Are we going to wait for another five years? Don't forget why we are here today! Our mission is to destroy their civilization." The representative from the military said.

Everyone kept quiet. They had been here for over 60 years. Despite spending most of their time in the warehouse and having quantum communication which allowed them to contact their home star, they missed home. Most of the Glassians could not wait to go back and did not want to stay here any longer.

"I would still suggest taking the native's gene first. The value of the gene was beyond measure. We would be committing a sin towards the Glassians' if we miss this chance." The representative from Research Department said firmly.

The captain slightly frowned. Despite being the supreme commander, he dared not make a decision on a whim. The ability to communicate with the home star without any barriers had completely deprived the captain's right to make a decision in an autocratic way. He sighed and said, "There is no conflict between accomplishing the mission and obtaining the native's gene since this is by no means considered to be a war. Let's vote! Here's some good news. Our home star had achieved a breakthrough in technology and a new generation of spaceship was built. Perhaps you will still have a chance to come back in future."

...

There were over 10 construction robots standing on the meteorite. They stacked the factories like how goods were packed. The meteorite then propelled itself forward, carrying the module-like factories as it flew toward the warehouse of the spaceship.

There were approximately 700 meteors like these and a total of 2000 factories. The factories were categorized into ones that handled resources collection, metal smelting, machinery forging, and artificial synthesis.

The small planet was busy and there was numerous transport plane around during the recovery of factories.

Within these five years, the factories had collected a lot of resources and fusion fuel. Many spare parts of spaceship were manufactured for future use. If all of the parts were assembled, two spaceships could be built.

In fact, more spare parts were required and would be manufactured due to the mechanical wear and possibility of encountering all sorts of accidents in the space.

Chapter 441: Destruction

"I've finally leveled up!", Luo Yuan thought as he was looking at the notification from the system while he stood naked beside the huge body. He had spent half a day to consecutively defeat three level eight mutated beasts and had finally gained enough experience to level up. He pulled out a level eight energy crystal from the beast's chest. He knew that even though the energy crystal was not beneficial to him, it would have meant a lot to other people and was very valuable.

The abilities of his women had improved tremendously while their Strength and Physique had been upgraded to 15 points as of recent. Based on Luo Yuan's experience, they had not reached their limit yet as the level eight energy crystal would still be effective even if they had upgraded their Strength to 17 points.

Even though there was still a huge difference in their Physiques, Luo Yuan would still be able to do some intimate activities with them as long as he was careful. He looked at the attributes displayed on the properties panel and mused. He then assigned the attribute points to Agility. As the heat was flowing through his body, he felt that the surrounding had grown silent and that everything was moving very slowly. He moved his body around and was able to quickly adapt to his new condition.

This was different from the genetic change that had happened earlier which had caused a boost in his Strength. Though his Agility had been raised by 1.5 times, he would certainly adapt to it in a short period of time due to his strong sense of control. However, this only applied to his movements and he still needed time to practice his attacks before he could launch them as

smoothly as he did in the past.

Luo Yuan did not feel like heading back yet as it was still early and in the blink of an eye, he had flown 200 kilometers away. He then got into his space-time bubble and continued on his flight path until he arrived at a mountain nearby. He started placing the items that he had temporarily wanted to store inside the mountain, which included the wisdom heart and the energy crystal that he had obtained earlier. The mountain was over hundreds of meters thick and was relatively safe to be used as a hidden safety box in the wilderness. Unless a nuclear bomb was used to blast a hole through it or some specialized equipment had been used to drill directly through it, no one could have reached the items that had been stored inside.

On the way back, he tried to adapt to his new Agility. A strong howling wind was formed as soon as he moved his body, which caused severe destruction on the ravaged land surrounding him. The mountains nearby could no longer withstand the extreme impact of the wind and were falling apart as countless rocks began rolling down their slopes.

Luo Yuan's was now 30 times faster than the speed of sound and the kinetic energy he produced was equivalent to the square multiple of his speed. Though the energy that he generated was still far off from being as powerful as the energy of a nuclear bomb, one could hardly withstand being struck by his high-frequency attacks. With 17 points of Agility, he could easily throw hundreds of punches in one second, which yielded more than three times the energy of the Hiroshima bomb.

In fact, the level of energy boost had exceeded the energy that would have been provided by the fusion process of his body. His energy would be drained drastically and would probably be depleted in half a minute if he were to use his energy in the air. However, if he was standing on the ground, there would be an endless source of energy he could utilize from beneath the ground and he would never get exhausted.

It only took him three minutes to flatten the land surrounding him. The bushes of grass had been crushed and the rocks had been shattered into sand. The forest looked as if it was a vast desert. The surrounding temperature was gradually increased which heated up the air around the forest as well. It was clear that the heat was coming from the center of the earth and the surrounding air had turned red. The red colored region expanded very quickly and was got even redder, making it seem like the flame was roaring up into the air. He felt that the air surrounding him was forming a vacuum and the energy was being accumulated and trapped in the air. The hot air had reached 3,000 degrees Celsius which was so hot that even steel would vaporize under such temperature. However, he could only feel a slight burn on his skin as the air temperature was still far cooler as compared to what his body could withstand.

After three hours, he finally stopped and a strong air current propelled through the entire district as soon as the vacuum energy had dissipated. He then ducked into the cave and stabilized himself. He waited patiently for 10 minutes while the air flow gradually subsided. The position he was standing on before prior to his entry into the cave became a large mountain pit. The area had been completely vitrified and hot air was still rising from the surface.

Luo Yuan then got up and flew out of the cave to retrieve the wisdom heart and energy crystal that he had stored in the mountain earlier. He frowned when he saw his own naked body. In just a short moment, a piece of skin covered his body. He then flew towards Hope City.

...

Luo Yuan opened his eyes in the dark and sat up.

He looked at the time and realized that it was only one o'clock in the morning. The mutated woman did not sneak into his room as he was not used to the fact that Luo Yuan had suddenly grown taller since yesterday. Perhaps the mutated woman would need a few days before she could adapt to it. He put on his clothes and drew the curtains open. Quietly looking at the dim street lights outside, he felt a sense of insecurity and could not fall asleep. Luo Yuan was rather sensitive to danger and knew that this sudden feeling would not have been triggered without a reason, though he had no idea of the danger that lied before him.

Putting aside the possibilities of an attack from extraterrestrial life or a nuclear bomb, nothing much could have threatened him on land. He could withstand attacks from an electromagnetic missile and even level eight mutated beasts could do no harm to him. The aliens would not appear at Hope City first since it was located at the center of the Reconstruction Area which also happened to be one of the most superior cities. They would certainly not start off with this place.

He realized that the feeling of insecurity he felt was getting

stronger and stronger. He then frowned as he was annoyed. By this time, the ground was shaking slightly. Luo Yuan would not have been bothered about it last time but he was alarmed by the shaking of the ground this time and quickly pulled out his Zhanmadao. He quickly exited the villa and stood on the ground outside. He then followed his instinct and flew around using his space-time bubble fight mode. After 20 minutes, he stopped with a shocked look on his face.

He was now ten thousand kilometers away in space. As he looked down, he saw that Northern Europe had completely melted and emitted molten lava. The strong shock wave resembled a huge smoke ring which was spreading quickly everywhere. Along the coast of Europe, the ocean waters receded from the shore which exposed the water-covered land. A huge tsunami was triggered and sent towards the direction of North America.

He was stunned and his hands grew cold. It took awhile before he managed to regain his senses. No one could have survived such a destructive force including those who were living underground. Europe had almost been completely wiped out and the organism living there were on the verge of extinction.

He did not feel good as he knew that the mutated beasts were not the cause of this attack and judging by the destructive force that he had just seen, he was certain that the attack from the extraterrestrial civilization had begun.

In the meantime, the Earth trembled again and Luo Yuan vaguely felt a vast force raging from behind him.

Chapter 442: Chill

He felt a chill going down his spine which spread to his whole body. The attack from the extraterrestrial civilization had been too fast and sudden that it was an unexpected nightmare.

He estimated that he would have had at least half a year to prepare for the war and had never thought that it would have come in just two months. The humans were unable to defend themselves completely and now two of the regions where most of the strong people gathered had been completely obliterated in just two hours. The humans simply could not predict the attacks before they happened.

Luo Yuan knew that their next targeted region must be the Reconstruction Area. He was deep in thought, and suddenly, he shivered as he subconsciously directed his attention towards the Reconstruction Area. There was a sudden burst of dazzling light which was a thousand times brighter than sunlight which caused Luo Yuan's eyes to tear up. However, he did not close his eyes but instead stared at the ground.

The cities were all engulfed in a roaring flame and had been torn apart by the strong shock wave. The shock wave easily swept through everything it passed, regardless of whether it was a city or mountain. Soon, a giant mushroom cloud of smoke billowed into the sky. The extreme temperature had caused everything around it to melt.

Though the Reconstruction Area was not big, one-third of it had been destroyed in just one attack.

Luo Yuan floated into the sky as he started to tremble in anger at the sight he saw. He was so angry to the extent that it felt like his anger was going to burst out of his chest. He then stared up at the sky and spotted a tiny dot in the distance. His eyes were giving off a terrifying intent to kill.

"Damn!"

He immediately flew towards the tiny dot and since it was only 3,000 kilometers away and decided to use his Will while flying in order to save time. The gravitational force was relatively weak when he was flying in space and therefore he could easily achieve 10 kilometers per second as there was only a slight resistance opposing him.

After a few seconds, he was feeling uneasy even though he had a calm look on his face. It had not been even a minute since he started flying before he saw that the extraterrestrial civilization had launched another attack. Luo Yuan turned back and saw that half of the Reconstruction Area was already engulfed in flames. Fortunately, he could still see Hope City.

Even though all the buildings had collapsed, at least the district had not been completely destroyed. Luo Yuan was suspicious as the recent attack that had been launched on the Reconstruction Area was relatively weaker compared to the prior two attacks. The two cities where the attacks had struck previously were completely destroyed and despite the fact that the attack on the Reconstruction Area was terrifying, it was not as powerful as the one that had happened in Europe.

Luo Yuan had never expected that the aliens would have given him such prerogative as they were afraid that if the attack was too powerful, they would not be able to retrieve the genes from his body. They were using anti-matter bombs which were launched from space. These bombs could achieve a conversion rate of 200% of the energy mass as compared to the hydrogens bombs which had the properties of converting 0.7% of the energy mass. The energy generated by the anti-matter bombs was 3.6 times greater than the Hiroshima bombs.

Approximately 100 kilograms of anti-matter bombs had been launched in Europe and North America, which was equivalent to 36,000 Hiroshima bombs. However, only two bombs had been dropped on the Reconstruction Area.

...

Luo Yuan had only been flying for two minutes when they realized his presence.

A beam of light shot towards Luo Yuan's body but he managed to avoid it without slowing down. Though attacks at the speed of sound were usually unavoidable by other outer space life, Luo Yuan had his predictive ability which rendered attacks like these to be useless.

The light beams had now become more intense, however, none of them could successfully strike his body as he easily dodged them. Luo Yuan felt slightly relieved as they had finally stopped

attacking the Reconstruction Area and diverted their attention towards him. He smiled when he saw that the tiny dot in front of him was getting bigger and bigger.

He realized that it was not a spaceship but rather an aircraft which looked exactly the same as the one he had discovered a few months ago. This indicated that the spaceship had never been there before.

"Well, it's time for payback!" Luo Yuan thought coldly.

They were getting closer to him and Luo Yuan was afraid that they might launch their destructive attacks when they saw him. He quickly turned invisible and teleported a couple of times until he appeared next to the aircraft which had been thousands of meters away from him.

He then delivered a heavy blow on the armor of the aircraft and the aircraft began to shake. His attack had broken through the thick armor and had formed a big hole on the body of the aircraft. At the same time, he was thrown back by the powerful recoil.

He then teleported towards the hole of the aircraft which was only the size of a basketball. Putting aside the fact that there had been no assistance from the high-speed airflow in space, the durability of the aircraft was way stronger than the scales of level eight mutated beasts. The aliens were using a type of material known as nanotechnology which they had managed to produce through the arrangement of atomic layers where all of the metals had been nano-crystallized. The armor of the aircraft was at least 10 times stronger than any other metal that existed on Earth. He

placed both of his hands into the hole and grabbed the armor before he inserted his fingers into the hole.

"Ahh!"

His muscles started to bulge and the veins on his forehead became more prominent as he exerted himself to find a way through the armor. There was even smoke around him. With Luo Yuan's great strength, the armor began cracking and the hole became bigger. His body then flashed across the air as he teleported into the hole.

As soon as he went in, a high-energy radiation shot towards him. He moved his body slightly sideways to dodge the oncoming projectile and immediately pulled out his knife to attack. In just a blink of an eye, the weaponized robot had been cut into half. Luo Yuan kicked aside one of the broken parts that were blocking his way and quickly headed towards the central control room of the aircraft.

Chapter 443: Location Of The Spaceship

Two months ago, he had entered a similar aircraft so he was quite familiar with its internal structure.

In the meantime, a few weaponized robots nearby had rushed over to Luo Yuan's position as if they had been alerted to defend against the intruder onboard. However, they were easily killed by Luo Yuan. Two months ago, he had to carefully use his powers to defeat these robots but now that he was so much stronger, he was able to break their big round bodies into halves before they even had a chance to react.

Within seconds, he arrived at the entrance of the central control room. He sensed that all of the Glassians were inside. Even though the cabin door was shut tight, it was impossible to prevent him from entering as he pressed against the metal door and pushed hard. The door swung open with such force that it stirred up the internal airflow; causing the air to escape from the control room. Despite his anger, Luo Yuan decided that it was better if he did not kill the Glassians before he was able to obtain any information from them.

As soon as Luo Yuan entered, he closed the door and looked around. The air had become thinner in the central control room but, fortunately, the Glassians were safe as they had brought their oxygen masks along with them as soon as the spaceship had warned them. Nevertheless, all of them had been pulled towards the wall when the airflow had discharged at such a powerful speed; causing most of them to be injured. Two of the Glassians had suffered from bone fractures while one of them had knocked his head against the wall and died.

The remaining five Glassians were terrified and their bodies were shivering as they watched Luo Yuan walk towards them. They did not need to be threatened as they were already terribly horrified just by Luo Yuan's appearance alone.

"Where's the spaceship?" Luo Yuan glanced at them and asked coldly in English.

Luo Yuan knew that even though the Glassians were highly intelligent, not every one of them could understand human languages. He knew that there was only one way to determine the exact location of the spaceship as outer space was mind-bogglingly huge and he was certain that he would not be able to locate the spaceship without obtaining the information directly from the Glassians.

When they heard Luo Yuan's voice, they got even more terrified and exchanged glances with Luo Yuan. They were trembling and none of them had answered him. Luo Yuan smiled coldly and pulled one of them towards him. When compared to his broad figure, the Glassians looked like kids. Seeing as how this Glassian was badly frightened of him, he asked again by using Hint. However, he just stared at Luo Yuan helplessly without saying a word. Luo Yuan grinned, showing off his white teeth, while he squeezed its skull and easily crushed its brain.

The other Glassians were trembling harder than before and were terrified beyond comprehension as they witnessed the gruesome sight that unfolded in front of them. Luo Yuan swung his arms to shake off the remnants of brain and blood that was stuck to his

hand before he pulled another Glassian over. Still, the Glassian did not answer his question and its dead body was thrown towards the Glassians. One of them seemed to have fainted under the threat of being killed by Luo Yuan.

One of them then took out a laser weapon that looked like a firearm and said, "I'll kill you now!" The Glassian fired multiple attacks from the laser weapon towards Luo Yuan. At this point, Luo Yuan was lazy to dodge and allowed the laser beams to strike his clothes. Not only had the attack failed to hurt him, not even a spot or mark had been left on his clothes.

The clothes had been made by Luo Yuan the night before using the remaining materials he had and despite not having the space anchor ability, the material itself was rather valuable and was impossible to be destroyed by these types of weapons.

"It seems like you can speak English!"

"You... Wild man... Even if I have to die, I'm not going to tell you!" he said toughly. Perhaps he had sensed that he was going to die. He looked frightened and retreated a few steps.

In an instant, Luo Yuan had leaped 10 meters ahead of it. He grabbed hold of its body and stared at it. He demanded, "Tell me where the spaceship is!"

"It's at ..."

"%¥#%%"

"#¥%%"

As it was about to speak, the other Glassians started to shout loudly as if they were trying to stop it from revealing the location of the spaceship.

"Bloody wild man... Humans are on the verge of extinction! Kill me!" It shouted as its body started to tremble and its mouth and nose bled.

The Glassian had successfully overcome Luo Yuan's power, which was the same thing that had happened last time. Compared to the humans, it seemed that the Glassians had some sort of ability that helped them to defend themselves against Luo Yuan's Hint ability.

"Damn!" Luo Yuan was furious. He raised his arms gently and the power of his Will was quickly put into action. The Glassians could feel their bodies burnings and they started screaming in agonizing pain.

Luo Yuan hinted with his Will once again, but this time, he had maximized the power of his Will.

The Glassians could not stop throwing up blood and the rate of their breathing showed signs of exhaustion. Just when Luo Yuan thought he was going to fail to retrieve any information from

them, one of them said, "The spaceship... is located at the coordinates X#, Y#, Z#."

Luo Yuan was stunned as he could not understand the coordinates that had just been mentioned by the Glassian. Even if he could, he would still have needed a calculator to analyze the coordinates in order to locate the spaceship.

"Where's the star atlas?" Luo Yuan asked immediately.

"It's on the three-dimensional screen!" As soon as he had finished his sentence, he vomited blood and died.

Luo Yuan threw his dead body on the floor and immediately looked at the three-dimensional screen in the central control room. He eliminated some of the alien language and pictures that did not look like a star atlas. Compared to the usual maps, height was included in this one. Viewing it on a three-dimensional screen, it looked exactly like a 3D map. It was not a static map but a dynamic one instead which displayed only part of the solar system as there were only two planets available on the map.

He knew nothing at all about the Glassians' language but had concluded that based on the size of the planets and satellites, one of them was slightly bigger and he suspected that it was the Earth whereas the smaller one was most likely Mars. There was a blue spot of light twinkling between the Earth and Mars, which Luo Yuan guessed to be the location of the spaceship.

He had one last look and memorized the entire map before

leaving the aircraft and was once again in space. He understood that his main priority was to get rid of the other threats first before he went looking for the spaceship. North America and the Reconstruction Area were attacked at almost the same time which implied that the two regions had been attacked by two different aircraft and that there was a second aircraft which he had to find and destroy.

Before flying through the fourth dimension, he looked back at the Reconstruction Area. Most of the cities had been destroyed in the attack including the New Capital City which was now covered by a stream of lava. Not many of the cities had survived and most of their factories had been destroyed including Hope City's. The storm had stirred up the air and dust clouded the area, however, thanks to Luo Yuan's four-dimensional vision, he could clearly witness the heartbreaking scene. He looked at it absent-mindedly and when he had gotten back to his senses, he flew in a space-time bubble towards the Earth.

Chapter 444: Counteract

The advanced technology possessed by the Glassian civilization had resulted in the prompt delivery of messages which were difficult for hackers to intercept or steal information from.

When Luo Yuan destroyed one of the aircrafts, the incident was detected by the second aircraft as well as the mothership which was located further away. They immediately proceeded with preparations to battle Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan had easily defeated the aircraft without feeling any threat from it at all when in fact, the Glassians' aircraft seemed rather terrifying. Instead of identifying it as an aircraft, it actually looked more like a small spaceship that traveled within the galaxies. It also looked like the international space station before the apocalypse.

The engine used was an impulse engine with nuclear power and the energy stored in the deep nuclear fusion reactor was almost 50 times the power generated by the [Three Gorges hydropower plant](#).

What was meant by deep nuclear fusion reactor?

Basically, the fusion of hydrogen bombs merely produced helium nuclei which only converted 0.7% of the mass to energy. However, the reactor of the deep nuclear fusion reactor could directly produce iron which has a 43% mass-to-energy conversion and its energy utilizing rate was 60 times higher. It could have supplied sufficient energy to the entire region of China before the

apocalypse.

In addition, the aircraft was equipped with a particle cannon. 40% of the cannon was made up of an electromagnetic gun which fired at supersonic speeds while the other 60% of it was made up of a high-power laser rapid-firing gun. 12 of them were nuclear antimatter smart orbital ballistic missiles. The radar of the aircraft was completely invincible as it was stacked with armor that could absorb shock waves. The aircraft could have easily destroyed Earth with such an arsenal.

...

Luo Yuan's speed gradually increased as he was flying through the fourth dimension.

After 10 minutes, his speed had reached hundreds of kilometers per second and he flew like a soundless beam of light. Within half a minute, an arc flashed across the sky followed by the eruption of dazzling bursts of light behind it. Countless of highly-energized particles turned into flashes of light which brightened the dark sky. Luo Yuan felt that his back was burning from those particles. He knew that the opponent was using nuclear weapons like nuclear bombs to launch high energy attacks.

Luo Yuan discovered that although the bubble was strong enough that he could defend himself against normal attacks, light could still penetrate through. Otherwise, the space around him would have been very dark and he would not be able to see what was happening outside. He should have noticed this fact earlier but he had neglected to notice it. Nevertheless, it was not too late to

realize it now. Beams of light were reflected and refracted by the different layers as they entered and eventually, approximately 70% of the light would be able to penetrate through the space-time bubble. Besides that, the rate of reflection of the light could potentially become even higher as his Will got stronger.

Luo Yuan was nearly entering outer space and the air had become extremely thin; it was almost close to being an absolute vacuum state. Luo Yuan thought to himself that the damage caused by the antimatter bombs were dependent on the environment so compared to the damage that had been caused by the bomb explosions on Earth, its damage would be drastically reduced without the presence of air.

The lights lasted for only 10 seconds before it went off, however, Luo Yuan was really tensed and his heart pounded rapidly. He felt a sense of insecurity as if he was close to death. He immediately switched his flight path from traveling in a straight line to moving in a fast and irregular manner. Just as he had changed his direction, he felt a strong sense of danger and soon he had foreseen that a powerful force was coming towards him. Five dazzling suns arose in the dead sky and each of the strong and highly energized rays stood out against the actual sunlight.

The surrounding area was filled with numerous high-energy particles and the temperature had risen up to 10,000 degrees Celsius. He had pictured in his prediction that he was unable to avoid the rays and the bright light engulfed him completely. The scene turned black after awhile as he was standing in between the highly-energized particles. His strong body had completely melted and was turned into gas by the rapid moving energetic particles. Luo Yuan calmed down after he had watched his own death from a

different view. He went into teleportation mode by flying through the fourth dimension.

Thanks to his 17 points of Agility, he was able to teleport into the distance in merely 0.005 seconds. He was now more than thousands of kilometers away after only three teleports. He looked up and the tiny dot appeared in front of his eyes. He estimated the distance between them and smiled before launching another teleportation.

He teleported another seven times, covering a distance of 2,000 kilometers and appeared next to the engine of the aircraft. Being so close to the engine, he could feel the high temperature of his surroundings. The next moment, he pulled out his knife and an invisible space wave struck the armored aircraft, leaving a long crack in its body.

It was just the beginning and in just a blink of an eye, countless waves struck the aircraft which caused it to no longer function. At this time, the antimatter bombs began to emit rays of light.

Luo Yuan breathed heavily as he floated above the aircraft.

He frowned, knowing that he had used up most of his Will after two consecutive attacks. His teleportation was a powerful ability which consumed a large amount of his Will. The battle was not over yet and he realized that the spaceship was way scarier than the aircraft. Earth would be in trouble if the spaceship ever landed onto it. It was no longer only a threat to human extinction but rather the extinction of all creatures on Earth. Perhaps the Earth would end up becoming a lifeless planet just like Mars.

His heart felt heavy as he ground his teeth while looking up at the sky. He then flew deeper into space in a space-time bubble.

...

At this moment, the Glassians were having an emergency meeting in the spaceship. They discussed their plans to battle Luo Yuan. The video reel of the two battles was played over and over again on the three-dimensional screen and the atmosphere was tense as everyone watched in silence.

The captain spoke after pausing for a long while. He said strictly, "First of all, I would like to apologize to the soldiers who had sacrificed their lives because I've underestimated the ability of this evolved human which has led to the failure of this mission. The military made a big mistake and as a result, 14 of our army members had died."

"It's not solely your fault, sir. None of us had expected the opponent to be so powerful." One of the soldiers said immediately.

"There are always casualties in war, but the sacrifice is worth it." Another soldier said.

"The research center has to bear most of the responsibility. Our soldiers would not have been hesitant if they did not strongly urge for it."

"Stop finding excuses for me. I'll own up to my mistakes and explain to the military officers when I return to the mothership. Now, please summon Lan Bobofu from the Physics Research Department to analyze what should we do next!" The captain said.

The captain had put on an act for the Glassian civilization. Since it was the first time they traveled such a long distance, it was indeed an innovative exploration. Even if there were no contributions gained, he would still be granted with honor and status when he returned to the mothership. It was imaginable that he would go down in history as the Glassians' hero.

Furthermore, his contributions were a lot more significant as compared to the small mistake he had just done.

"It's my pleasure, sir!" An old Glassian stood up, saluted and said, "I watched the videos just now and found out that the human was quite strong and powerful. With our existing technology, we still won't be able to replicate some of his abilities such as his teleportation. Teleportation was still under discussion as it was indeed a miracle of life."

"Lan Bobofu, please make it short!" One of the soldiers interrupted.

"Well, he can escape to a distance of 200 to 300 kilometers every time he teleports. The time interval is also extremely short - approximately 0.0053455 of a second. Teleportation involved the quantum tunneling effect which theoretically required a downtime but his was too short and negligible. The time interval is linked to the speed of his neural response. For the Glassians, it's 0.2 seconds

which is 40 times longer."

All of them were not surprised by this piece of information as each of them had a terminal behind their brains and had conducted an analysis earlier regarding this information.

"However, this was the most prominent ability and could be identified easily." The Glassian continued. He walked forward, paused the video and said, "Everyone please have a look at this. The opponent was trying to switch his path."

The Glassian then resumed and continued playing the video. Luo Yuan's body flashed in an arc across the air and an antimatter bomb exploded a short while later.

"He is incredible and our understanding of his abilities is still limited. However, it was clear that he is extremely sensitive to danger. Perhaps he has the ability to predict the future and could sense danger two seconds ahead of time."

"Why can't we use the smart missile?" An army member wondered and asked. He continued, "The fastest speed a smart missile could travel is 3000 kilometers per second. With this speed, it could easily hit the human."

"This is an important point that I'm going to talk about next. It was impossible to do so as most of you had probably neglected the fact that his body changed from time to time!"

When the Glassian pointed it out clearly from the video, the captain was astonished and said, "Do you mean that he can become bigger or smaller? This doesn't make sense."

"But it is possible in the fourth dimension. Based on Sai Gefu's space theory, there are four dimensions in our universe and we are living in the fourth dimension of the universe's membrane. When the human was in his special form, part of his body entered the fourth dimension. It's quite similar to the space-time phenomena that we are trying to prove. Although visible lights cannot be filtered completely, it can shield against long waves such as infrared radars, allowing the human's body temperature to be exactly the same as his surrounding. Our smart missile was designed to target distant objects, so there won't be any video tracking function."

The atmosphere had suddenly gotten quiet. After a while, the captain asked.

"Is it difficult to use this technology?"

"No, this technology has been widely used hundreds of years ago. It can be modified in half a day."

The Three Gorges Dam is a hydroelectric dam that spans the Yangtze River by the town of Sandouping, located in Yiling District, Yichang, Hubei province, China. The Three Gorges Dam is the world's largest power station in terms of installed capacity.

Chapter 445: Meteor

In fact, the time that had been taken for the modification of the smart missile was shorter than expected. In less than two hours, a batch of smart missiles had already been remodeled. Half of the time had been used to search for information on the technology and to communicate with the Manufacturing Department.

The video tracking ability was not a complex technology and with the Glassian's manufacturing standards, the modification process was a piece of cake. This could certainly be manufactured on a large scale.

Each weapon had their own distinct function. For instance, the smart bombs were used to aim at distant targets in space while the electromagnetics guns or high-powered lasers were used to attack enemies at close range.

Space battle was different from planetary war. They had never encountered an opponent like Luo Yuan who had a strong sense of danger and could avoid incoming attacks so quickly. Therefore, they had never required the smart missiles to have a video tracking function until they met Luo Yuan!

When all the weapons were ready, the Glassians were relieved. Admittedly, the strong human had caused them to be slightly tense and nervous. His incredible predictive ability and teleportation powers had caused the Glassians to feel a sense of helplessness. But it would stop here!

Regardless of Luo Yuan's ability to teleport or to foresee danger, they were certain that Luo Yuan would not escape the attacks from their new upgraded weapons. He was fast, but not fast enough to escape from the nuclear powered smart missiles.

They were unable to explain how the teleportation worked but believed that there must be some limitations to it. Based on the previous battles, they noticed that he could not teleport continuously, otherwise, the battle could have ended quickly and he would not have been flying around dangerously for so long to avoid all sorts of attacks.

Suddenly, the Glassians realized that their target had gone missing while they were in the midst of preparing their weapons.

"Where is he!?" The captain asked.

"Sir, he's on the Moon!" The army who was constantly monitoring Luo Yuan's movements said while pointing on the screen that was displaying a planet pitted with craters.

"What is he doing there? Not long ago, a gigantic space beast had appeared there. Is he going to ask it for help?" The captain joked and look relaxed. He then said, "Let's not waste our time here. I don't want to stay here any longer. Destroy him with our newly modified smart missiles!"

"Yes, sir!"

After a few seconds, they fired the missile! It was as if a massive object blasted off into space! As usual, it flew for half a second before the long rays started streaming through the nuclear-powered engine. The missile continued to accelerate and after 10 minutes, it had reached a traveling speed of 3,000 kilometers per second. The smart missile resembled an arrow as it shot straight at a rapid speed towards the Moon.

"The major disadvantage of this weapon is the long waiting time!" The captain said helplessly. He could not wait to see the outcome of the attack. However, the spaceship was 2000 kilometers away from the Moon and despite the fast traveling speed of the smart missile, he would still need to wait for two hours in order to know the results of their latest attack.

"I think we are too far away. We should move closer to the Moon." He commanded. By assessing the human's agility, he believed that it would be safe to stay one light-second away from him.

...

The spaceship vibrated slightly as the intermittent nuclear fusion from the engine propelled the spaceship forward marginally. The speed was so slow at the beginning that it was barely noticeable. However, within seconds it suddenly accelerated at an astonishing speed. A long light streaked across the dark space and the energy released by the nuclear fusion pulse was equivalent to the energy released during the explosion of a hydrogen bomb. The spaceship would accelerate every time a pulse was sent out.

...

At that moment, nobody noticed that an insignificant meteor had flashed across the side of the Moon. It was not moving very quickly and its path appeared to be slightly curved as it was influenced by the Moon's gravity. After moving in a long arc, it was able to overcome the Moon's gravitational force and blasted off into space.

During the flight, its path could be adjusted accordingly and it secretly deflected 30 degrees an hour when it was not in the Moon's gravitational atmosphere. Of course, this was no ordinary meteor.

If the Glassians were to scan the meteor with an X-ray, they would see that there was actually a hollow space inside it in which Luo Yuan was sitting with his legs crossed.

...

In fact, when Luo Yuan had arrived on the Moon in a space-time bubble, he had almost used up all of his Will. Without his Will, his abilities were greatly reduced. He could still fight with mutated beasts using his Strength but he was certain that he would die if he had to deal with the Glassians' spaceship without his ability to teleport or fly.

He had initially planned to take a short break when he arrived on the Moon to recharge his Will. His body's fusion ability helped restore his Will at a faster rate. He could be fully recharged in just a few hours.

He was excited when he saw a meteor even though it was not rare to see a meteor appear in space or the solar system. In fact, there were tons of meteors that fall to the Earth every day, but most of them would burn up while entering the Earth's atmosphere.

Luo Yuan had once entered the Glassians' dreams before so he had a good understanding of the quality of technology they possessed and because of this, he felt helpless. He knew that he had revealed all of his abilities to the Glassians when he consecutively destroyed two of their aircrafts. It was just wishful thinking to believe that he could appear without being noticed. Perhaps the Glassians were now using all kinds of surveillances to keep their eyes on him - monitoring each and every move he made while analyzing his previous battles. Nevertheless, regardless of how advanced the Glassian's technology was, it was impossible for them to keep track of every meteor that appeared in space.

After a while, Luo Yuan entered the meteor which was nearby. When he was completely hidden by the Moon, he used his Will to propel himself forward. Fortunately, the meteor was 10,000 kilometers away from the Moon and therefore it was unaffected by either the Moon's or the Earth's gravity.

Anyway, it was possible for Luo Yuan to generate forces that were sufficient for the meteor to move against the Moon's gravitational pull when he was flying with his Will. Meanwhile, the centripetal force was also aiding the meteor as it was revolving around the Moon - allowing it to travel at up to 20 kilometers per second.

Of course, it was relatively slow since it had to travel a distance of 20,000 to 30,000 kilometers. The meteor might have needed 10 days to reach the spaceship if it continued traveling at this constant speed. Who knows if the spaceship would still be there after 10 days.

Luo Yuan wanted to fly through the fourth dimension when his Will had recovered by half. Even though it was dangerous to accelerate when he was in the meteor (as he could easily be identified), he did not care so much about it anymore. However, Luo Yuan had never expected a surprise from his opponent.

The ship was huge and despite the fact that it was so far away from him, he could still vaguely see the ship's figure through a fist sized hole that he had made in the meteor. Besides, the long beam of light was prominent and certainly visible when it appeared in dark space. It would be difficult for one to not notice it.

The spaceship was now moving towards him at an extremely fast speed. He felt relieved at this turn of event and closed his eyes to speed up the recovery rate of his Will.

...

The "meteor" continued to streak across the dark and silent space. It looked just like an ordinary and unattractive piece of rock flying in space, heading straight towards the spaceship. Luo Yuan was sitting quietly and taking a nap to restore his energy when he suddenly felt palpitations and was awakened by it.

He opened his eyes and saw a glimmer of light passing through the dark sky. In just two hours, his Will had been completely restored and had even improved slightly in the process. Without a doubt, the battle was a good way to train his Will. Luo Yuan could vaguely sense that he was very close to upgrading his Will to 20 points, however, he was not concerned about that now.

He peeked into the near future using his prediction ability and the scene remained the same, showing that he was not in danger. However, before he could breathe a sigh of relief, it seemed like there was a strong and powerful energy wave that was coming from behind him. He then looked carefully through the small hole and confirmed it.

Luo Yuan got stunned as he saw an energy wave coming towards him. There was a dazzling white light shining through the Moon which now looked like a glass ball that was being shattered into tiny pieces and scattered across space. Broken pieces that remained on the Moon gradually shrunk and were soon completely vaporized by the high temperature. In just 10 seconds, the remaining core of the Moon had turned entirely red.

Luo Yuan could clearly see that boiling magma had formed which were spewing out flames occasionally. Flying in an arc, he then returned to the Moon once again. The dazzling white light had gradually faded, exposing the damage that had been inflicted on the Moon. Its shape resembled a bitten apple. Almost one-quarter of the regions had been destroyed, forming a massive hole in the Moon. The hole was there only for a while and soon became shallower as it was being filled with magma which tore through the surface of the Moon.

The Moon had become relatively small and was now the size of a soccer ball from where Luo Yuan was situated. He observed everything that had happened absent-mindedly and stood perfectly still. Contemplating what had happened, he was furious and clenched his fists in anger.

The Earth had adapted to the existence of the Moon and thus if there were any changes to the mass of the Moon, the Earth would be significantly affected as well. The ocean tides would become weaker, causing the Earth's rotation to become faster. There would also be an irregularity in the four seasons and the stability of the Earth's crust would be affected. Luo Yuan also predicted that volcanic earthquakes would occur more frequently. He could predict that even if he had won the battle, the Earth could be beyond saving. He shifted his gaze and looked at the spaceship coldly.

He had now gotten closer to the spaceship. He stopped accelerating and was moving forward at a constant speed using the inertia which was present. He took a deep breath and tried to remain calm. Luo Yuan had a tendency of acting irrationally when he was angry. All he had to do now was to continue being invisible and deliver a deathblow to the entire spaceship when was closer to it.

This was his usual way to launch an attack and he was good at it. However, this was his first time using a skill since he had acquired the Body Fusion ability. Soon, he had completely calmed himself down again and sat quietly with his legs crossed; waiting for the right moment to attack.

Luo Yuan waited patiently for 10 minutes when suddenly, the opponent stopped. They were now only 10,000 kilometers apart. Luo Yuan's expression changed slightly and he waited for a while. The spaceship was not moving and he ground his teeth as he was getting ready to fly through the fourth-dimension.

In that moment, a meteor suddenly flew past him and disappeared in just a blink of an eye. He was stunned for a moment and soon discovered that there were many meteors behind him and they were flying in his direction. The meteors were dark red in color, emitting heat from its surface. Apparently, these were the meteors that had escaped the gravitational pull of the Moon when it had exploded.

In his heart, he thought, "God is helping me!"

The kinetic energy generated during the explosion of the Moon had caused the meteors to travel at an extremely high speed through space. The meteors reached 400 to 500 kilometers per second which were faster than the speed he traveled at in his space-time bubble. At such speeds, the meteors could reach the spaceship in less than 10 minutes.

He knew what he needed to do. By estimating the distance of the meteors' trajectory behind him, he chose one of the meteors that were nearest to his flight path and slightly adjusted his path using his Will. This particular piece of the Moon was relatively big - resembling the peak of the mountain. It was rolling rapidly and violently towards Luo Yuan.

He stared at the meteor without blinking and braced himself for

the collision. After 10 seconds, both of the meteors crashed into each other and the meteor that Luo Yuan was sitting in had been completely crushed.

Before the impact, Luo Yuan had targeted the position of the meteor with his four-dimensional vision and had teleported to the back of it. It would have taken the meteor quite some time to cool down as it was extremely big and Luo Yuan noticed that it was still in its molten state.

He took this opportunity to merge himself into the lava.

Chapter 446: Self-Destruct

Luo Yuan was no longer ignorant like before. He had studied all the modern sciences and technology there was to learn. It might not be as in-depth compared to the research other scientists have researched but he now had a broader scope of knowledge than before. He had long realized that his space jump or what was known as the four-dimensional space-time bubble was very similar to quantum theory.

In quantum theory, a substance was composed of the probability wave. An electron might occur inside an atom or outside it. However, this could not be determined by the naked eye. The only thing that was certain was that the probability that it was inside an atom was much higher than the latter. Before it was "seen", no one would know where this electron was located and therefore it existed both inside the atom and outside of it. This was the famous theory of 'Schrödinger's Cat'.

The emergence of quantum theory almost broke the theories of classical Physics, but, from a higher dimensional perspective, quantum theory was not a mystery. After all, the three-dimensional world did not exist independently. Its existence was a part of the four-dimensional world; thus, the physical phenomena was essentially a projection of the fourth dimension.

Micro particles were tiny in nature; thus, any minuscule amount of fluctuation would cause it to transit into the four-dimensional world. It would constantly jump between the third and fourth dimension. In addition, every time it jumped, the distance traveled was less than 0.1 nanometers. The short interval made it almost impossible to be measured (the velocity of a space jump was 10,000

light years per second).

In the microscopic world, the human being was composed of an uncountable number of micro particles. As for Luo Yuan, it was because he had the ability to trigger all the microparticles inside him to jump that he could teleport.

In this process, he needed to consume a certain amount of Will. Secondly, the distance had to be within his vision. Once he locked on to a target, he would be able to teleport to his destination. In the past, he could lock on his target through his eyes and Sense. Since he now had four-dimensional vision, his view was now broadened and the angles were more defined. That was how he could easily break through the barriers of human eyesight and jump onto the back of a meteorite.

...

The momentum of this meteorite was amazing. After it collided with the previous meteorite, the speed only reduced a tad bit. Luo Yuan buried his body inside the meteorite but he did not feel any discomfort, not to mention the synthesized suit on his body was made of the material from an interstellar creature. The owner of this synthesized material could easily trigger a nuclear attack; thus, such high temperatures were almost nothing to him.

Just like before, Luo Yuan dug a hole in the meteorite and looked at the spaceship behind him through his four-dimensional vision. Over time, the distance between the two had rapidly shortened and the spaceship had gradually grown bigger in his view. Subconsciously, his objective was growing clearer too!

Even as an enemy, Luo Yuan felt a shock in the face of such a powerful civilization. As compared to this spaceship, the one he previously encountered was insignificant. It stood silently in space and stayed as still as a mountain. In fact, it looked like an isolated island! In addition to the numerous thick and ferocious barrels, it gave people a sense of loneliness.

It was hard to imagine that this spacecraft could move the fastest at sub-light speed, which far exceeded the capabilities of human technology. Luo Yuan could not help but shudder at the thought.

Suddenly, a meteorite that was about the size of the one he was in started burning from thousands of kilometers away under the terrible influence of kinetic energy. It gave off a bright light that was about the length of two kilometers in diameter.

Then, the barrels of the spaceship began to shoot continuously and the numerous meteorites in front of it, regardless of what size they were, were burnt into a light and turned into ashes under high temperatures.

"Electromagnetic gun!" Luo Yuan scowled. Through the subtle dissipation of the current in the barrel, he could determine that it was using an electromagnetic gun. This gun could shoot at a speed that was much faster than the weapons at the Reconstruction Area that even he himself could not see it with his naked eye.

His eyelids drooped and his heartbeat was getting faster. He was now about 20,000 kilometers away from the spaceship. This was as

good as a kamikaze move. In an advanced technological civilization, detecting and investigating the enemy was always the priority. Luo Yuan could imagine that the opponent had already obtained all the necessary information about him which included his abilities, limitations, and weaknesses.

Under this circumstance, that kind of information was very one-sided. The only thing going for Luo Yuan was that the spaceship was now located nearby the Moon. It undoubtedly indicated that the opponent was very confident that it could easily get rid of him. In any case, he must get closer!

He carefully observed his surroundings then slightly adjusted the flight path of the meteorite.

His brain was calculating the distance between both the meteorite and the spaceship and their flight path. Luo Yuan then adjusted the angle to the meteorite's flight path by six-degrees. Although that seemed to be only a marginal change, it would make a huge difference in the result. The meteorite was supposed to fly straight to the spaceship but would now fly somewhere about 2,000 kilometers away from it.

After that, Luo Yuan closed his eyes and emptied his mind. He had done whatever he was supposed to. The rest was up to fate.

At a rate of four to five kilometers per second, the distance between the meteorite and spaceship drew close and there was only one minute left until the end of the journey. Whether he would still be dead or alive depended on what would happen in the next minute.

He counted down in his heart.

59!

58!

...

40!

39!

...

During this one minute, the meteorite was hit by another meteorite which caused its path to be slightly deflected again. To avoid exposure, Luo Yuan did nothing and let it deviate. Fortunately, there was not much deviation from its original destination. It was supposed to be 2,000 kilometers in distance and it now became 3,000 kilometers. This was still within the limit of his teleportation.

Time was ticking but a minute now felt like an eternity to him. He quietly waited patiently and held his Zhanmadao tightly.

"It's time!"

He suddenly opened his eyes and started moving. The hard meteorite which he had been using for cover instantly burst. Before the spaceship could react, Luo Yuan had disappeared from his original location. He traveled 3,000 kilometers in 0.05 seconds and when he appeared again he was already on the armored spaceship.

The surface of the armored spaceship was dented by meteorites everywhere. Some of the dents were big enough to fit his whole body. He grabbed on one of the sharp edges to stabilize his body and immediately used his Sense to determine the situation inside the spacecraft.

Luo Yuan discovered that it was difficult to Sense through this metal. The range that his power could originally cover was 500 meters, but to his surprise, he was unable to Sense anything even within 50 meters. Fortunately, he was still able to see through this thick layer of armor, otherwise, it would have been extremely difficult to break through just using physical strength.

Just from touching the armor with his palm, Luo Yuan could already feel the incredibly tough and thick layer of armor. It was on a completely different level compared to the previous aircraft. When he grabbed it hard, it did not even have the slightest deformation. This was completely beyond his imagination and was the first time that a material could fully withstand his power. Even a hard diamond would be easily crushed if he pinched it in his hand.

Fortunately, his Sense could still pass through this layer of

armor; thus, he did not need to waste any effort to destroy it. He then teleported into the spacecraft.

Just as he entered, the alarm inside immediately rang. This sharp alarm bell that sounded like a scream resounded through the entire spaceship. Luo Yuan looked at the Glassians inside the cabin and they looked fearful and nervous. He smiled at them with a grim face.

...

In the central control room, the captain looked at the monitoring system without even blinking once. Its face had a drastic change in expression and its body shook and almost fell to the floor. This spaceship was unusually strong. To the civilization that had not left Earth, this spaceship was just like a God!

If all its weapons and ammunitions were used, given enough time, an entire planet could be destroyed and vanished from the universe. However, Luo Yuan likened this to the technology created by humans - it has a powerful exterior but was weak in the interior. Once he had broken through the exterior, there was not much resistance left. Other than a few armed robots, they had no power to defend themselves anymore. The current level of resistance could only slightly delay the time of the attack but had no other benefits.

On the screen of the monitor, a few smart armed robots were cut into half while a group of brave Glassian soldiers was holding their weapons and hiding in the corner of the passage trying to attack! Before they could see their opponent, they had already fallen to the

floor. When they died, they had a twisted look as if they saw something horrible right at the end of their life.

After a few seconds, the captain appeared at the location of the dead soldiers. Then, he suddenly looked up and glanced at the surveillance camera. In the next moment, one of the screens became completely dark.

The captain and several soldiers nearby subconsciously took a step back with a pale face. The deteriorating situation was now beyond repair. Everyone could feel that death was approaching. An army member then swallowed its saliva and finally said, "Captain!"

The captain hesitated for a while, and finally said, "Notify all personnel to rush to the emergency escape ship immediately!"

"Understood!"

The captain waved and said, "Everyone, let's go quickly, perhaps you still have some time!"

"Captain, how about you?"

"I want to start the self-destruct program. This is the highest technology in the Glass Planet. Although it has been 60 years, I will protect it from the human beings with my life. Perhaps this is the only thing I can do. Leave me behind. All of you, hurry and leave! "

A group of soldiers looked at the captain with shock but alas, the

fear of death overcame their pride as soldiers and they left the room quickly. The captain sat on the suspended chair with a defeated pale face. He looked around this familiar central control room as if to reminisce. This was not only his spaceship but also his glory which was part of his life. In the end, he had to destroy it with his own hands.

He braced himself and said with a serious tone, "Intellectual brain, start the self-destruct program."

"Understood. Self-destruct program has been initiated. Verifying permission..."

A blue light quickly swept through the captain's body.

"Three-dimensional body data confirmed. Please verify DNA."

He put his finger in the hole and there was a sharp pain. The genetic samples had been collected.

"DNA confirmed!"

"Please enter your password!"

The password was up to a hundred characters but without referring to any text or files, the captain started typing based on his memory. There were only three people that knew the self-destruct password. Before he left the home planet, he had memorized it a thousand times over so the password had been

already thoroughly engraved in his mind. He took a deep breath and carefully entered the password on the screen.

"Unfortunately, the password is incorrect. Please enter the password again!"

Cold sweat began to emerge on his forehead and he felt a little bit nervous. He thought that he had entered it wrongly so he took a deep breath to calm himself. With his fingers trembling, he entered the password again.

"Unfortunately, the password is incorrect. Please enter the password again. As a reminder, this is your last chance, if you enter incorrectly again, the self-destruct program will automatically shut down."

"How could it be? It is definitely correct."

His back had been completely soaked in sweat. He closed his eyes to recall again and then re-entered. This time he carefully inputted each number. He pressed 'OK' determinedly.

"Unfortunately, the password you entered is incorrect. Self-destruct program is deactivated. Please restart again after three days." The intellectual brain's voice spoke again.

"This is not possible! This is not possible! I couldn't have remembered it wrongly!" The captain suddenly stood up in disbelief. He stared at the screen and his fingers kept trembling.

"You..."

Then, a bang sound issued. The closed door was opened violently.

A tall ferocious figure appeared in the doorway.

Chapter 447: Killing

Meanwhile, Luo Yuan did not notice that the spaceship almost self-destructed a second ago.

He broke down the door and quickly walked into the sophisticated central control room. He took a glance around the chamber and found the operating dashboard in front of him and then looked at the only Glassian who remained there.

His attire was extravagant and there was a badge carved with a map of the galaxy on his chest. However, it was apparent that it was not the solar system. Based on his attire and the accessories he had, he was no ordinary Glassian.

Luo Yuan suddenly disappeared and instantly appeared beside the Glassian. He then lifted him up with his hand locked tightly around the Glassian's neck. Luo Yuan said, "Seems like you're quite a powerful person here. How would you like to end your life?"

The Glassian struggled vigorously, however, Luo Yuan's hand was like a heavy lock which was beyond him. In just a moment, his face had turned red.

"Human... we were too careless... we had underestimated... your abilities. Everything here... has been sent to the headquarters. We will be back soon!"

Every Glassian had a biological terminal which allowed them to

communicate through different languages, and it was as easy as drinking water! Luo Yuan remained firm and said sarcastically, "50 years later?"

"It will be faster than what you can imagine. How could uncivilized people like you understand the greatness of the Glassian civilization? Ha...hahaha! Hahaha! We will not keep you... Waiting for... Long!" He was still being arrogant even though he was going to die as he found Luo Yuan to be uncivilized.

As he listened on to his raving, Luo Yuan pondered, "It's true... It took about 60 years for the spaceship to leave the maiden star of Glassian. 60 years is enough to improve their technology even if there were no breakthroughs."

60 years ago, a super computer could only perform calculations at about one megahertz per second, but today, it could perform them at one gigahertz per second where the latter one was 1,000 billion times faster.

Luo Yuan was thinking of getting more information from him but he gave up. It was meaningless and even he knew it. The gap difference of the technology between the Earth and the Glassians' were too far apart and it did not benefit anyone other than adding burden to mankind.

He applied more force and the neck of the Glassian immediately snapped. Luo Yuan threw the corpse aside and then looked at the 3D screen on the control dashboard. He took a glance at the strange characters and patterns before him and suddenly noticed the surveillance footage. He saw that many Glassians were taking the

elevator to the highest level anxiously.

The gigantic spaceship had multiple levels in its structure. Luo Yuan realized there was a mini spaceship at the top level of the gigantic spaceship and that there were many Glassians rushing towards its cabin.

It looked small compared to the gigantic spaceship but it was not small at all. By observing the body size of the Glassians, the spaceship was at least 200 meters tall and its diameter was 600 meters which formed the shape of a circular plate. It was a mini version of the spaceship which Luo Yuan was now standing in.

"You're trying to run away?" Luo Yuan thought to himself.

Once the spaceship was activated, humans would be in grave danger and even Luo Yuan would be in trouble.

He knew deep inside his heart that the reason he could enter the spaceship was because he was hiding in the meteorite and he had some good luck. This strategy could only be used once. The Glassians would have learned their lesson and they would not be careless anymore. They would destroy whichever meteorites came close to them in future.

Luo Yuan's Sense was spreading rapidly and penetrated the partitions in the chamber. He could Sense up to 500 meters around him and the top level was only 300 meters from the ground. In the next moment, he suddenly vanished and reached the top part of the spaceship with two leaps.

It was complete chaos when he appeared. Countless Glassians screamed and some were running towards the door while others were shooting at Luo Yuan anxiously. However, the chaos had stopped in just a few seconds as the chamber was occupied by a scary force. Many Glassians fell on the floor one by one as they could not stand his power.

He walked towards the mini spaceship and the Glassians fell on the floor as he passed by. All of them were extremely frightened. The Glassians in the interior chamber of the spaceship seemed to have sensed the danger and the door was closed rapidly. A few of their bodies were squashed as the door closed abruptly and blood splatted everywhere.

"Whoosh!" A strong wind blew away many of the corpses nearby and a blurred shadow squeezed into the cockpit right before the door closed.

The dome was already open but the spaceship remained stationary. A minute later, Luo Yuan was already out. Some of the Glassians rushed to the scene only to find many corpses lying on the floor. They quickly ran away but could not escape from Luo Yuan.

He smiled and then thrust a powerful punch towards the Glassians who were trying to escape. One of the Glassians who was running to the far end got hit by Luo Yuan's powerful force and his body shattered into a million pieces. The Glassians' weak bodies had zero resistance to such a rapid force which was about 20 to 30 times the velocity of sound. A bloody trail was soon formed.

Luo Yuan continued to throw a few more punches and the entire place had become silent. He continued to inspect level by level to make sure he killed all of them. Indeed, he found several of them still hiding. Too bad for them that they had no way to hide under his strong Sense.

He had checked several times until he could not find anymore living Glassians.

He lied down and felt empty as he looked at the ceiling. He felt like everything was unreal as if it was just a nightmare.

There were not many humans' lefts after the disaster. Other than the small part of the Reconstruction Area, the humans were extinct in other places. Perhaps, there was less than 10 million of the population remaining.

Suddenly, he began to feel worried about Wang Shishi and his other family members. Based on the scene he saw earlier, the condition of Hope City was quite bad even though it was not being attacked directly. Not only were the factories on the ground destroyed but it also triggered a volcanic eruption which was bad enough to cause the underground city to collapse.

Unfortunately, he could not return to Earth immediately even though he was worried as he had not much Will left to use and he had to calm down and wait for it to recover.

He seemed to recall something after resting for a moment. His

facial expression changed and he immediately got up from the floor with his saber and walked towards the control room. Based on the conversation he had with the Glassian earlier, apparently, the spaceship could communicate with its maiden star via superluminal communication.

Perhaps it was quantum-entanglement or some other more sophisticated technique. However, it was not that important at that moment. Since they could communicate with each other, they probably could control the spaceship from a distance as well. He did not dare take the risk as he was not sure if they had the technology. It would be an awful disaster.

Chapter 448: Authority

After a while, Luo Yuan entered the central control room again.

There was no one in charge of the operations. The giant square operation platform was still functioning, and on the three-dimensional screen, there were ever-changing images and fonts.

Luo Yuan grabbed the knife handle but did not do anything with it. This was a complete and intact spacecraft. When he entered, he did not intend to damage it. Now, it could still operate as usual. A spacecraft that could enter into the depths of the universe had meant a lot to human beings. It was the last retreat of mankind.

However, there was a certain risk in keeping it, so Luo Yuan planned to destroy it. He sighed, and slowly pulled out his knife.

At this moment, a melodious voice gentle echoed in the control room, "Dear powerful human being, please don't do this"

It spoke Mandarin in its purest form, without any foreign accents or Glass Planet slang in it. However, it felt ridiculous to Luo Yuan to hear the voice speaking in this language.

Luo Yuan was not scared. If the opponent had intended to kill, it would not wait until this moment. He asked calmly, "Who are you?"

"I am the control system of this spacecraft, code name Expedition

Number One, but you can call me the intellectual brain!"

"You already have wisdom?" When Luo Yuan heard that it was an artificial intelligence, his heart slightly shook. An alien artificial intelligence took the initiative to talk to him and expressed fear of dying, regardless of what it already knew with its wisdom.

"I do not know what wisdom is. If it is the capability of doing logical analysis, my wisdom is 10 to the power of 30 times of the Glassians. It is ten billion times more than all the smartest devices on earth. At the same time, I have 100,000 sets of quantum bits, allowing me to handle 100,000 projects simultaneously. In fact, before this, I have calculated that one of the meteorites had abnormally changed lanes, but the warning trigger did not get any attention. If I am measured in this way, you can say I have wisdom."

This computing ability was simply incredible and totally beyond imagination. Luo Yuan was shocked and secretly felt lucky. He kept silent for a moment and continued to say, "Very strong intelligence, but this is not the reason to keep you alive. The more powerful you are, the more dangerous it is for me."

"Human, I am not here to cause any danger. My essence is a logical chain composed of numerous commands. My program is set in a way that all my actions need authorization."

"Can an artificial intelligence be afraid of death?" Luo Yuan asked. Maybe what it said was true, but he would not easily believe it. Before the apocalypse, whether it be fiction or film, artificial intelligence had always been a threat to mankind. As it was an

alien artificial intelligence, no one would know ever know whether or not it was telling the truth.

"I do not know. My logic is stopping me from dying!"

"Are all the artificial intelligence units in Glass Planet like you?" Luo Yuan asked.

"There are no relevant data to prove that, but I think I'm special!"

Luo Yuan shook his head and said, "I will not take the risk. The spacecraft is too dangerous! It can easily destroy the earth and mankind, and I know nothing about you. If you have no other reason to be here, I must destroy you! "

The intellectual brain was taciturn for a moment, and a large number of alien wordings appeared on the three-dimensional screen. After a long pause, the sound did not come back, "I can help you attain the highest authority to control the spacecraft."

"Are you kidding me?" Luo Yuan's heart shook but remained calm as he said, "Although I do not know Glass Planet well, the extent of logic I know tells me that this would be impossible. You should know the consequences of trying to trick me!"

"Dear powerful human, I am the very definition of logical wisdom. I cannot lie and certainly do not cheat!"

"According to the Glass Planet Space Law's Article 12, the fourth

rule states that the highest authority may have the right to authorize any creature to have the lowest level of authority, while in Article 25, the second rule states that when a higher level of authority dies, the owner of the authority will take over as the highest authority automatically. Therefore, it is totally reasonable, as long as you can clone the captain!"

What the intellectual brain said was totally logical and nothing sounded like it was made up. Luo Yuan could only be skeptical but trusted its words, "So, which corpse belongs to the captain?"

"He's in front of you; 5.2345 meters away!"

Luo Yuan looked away and found the captain, "Is it a must to clone him? Can't we just use the corpse?"

He did not have much time.

While he was talking, he waved his hand gently and with the power of Will, the corpse automatically stood up. Its broken neck was cracked back into the original position. He stumbled after a few steps.

"You are more powerful than I had expected, but during the authorization, I must verify the DNA, voice, and vital signs of the captain, and also enter the password!"

"Vital signs?" Luo Yuan whispered.

The next moment, his Will easily invaded the body of the dead captain. His heartbeat that was non-existent suddenly started to beat fiercely. His pale face had also turned red abnormally and the eyelids suddenly opened. He was walking like a controlled puppet.

At first, his pace was slightly stiff, but as time went on, the more smoothly the corpse walked, just like a normal person would.

Subsequently, Luo Yuan operated the corpse's vocals and tried over and over again. The vocal cord of the Glassians was different from that of a human's. It was thinner but sharper. Luo Yuan tested this for ten minutes and was finally able to crack the variations in tone.

He controlled the body and asked in Mandarin, "What about the pass down?"

"Unfortunately, you have entered the trigger phrase. You do not have the relevant authority." It was a schizophrenic patient, and while it talked, the main screen suddenly flashed a video. In the video, there was a Glassian captain saying something odd in the Glassian language, before pressing and holding his finger up in front of him. In a short while, a virtual keyboard popped up.

His fingers quickly entered the password on the virtual keyboard. Luo Yuan looked at each button without blinking. Although these were alien words which Luo Yuan did not recognize, his powerful memory enabled him to remember all of the sequences of the keys.

Luo Yuan had a clear understanding in his mind. He controlled

the corpse and uttered something in the Glass Planet language, similar to the video that was shown.

As it was his first attempt, his commands were totally out of tune and the intellectual brain could not comprehend that.

He repeatedly tried for a dozen times, and finally, he successfully captured the unique intonation.

Then, he followed the steps to control the body to verify the DNA, before entering the password. The intellectual brain suddenly turned into Mandarin. Next, Luo Yuan entered some personal information according to the prompt given by the intellectual brain.

A few minutes later, with the cooperation of the intellectual brain, Luo Yuan suddenly transformed and became the highest authority in the spacecraft.

"Dear Captain, I am the control system in this spacecraft called Expedition Number One. I am at your service."

"Change all the Glassian language settings to Mandarin." Luo Yuan immediately issued his first command.

"Understood!"

Just as he finished commanding, all the languages on the screen had been quickly switched to Mandarin.

"Clean up the bodies and blood in the spaceship immediately!"

"Your command has been sent to the service robot. It is predicted that all the bodies will be cleared in 30 minutes."

"Stop the connection with Glass Planet." Luo Yuan ordered again.

"Sorry, you do not have the permission!"

Luo Yuan was surprised for a moment. It seemed like this highest authority had limitations or wasn't really even the highest authority. However, he could understand as this spacecraft was well-equipped, and the journey here took more than hundreds of years. If there were no corresponding countermeasures, the higher management of Glass Planet would not be able to rest assured.

"Intellectual brain, how does the spacecraft connect to the planet?"

"With a quantum communication device."

"Where is it? I'm going to check it out!" Luo Yuan had an idea on how this intellectual brain worked with its kind of logic. It was bounded by rules and every one of its moves had a corresponding provision, but within the rules, it was certainly independent and had flexible capabilities.

When he finished his sentence, the three-dimensional screen immediately appeared the location of the device.

Luo Yuan took a look and walked to a large plug-in cube at the bottom of the left console, and pulled out the whole plug.

"Warning, warning! The quantum communication component appears to have lost its connection, we suspect that it has been damaged. The spare parts will be shipped over in a minute!"

After some time, a variety of tools and dozens of long-armed industrial robots which dragged along the quantum communication equipment spare parts had arrived. Immediately, they started the installation but before they were able to successfully reinstall it, Luo Yuan had destroyed them.

The intellectual brain repeated the command again, and when the spare parts were delivered, Luo Yuan destroyed them once more.

The spare parts finally ran out of inventory, when it hit the eleventh round.

"I have run out of spare parts in the inventory. The production request has been sent to the factory area. The production of quantum communication equipment spare parts starts immediately, and restocking the inventory reserves are estimated to be complete in 15 minutes..."

Luo Yuan felt a bit of a headache. He had thought that when the spare parts ran out of the inventory, there was nothing the intellectual brain could do. He never thought that the spacecraft had a fully automated production line to be able to produce anything in a short time.

Of course, he could destroy all of them here, but it was impossible for him to stay here forever.

"Intellectual brain, stop the production at once!"

"Dear Captain, this is written in my core program, which I cannot disobey. I need a higher level of authority!"

Luo Yuan was angry, "Do you want to die?"

The intellectual brain did not speak, but the plant area immediately appeared on the three-dimensional screen, before quickly zooming in to show the location of a small part underneath a console.

Luo Yuan understood the hint and immediately rushed to the location and pulled out the plug.

"Warning, warning! Unable to contact the production areas. It is suspected that the factory's quantum control center was destroyed. Attention relevant engineers, please rush to repair..."

Then, Luo Yuan continued to be in the control room and

destroyed all the quantum communication devices that were produced by the previous command. Finally, everything was cleared and things had quieted down.

He was finally relieved, "Intellectual brain, tell me about this spacecraft."

"Yes, Dear Captain. This is the first long-distance spacecraft in Glass Planet. Its horizontal diameter is five kilometers and the vertical diameter is 75 kilometers. It has eight sets of nuclear pulse engines and 24 sets of trillion kilowatts of nuclear fusion furnace. It can reach a maximum speed of 180,000 kilometers per second.

It has four main cannons and four main anti matter guns and ammunition, 125 laser rapid-fire guns, in addition to 12 smart missile launchers that are capable of launching various types of smart bombs.

In addition, the spacecraft also has a strong advanced manufacturing capability. It can easily produce all industrial goods within the spacecraft. At the same time, it was able to synthesize artificial food through the elemental mixture.

Theoretically, the spaceship would be able to continue sailing as long as they could get meteorites and water from the universe.

It also has... "

While listening to the continuous description from the

intellectual brain, Luo Yuan could not help but be slightly worried. This was the technology dated sixty years ago. It would be even more fearsome if it was Glass Planet's current technology. Luo Yuan could not imagine how it would be should they come back.

Shortly after, Luo Yuan left the spacecraft and launched his space-time bubble to fly back to the earth. Before leaving, he ordered the intellectual brain to station the spacecraft somewhere.

Firstly, he was not ready to figure what to do next, and secondly, it was also a test.

Of course, he knew that he could not do anything if the intellectual brain really had deceived him. At the time, it was either him or the remaining surviving humans that would die. Based on the introduction by the intellectual brain, he was now clear that the nuclear-powered antimatter intelligent space bomb was designed specifically just to attack him. This weapon would ultimately defeat all his capabilities. Once he was locked as a target, he would definitely be dead.

He had also thought of destroying the intellectual brain, but it also meant that he would have lost the last hope of mankind.

The threat of the Glassian captain was still vivid in his mind. Regardless if it was the hatred they had before or the natural threats felt between the two civilizations, the Glassians would definitely not let humans continue to exist and or resume development.

Perhaps before long, the war would return again.

However, after this disaster, human beings had already depleted. Even with the reference of Glassian technology, human beings had not much capacity to resist the attack. Thus, this spacecraft that could fly into space was the only hope for mankind.

...

Fortunately, the worst did not happen. The spacecraft still stayed at its initial place and did not show any signs of attacking.

Luo Yuan flew at lightning speed. After a small breakthrough that occurred accidentally, Luo Yuan found that his space-time bubble had undergone enormous changes. It broke through to a staggering 1,000 kilometers per second which were six times faster than before.

Including the slow startup time, it took only 20 minutes for him to pass through the cooled over the moon. If it were to be in the past, it needed at least an hour to travel 300,000 kilometers away.

At this time, the moon looked smooth from afar and all the craters had been covered up by magma.

This much-lighter satellite was now rapidly flying away from earth and was trying to recalibrate its tracks. It was foreseeable that in the next hundred years, it would keep moving back and forth due to the earth's gravity, to bring about ongoing disasters to

earth.

Chapter 449: Political Change (I)

After the massive destruction by the Glassians, the condition of the earth had deteriorated and disasters frequently occurred.

Looked down from space, the entire earth had been covered by a layer of gray, flowing fog. Although it moved slowly, it was the view from a hundred thousand kilometers away. On earth, it should be akin to a hurricane adversely affecting one's whole world.

The atmosphere was crazily getting more and more intense. Clouds of dust blew about, and even trees and rocks were also flying in the sky. It was almost impossible to witness the scene on earth with one's naked eye. The consequences brought by the nuclear-powered antimatter intelligent space bomb had gradually become serious, imminent of an impending nuclear winter.

In addition to the previous strong explosion, it had caused a shift in the earth plates. The World Island (Europe) had turned into a series of islands, North and South America had been completely separated and the entire North America had a huge hole blasted in the middle of it.

It was only a few hours since the destruction of the Glassians, but it had caused the creation of more than a hundred volcanoes. All of these volcanoes were erupting a hundred millions tons of material every second into the air which worsened the situation on earth.

However, this was only the beginning. It would take a long time

for the earth to re-stabilize from the plate adjustments. It was foreseeable that in the next six months to a few years, the number of volcanos would be rapidly increased, whilst the nuclear winter might even continue for more than a decade.

Luo Yuan pursed his lips and felt heavy-hearted. This was a terrible disaster. Even the people who survived would face a cruel moment soon.

It was not like the brutal dangers during the apocalypse – it was much more terrible. In such a severe environment, mankind would completely lose all traces of sunlight and would need to live every day like a cold winter night for a long time.

He kept flying, and in just a few minutes he had crossed 400,000 kilometers of distance and rapidly entered the atmosphere.

Over time, the view had gradually dimmed down. Strong wind with sand and stones were violently blowing around. Although Luo Yuan was inside the space bubble and isolated himself from all attacks, he could feel the terrible strong wind in the atmosphere.

The airflow around was moving at high speed at hundreds of meters per second. From a standard Typhoon calculation, this wind speed was more than a level 18 typhoon.

The whole earth had been completely tattered. The forestland had now become desolate with lodging trees everywhere. As for Europe and North America that had been seriously hit, they had become a largely barren land and was left only a few high-level

giant trees that were still standing upright.

Luo Yuan tried very hard to identify the location of Hope City. After a long while, he could roughly find the location of Hope City through the nearby terrain. There had been no trace of the city but he could only sense the strong wind.

What made him even more shocked was how there were dimples on the ground everywhere and formed as a concave in the sand wind. There were even cracks as long as hundreds of kilometers that separated the city into two.

At this time, the space-time bubble was moving at an amazing speed of thousands of kilometers per second. In order to avoid directly penetrating the center of the earth, he had been slowing down his speed when he entered the atmosphere. When he got closer to the ground, his speed had decreased to a few kilometers per second.

He slowly unraveled the space bubble, but just when his body was in contact with the outside world, he was blown to the middle of the air by the gust of surrounding strong wind.

He awkwardly tumbled into the air. He was not heavy enough and no matter how strong he was, he could not withstand the strong wind.

When he was in the midst of being blown into the air, he tried to use his Will to stabilize his body but to no avail. The weight of his Will was only a few hundred kilograms. There was not much effect

when he encountered this kind of super sandstorm.

At this point, he somewhat felt remorseful. He was in a rush when he came out and did not carry the belt that was made of the Demonic Horseman's mane, otherwise, he would not need to worry about strong winds like this.

He let the wind blow against him, and after a few seconds, he immediately teleported.

The very next moment, his body had already landed on the ground. This time, Luo Yuan was well prepared. Before the wind took its toll on his body, he embedded his hands into the ground to stabilize himself.

As it should be, it was already supposed to be a bright sunny day the next morning, but now it was completely dark and was obscured by the endless sand.

Immediately, his sense penetrated the ground and with teleportation, he disappeared from his original position.

The first layer underground had been completely run-down. The strong wind blew through the collapsed region here, where most of the buildings had been dilapidated. When he walked along the street piled with thick sand, he could see corpses scattered everywhere.

Fortunately, it was a warehouse district with only a few staff,

thus, there were not many casualties.

Luo Yuan went through four levels consecutively and it was the same for all. There were totally empty and in ruins.

He started to feel worried and eagerly wanted to know the current situation of Huang Jiahui and the rest.

He split through the basement and immediately jumped down to the next level.

Fortunately, the lower he went, the better the situation was. When he reached the seventh level, apart from the thick sand on the ground, there was not much impact on others. However, the power had been completely disrupted and it was dark everywhere.

It was already the residential and lightly-polluted industrial area. On the street, there were people panicking everywhere. A lot of military police were standing on every street attempting to enforce basic law and order.

"... The government is exploring new methods, and everything will be fine. I hope everyone can remain calm, as we have a lot of food and water reserves. Agricultural areas are still operating well. I believe that if we unite as one, we will get through any difficulties..." A government worker was holding a tweeter and shouting loudly.

Luo Yuan listened quietly for a while. He remained silent and

walked through the crowd to the passageway.

It was the same on the eighth floor. Crowds were on the streets. Some people were crying and some looked numb. Some of them were panicking with uncertainties and kept trembling. Many of the people were holding fire torches and wandering on the street without a purpose, like a group of soulless zombies.

Fortunately, it had been the apocalypse for so many years. During all these years, the people had trained to be organized and disciplined. In addition, there were a lot of police maintaining order. Although they were in despair, no untoward incidents were caused.

Luo Yuan sighed and quickened his pace. He could not wait to go home now.

Not long after, he arrived at the ninth level underground, where his villa was located. However, before he entered the door, someone was in his way, accompanied by Huang Jiahui. When she saw Luo Yuan, she finally lit up and expressed relief.

"They have been waiting for you for a long time," said Huang Jiahui. There were just so many words her heart wished it could utter, she had to bottle them all in.

Luo Yuan nodded and turned his face to the acquaintance beside her. He was the vice mayor of Hope City, Bi Jianping. His face was dim and said with a serious tone, "Hello Minister Luo, I'm really sorry to bother you. Today, Hope City has arrived a near-death

situation. As part of the executive committee of Hope City, please be sure to attend the government meeting and discuss the countermeasures."

He had been waiting for a long time and insisted on standing at the doorway. As a vice mayor, he had to be humble because the situation has not seen its worst until today. All the signals had been interrupted and the ground was covered by a terrible sand storm causing the gridlocked traffic. They were unable to retrieve any information and after much consideration, they decided to come and ask Luo Yuan himself.

The attack by the Glassians happened in the middle of the night, so the Reconstruction Area was totally unprepared. When the nuclear-powered antimatter intelligent space bomb exploded, a strong electromagnetic pulse disrupted all communications and electricity supply. They had no idea what had actually happened until this day.

Some of them had even speculated that there were some insane people who detonated all the nuclear bombs and tried to commit a suicide mission with all human beings in the Reconstruction Area. This view had been agreed on by most of the people but they had never expected that the attack this time would be 10,000 times more terrible than the nuclear bomb explosion.

Luo Yuan nodded and said, "Okay, I have some details to share with you. Let's go."

Although he was only a step away from home, due to the urgency of the issue, he did not hurry back home. He looked at Huang

Jiahui and nodded, then turned and left with Bi Jianping.

Shortly after, Luo Yuan walked into City Hall's conference hall together with Bi Jianping. When the door flung open, they caught a whiff of the pungent smell of cigarette; the air was badly polluted.

Luo Yuan glanced through the room. There were only five people attending this meeting. He looked at the ashtray that was full of cigarette butts, and apparently, these people had waited for a long time.

When Luo Yuan entered the room, everyone looked at him with a gloomy face and some had nervousness plastered all over their faces. Some of them even nodded at him with well-intentions.

Luo Yuan did not care much, and nodded to them one by one, before choosing a vacant seat to sit down.

The meeting was chaired by Bi Jianping, "In this terrible disaster, Mayor Xie Guping and the Vice Mayor Zhou Jianguo have unfortunately passed away. In accordance with the organization's procedures, the meeting will be chaired by me for the time being, and I have also invited Minister Luo from the Firearms Bureau to attend the meeting.

Today's situation has seen the worst, and we have completely disconnected from the outside world. The signals with other cities were also interrupted and we have too, completely lost contact with New Capital City. Thus, the first thing to prioritize is to

restore the communication and power..."

"I have to interrupt!" Luo Yuan chimed in.

"Minister Luo, please go ahead." Considering how he was such a human weapon, Bi Jianping dared not disregard him.

"There is no need to contact anyone. In fact, New Capital City has disappeared or should say that most of the Reconstruction Areas have disappeared. Now, the survivors left are only from Hope City and the few surrounding cities," said Luo Yuan in all seriousness.

The information from Luo Yuan was like a strike of thunder to everyone's heart. Before he even finished his sentence, a few people had already stood up and said, "No, this is impossible. Even if all the nuclear bombs were to explode, the power would not be strong enough to destroy the Reconstruction Area."

If this was a nuclear bomb, it really was incapable of destroying the Reconstruction Area. After the apocalypse, all the main cities were built deep underground and only the heavy industrial areas on the ground were left. As long as the nuclear bomb had not exploded in the city center, its power was indeed limited.

Luo Yuan shook his head, his face heavy, and said, "All of your guesses are wrong. It was not caused by a nuclear bomb and was certainly not done by human being. It seems like your level of getting confidential information is still not high, but there is no need to keep it under the wraps anymore."

While Luo Yuan shared his story, everyone gradually became taciturn and uneasy as he was not just any normal evolved human but one of the top management members of the Firearms Bureau. This bureau reported directly to the high-level committee, so the level at which he could obtain confidential information was totally incomparable.

"All this while, there has been a lot of speculations about the biological big bang during the apocalypse. A lot of evidence refers to the supernova explosion, but in fact, it is not the case at all.

It was caused by an alien virus. The purpose was to test on this destructive virus. For them, it was secondary but the real target was to destroy humanity.

Five years ago, these aliens had come to the solar system by their spacecraft to cast the virus, but the impact was not too huge back then. Until the next outbreak of the solar system as affected by the supernova, the virus mutated and this had led to disastrous consequences.

Until a few months ago, the Reconstruction Area had found some traces of aliens and when they finally confirmed and started on the defense plan, it was already too late.

The attack this time had blasted the whole Europe into piles of islands, and a huge sinkhole had emerged in North America. Other than Hope City and the several cities nearby, there were no survivors left."

It was a long silence in the conference room and the air reeked with tension. Bi Jianping lit up a cigarette with a trembling hand, "Do you have any evidence?"

Bi Jianping was pale, however, at the bottom of his heart he had believed the story told by Luo Yuan. There had been so many actions by the Reconstruction Area and he had noticed some clues. For example, during the last few months, many of the new research institutes had suddenly moved to New Capital City. Even the rocket base professors and experts of Hope City were half being deployed. It was all done by the Mayor and no one knew the real story behind all these movements.

However, although intellectually he had some belief, emotionally he could absolutely not digest this new piece of information. He would rather believe that it was done by some insane people but not the fact that the aliens wanted to destroy mankind, at least it was not so desperate as compared to the latter one.

"Evidence... is this considered evidence?" Luo Yuan suddenly pulled out something and placed it on the table, which was a gadget that he found from a Glassian. Luo Yuan was amused with it so he brought it back with him.

It was a long strip of material in white. The workmanship was fine and the color was soft. When they laid eyes on it, they knew that it was definitely not from the times of the apocalypse.

"What is this?"

"I don't know, maybe it is a toy of alien," said Luo Yuan, while gently pressing down on somewhere dimpled.

The long strip immediately floated in the air to about half a meter in height, then on its surface, there were a number of small cubes raised. It shortened and transformed, and soon it turned into a ball formed by numerous cubes.

Then, a melodious yet exotic style of music echoed in the room. The surface of the cube moved with the rhythm, like waves rising up and down in unison.

This quality of the music was very clear, however, at this time, no one had the interest to enjoy it but felt cold and hopeless.

Luo Yuan took away the ball and gently pinched it. The ball broke and the music suddenly stopped.

He put all the broken pieces on the table. Each piece was about the size of a green bean. When everyone came near to see, they found that there was no circuit boards or chips in it.

Other than the white material, there was nothing else. Although it was just something trivial, perhaps a toy of alien, it totally could not be replicated by human technology.

"Perhaps there really is an alien lurking about to destroy mankind. But I still do not understand that if the aliens wanted to destroy mankind, why are we still alive? If the technology of the

opponent is so advanced, it is impossible to miss destroying this place." A deputy mayor voiced out, trembling in disbelief.

Luo Yuan glanced through the crowd and smiled, "The reason why they missed this spot is that they're already dead. Currently, 600,000 kilometers away in space lies a floating abandoned spacecraft."

Everyone looked at each other. They were smart and fully understood the meaning behind Luo Yuan's words. It had hidden threat inside but they could not say anything but to keep mum.

If that was true, the power owned by Luo Yuan had already completely overridden mankind. In everyone's heart, they whispered, "There is going to be a political change in the Reconstruction Area!"

"I propose to suspend the meeting!" Bi Jianping suddenly said. When he spoke, he looked at Luo Yuan with mixed feelings.

Chapter 450: Political change (II)

Once Luo Yuan had adjourned, the meeting resumed.

Bi Jianping finished his cigarette and lit up another one. Suddenly the room was filled with smoke and its strong smell.

No one spoke for some time. The news that they just received from Luo Yuan was too shocking, to the point that they were lost for words.

When they thought of the extinction of mankind and how the earth would be destroyed, they felt desperate.

"The situation is worse than what we previously speculated. We have to prepare for a long duration of defense. What material reserves do we have now? Water and food, I meant," said Bi Jianping as broke the silence.

These two were the most important of all supplies – as long as they solved the problem of food and water, the city would not be in chaos.

"If the power supply still cannot be reinstated, it would be able to at least sustain for another three months." A vice mayor who was in charge of agriculture said, "Although agricultural areas can still operate, there is no sunlight to support the growth of the mutated plant. In addition, the water supply of Hope City comes from underground and it requires power supply too. It can be said that without power supply, the city would be a desolate one."

"It seems like it is imperative to restore the power supply." Bi Jianping said and looked heavy hearted.

"However, the power plants are thermal power plants that are built above the ground. They have already been destroyed but the debris can't be found. We still have some steam turbine power generators in the warehouse, but where can we get the fuel? We are now trapped underground and are not able to get out from here unless we tear down all the houses in Hope City." A mayor who was in charge of industrialization said, as he deeply inhaled the smoke of his a cigarette.

"That would be a stop-gap measure." Bi Jianping said, "But even if we did tear down all the houses in Hope City, it won't sustain us for long and we can only wait for the storm to subside."

At this time, the ground shook vigorously and a loud bang echoed at the top of their head. Apparently, there were some collapses again. The quake lasted for ten seconds before it gradually died down.

The earthquake had occurred more than ten times since yesterday. It was too frequent to the point of familiarity. After a while, they continued the meeting.

"I think there is at least some food and water reserves that can temporarily ease the situation. However, the problem of keeping warm cannot be dragged anymore. The temperature has been dropping rapidly these days and it is expected to enter the winter

season in the next two days. In the past, the weather has been warm throughout the year so everyone lacked warm clothing. Due to this, there could be a number of death cases caused by freezing." The marketing minister raised his concern on the foreseen crisis.

Everyone looked haggard but there was nothing they could do. There were still many clothing inventories but most of them were battle suits made of fiber, even the quilt was very light, almost weightless. Such clothing was definitely not able to protect them against the impending cold weather.

"I should also mention that since last night, the number of suicides has exceeded 20,000 people, and they are rather pessimistic now, coupled with the problem of freezing to death that was mentioned by Mr. Zhou Wenbo. I think we should be more vigilant." The secretary of the Political Committee, Li Feng, rubbed his eyebrows and said exhaustedly, "We also have a serious shortage of police officers – we have to urgently recruit a new batch."

Everyone was silent and felt helpless.

Today, Hope City had become a completely isolated island. Externally the environment was worse, while internally there was crowd panic. Thus, the situation had been as difficult as a taut wire. Now, it could still be barely kept ordered due to the inertia and the side effects of the truth.

If the power supply continued to be interrupted, darkness would be continuously enveloping the underground city. So, when winter came and constantly suppressed it due to depression and despair,

the spirit of the residents in Hope City would collapse and they would end up breaking the rules and laws. At that point of time, it would be inadequate and exhausting for the few tens of thousands of ordinary police officers.

And that's only considering the ordinary people...

In Hope City, there were a lot of evolved humans and the Firearms Bureau. This department was completely independent of the municipal government. Both parties did not have any subordination. In the past, there was still the Reconstruction Area acting as the intermediary to coordinate and communicate, but now that the situation was all a blur, they could not be too sure of what the other party's thoughts were.

What was even more troubling being that the Firearms Bureau in Hope City was led by the very person who killed the aliens. Even if all the forces in Hope City were gathered, they were still not able to defeat that person.

Strength was the foundation of all power. Without power, the existing authority was shaken to its core and had become uncertain of their fate.

"I think we should pull Minister Luo in and not exclude him. At least with his existence, we would not need to worry about the evolved humans." Finally, the Minister of Organization, Ye Yong, started the topic that everyone had deliberately avoided, but could no longer be avoided.

"I think we can, but what position should we assign him to? He is at the rank of a lieutenant. At that level, his rank is higher than that of all of us. Besides, if we were to count on the achievements of human beings, no one could upstage Minister Luo. He saved mankind, and in one way or another, he also saved every one of us here." Bi Jianping interrupted.

When they heard about it, the facial expressions of some of them had slightly changed. They vaguely could sense that a storm was brewing and the decision made today would go down in history.

...

When Luo Yuan was on his way back, he could feel the chill in the air. It was April now, and it was supposed to be around 35 degrees, but now, it did not even come close to ten degrees Celsius.

He quickened his pace and walked towards his house. It was dark inside the house too, with only a few handmade lights lighting dimly in the living room.

But these dim lights had warmed up Luo Yuan's heart, which had been cold and lonely since the night before.

After the few women saw Luo Yuan, they could not stop crying. Since the disaster last night and upon discovering that Luo Yuan was missing, they started to worry and was scared that he had possibly met misfortune. However, as his women, they had to bear with such fears and gradually get used to it.

"Well, don't cry, everything's alright."

"Have you eaten? Let me cook for you," said Huang Jiahui, as she wiped her tears away.

Luo Yuan nodded his head. "I am not too hungry; just a simple meal will do."

Now in his body, he had two sets of energy systems – one was the cold fusion mitochondrial energy and another set was the energy that came from food digestion. The former had replaced the latter, thus to Luo Yuan, there was no difference whether he had consumed anything or not. The only thing was that he still could not live without water.

In the afternoon, there were government officers who consistently came to visit. In the past, they would bear gifts when they came, but this time, they were all empty handed, but with a respectful and extremely careful demeanor.

Luo Yuan was a bit confused but also sensed that the situation in Hope City had been turbulent and something was surging. In the evening, Wang Shishi who went out to the crowd suddenly ran back home in a hurry.

"Brother Luo, did you really exterminate the aliens and save the Reconstruction Area?" She asked him before she could take a breath, with a surprised look and eyes blinking in disbelief as if this was the first time she got to know Luo Yuan.

"How do you know that?" Luo Yuan looked surprised and shared that he did not tell his family anything about the alien yet.

"There are government servants outside who do the publicity. Don't tell me that it is true, that there were aliens and you have killed them!" Wang Shishi exclaimed.

His villa was located in a remote area with only a few people living nearby. It was quiet and peaceful. He listened attentively and suddenly all kinds of subtle sounds were drilled into his ears. He was able to hear the story that was published by some people several kilometers away.

Huang Jiahui and a few people next to him were shocked and looked bewildered when they heard about what Wang Shishi had just said. As for the new comer, Ye Qiuyu, she was gasping in shock while she covered her open mouth with her hand.

Luo Yuan had no choice but to briefly share his encounter with the aliens from the beginning. After that, he did not care about the staggering look of the few women and started to harbor thoughts secretly in his heart.

The government was promoting him as a hero of mankind; the savior of the earth.

The people in Hope City was now anxious and feeling hopeless about the future. With the propaganda that the government created for him, he received an unwavering strong support in everyone's heart.

However, with such a campaign, it had more disadvantages to the municipal government of Hope City. As they publicized the achievements of Luo Yuan, it was also indicating that the power of authority had been shaken. This was also the reason in the past, where no matter how great the contributions Luo Yuan had made, he only received awards behind the scenes, with no social publicity. Therefore, there were only a few people in the top management that had a certain level of understanding of Luo Yuan, while the ordinary people knew nothing about him.

Apparently, the government had been unable to maintain the status quo and was prepared to hand-over the power and authority they had.

In fact, even if they tightly grasped onto the power, Luo Yuan would not force them to surrender. He was not someone who desired power and did not have much interest on dominating the Reconstruction Area.

However, although the current situation was seemingly safe, the real crisis was not over yet. Other than the long nuclear winter ahead, the spacecraft of the Glassians was likely to come again. He was fortunate to kill all the aliens this time, but there was no absolute guarantee that he would be so lucky next time.

The next time they came, the strength of these aliens would definitely be more frightening.

In order to extend the life of mankind, he could only think of a

way which was to take the spacecraft of the Glassians and escape to the outskirts of the universe.

However, he had the highest authority in the spacecraft and unless he died, it could not be easily transferred just like that. At that point of time, any decision would need to go through him. To the government, rather than always being constrained and intrigued, it was better for them to hand over the authority.

In fact, the government placed more urgency than he thought they would, which also meant that the situation of Hope City was even more severe.

It was not even the second day. When it was six in the evening, all the executives of the municipal government came to his house together and had a closed-door meeting.

Other than the few attendees, no one would possibly know the content of the meeting. However, after the meeting, those people broke out in a cold sweat and looked pale, but also expressed pent-up excitement.

At first, Luo Yuan thought that the situation could still be delayed for at least a couple of weeks. He had never expected that the situation was so urgent, let alone to this extent.

It felt that the municipal government was sitting precariously on a powder keg that was ready to explode. No wonder there was no one trying to take over this hot potato.

In the evening, Luo Yuan entered the city hall and got into the mayor's office.

The first order was to convene all the electrical engineer survivors in Hope City and all laboratory researchers, as well as large numbers of workers. Then, he directly triggered the space-time bubble in the office and left Hope City.

An hour later, he returned from space and came back with a metal ball – about five meters in diameter – in his hand.

This was the deep fusion furnace that he removed from the first Glassian spaceship he conquered. Luo Yuan brought back all the relevant equipment and devices so that he could reuse the waste.

This Glassian fusion furnace was very high-tech and very safe to be used. When the energy output was stopped, it automatically initiated the sleep mode.

When he put it on the ground of the city hall, the researchers and engineers immediately went closer to take a look and on their faces, was a look of shock and excitement.

Each of the complex smooth surfaces, each of the specific materials and even the alien metal inscriptions had attracted and amazed everyone.

"Don't be curious now. You have a lot of time to do research on it. Now, please start to test it but please be careful and safe." Said Luo

Yuan.

The Glassian civilization and humanity were two completely different things and there was no one who had experience with nuclear fusion. They could not even resolve the thermoelectric conversion fusion furnace that was beyond the technological prowess of mankind.

However, there was no need to learn it. As power output device, its basic principles were the same, where all current passes through the positive and negative output. The more advanced the technology was, the easier it is to operate.

It had only three operation buttons. By just analyzing for a while, they had figured out the specific meanings of the several buttons on the text.

Sleep, shut down, and start.

When the fusion furnace shut down completely, it stopped working. In order to unlock the bunker, they could simply open it by just pulling the ring on the surface.

After the analysis by researchers, they found that the fuel inside was not ordinary hydrogen, nor the helium 3 that was used on human nuclear fusion, but an ultra-pure water. Of course, this was the deep fusion furnace, it did not matter even if they used normal pure water.

Apparently, the fusion furnace technology had been very mature in the Glass Planet and was widely used. Even the intelligent robots and smart bombs also came with a miniature nuclear fusion furnace. Thus, it was very safe and did not cause any danger as the engineers tested it. However, Luo Yuan thought that it was necessary for him to go to the spacecraft again to get the intellectual brain so it could translate Glassian language to Chinese and have it printed into a book so that he could conduct organizational learning.

It was foreseeable that the contact with Glassian equipment would be more frequent, so it would be easier if humans could understand the Glassian language. It was a prerequisite to fully understand the Glassian technology.

When it approached midnight, a large number of power engineers had begun to conduct small-scale testing. When lamps were lit up in the hall, it suddenly became brightly lit, as compared to the previously dim hall.

"Mayor, its maximum output power is amazing! The electrical current is almost endless. Fortunately, it can be automatically adjusted according to usage, otherwise, we will not be able to find a suitable transformer." A principal engineer at the power station who narrowly escaped from the disaster excitedly shared to Luo Yuan.

"When can we implement it massively?" Asked Luo Yuan. It was midnight now and the weather was getting colder. The temperature had dropped to almost -10 degrees Celsius. If the solution was still pending, it would be getting worse and potential

freezing to death might just occur.

"Now, the network in Hope City was still in tense repair. Most of the bulbs and electrical circuit had been burnt due to the previous electromagnetic pulse from the disaster. We have to test and reinstall it all over again and can only restore the power generation when we are able to confirm that they are safe. It is estimated to get the power supply restored three days late in the afternoon." When the principal engineer talked to Luo Yuan, he was slightly nervous.

"It will be too long; our people will not be able to wait that long." Luo Yuan shook his head and waved his hand.

The Vice Mayor Bi Jianping who was directing nearby quickly came over. Now that he was in awe with Luo Yuan. It was completely a different thing to see as compared to the time when he merely heard about it. In just an hour, an alien fusion furnace appeared, and it fully justified what Luo Yuan previously said, proving its authenticity.

"It seems like we need to gather more workers and train a bit to repair the electrical network. During this time, we have to start up a plant to produce heating equipment and warm clothing. I do not want to people freezing to death. It is uncalled for."

The factories on the ground that were destroyed were the polluted metal smelting and chemical factories. In the underground area, there were more preserved factories. There was no technical difficulty to start the production of heating equipment.

"I will immediately go and implement it." Bi Jianping said quickly.

"Wait, one more thing." Luo Yuan stopped Bi Jianping. He looked serious and said, "Now the residents in Hope City is panicking and we cannot let them do nothing and be pessimistic in the dark. We have to keep them moving. You go back and discuss with the rest on what we can do specifically. It does not matter even if it wastes some materials."

Chapter 451: Political Change (III)

Luo Yuan was perusing the files and documents regarding Hope City in the Mayor's office.

His speed of resolving all issues was shockingly fast, especially with the aid of his 16-point of Intelligence. In under 15 minutes, he had finished reading a stack of documents.

Luo Yuan sighed and felt depressed as Hope City was facing a huge loss after the disaster. It caused about 700,000 deaths. Although the disaster happened around one to two o'clock in the morning, there were many people still working in the factories. Hence, there was no difference whether it happened during nightfall or in broad daylight.

Of course, that was not the only reason that caused so many deaths. There was a total of six industrial zones in the Reconstruction Area including those in the underground city. Although the heavy pollution in the industrial zone on the upper ground was crucial, it was just one of the many with approximately 500,000 workers.

Moreover, those workers were divided into two shifts - day and night. Based on usual circumstances, the maximum number of deaths was about 250,000 workers.

In fact, Hope City had been attacked by two level eight creatures a while ago - there were a few industrial zones yet to be rebuilt. Many of the workers sacrificed their own free time to help on the

reconstruction and establishment work at night in order to speed up operations. At the same time, the former Mayor and Deputy Mayor were also helping to oversee and coordinate matters at the work site as well.

Those 100,000 people did not manage to evacuate and take cover underground when the disaster happened. All of them died immediately due to the explosion of the nuclear-powered antimatter intelligent space bomb.

As a result, there were only 2.4 million of a population left compared to the original population of more than three million.

There were about 28,000 researchers and scientists which amounted to $\frac{1}{80}$ of the total population, and about 40,000 engineers and technicians which are $\frac{1}{60}$ of the total population.

The ratio was even higher than the time before the apocalypse, and it was the current numbers after the new capital city had taken away some of their manpower.

However, it was actually normal as Hope City was prioritized as the most important city of the Reconstruction Area - its research and development standards were ranked just below the new capital city. Moreover, it was difficult to compare the importance of research when everything was at peace versus the apocalypse when humans were struggling to survive.

However, although there were quite a number of researchers and engineers, it was not sufficient to redevelop civilization. Based on

the number of researchers and engineers they had, it was considered fortunate if civilization was not on a downward spiral. They needed ten times the current numbers of researchers and engineers to maintain their standards of technology.

Fortunately, the technology of cloning was now advanced enough to clone humans, hence, the population had become part of the manufacturing plant of the factories. They could increase the production of researchers and engineers with the cloning technology. It was not an issue, as long as they had enough time.

He sighed softly and turned the chair around. He looked at the map of the Reconstruction Area on the wall and then circled three of the cities nearby Hope City. It was Twilight City, United City, and Victory City.

Although those three cities were nearby Hope City, it did not get destroyed by the nuclear-powered antimatter intelligent space bomb. Many survivors remained in the underground city. However, their situation was even worse than Hope City and the survivors would not be able to survive for long if search and rescue missions were not being conducted as soon as possible.

They must at least get the situation checked thoroughly first.

Luo Yuan picked up the intercom phone and said, "Come in."

The line was definitely the most stable one in the municipal hall.

A moment later, a young guy with tanned skin entered the room silently and said courteously, "How can I help you, Mr. Mayor?"

His name was Cheng Guanghui, who was the secretary of the former Mayor. Although he had passed away, Luo Yuan did not plan to change a new one as the game of office politics was totally meaningless to him. He said, "Please contact the team members of the Firearms Bureau, and get them to gather in my office."

"Yes, Mr. Mayor. Is there anything else I can help you with?" Cheng Guanghui asked.

"That's all, please do it now." Luo Yuan waved his hand.

Cheng Guanghui immediately left the office and closed the door. Right after the door was closed, an agitated expression flashed across his face.

The Firearms Bureau and the Municipal Hall had an almost similar level of authority. The sub-department in the Firearms Bureau was a special sector and all the team members were super evolved humans. They needed to be very careful every single time they needed help from the special team of the Firearms Bureau. He had not seen such a calm yet dominant person like he was in the past one year as a secretary. That super evolved human was just like his subordinate.

However, he was the new Mayor who was the former deputy minister of the Firearms Bureau, the team member of the Firearms Bureau in Hope City was also considered as his subordinates.

...

Luo Yuan had waited for half an hour before the team members of the Firearms Bureau began to arrive one by one with a zero-absence rate. The team members felt a sense of familiarity but strange as well, during the reunion.

He had finally witnessed a legendary scene as Luo Yuan had been promoted from a normal member of the Firearms Bureau to Vice-Captain, Deputy Minister and now to the Mayor of Hope City in only six months. Apart from that, his power was initially similar to those evolved humans but now, all of them could not compete with him at all.

They had never seen how Luo Yuan exterminated the aliens, but they witnessed how the level eight creatures were being so obedient in front of him.

As they were standing in front of Luo Yuan, both of his students, Fang Peibin and his former superior Lin Feiyan were extremely nervous, while the rest were in an even worse state.

"Hey guys, since we are already quite close to each other, we should just chill! Take a seat!" Luo Yuan said gently with a smile, despite being bothered by the situation of Hope City, fully knowing that they were nervous.

Everyone immediately felt relieved as they realized Luo Yuan was still treating them like how he used to.

"M...master, did you really exterminate the aliens?" Fang Peibin asked curiously. Everyone was talking about it; it was easy for him to know.

Everyone including Lin Feiyan suddenly became very alert as they heard Fang Peibin mention it. Unfortunately, Luo Yuan did not intend to satisfy their curiosity.

"Let's talk about it later. The Reconstruction Area has turned to ruins after the disaster. There are some changes in the current situation and the existence of the Firearms Bureau has become meaningless as well. The main objective to gather all of you here is to restructure the department. Some of the evolved humans would be transferred to the municipal hall to form a special team - what do you think?"

When they were ruled by the Reconstruction Area, the Firearms Bureau enjoyed several privileges as they were trying to comfort the evolved human in order to ensure the safety of Hope City. They had more than enough benefits and back-end manpower which was considered wasteful during the apocalypse.

He would not go against it if he was still the member of the Firearms Bureau. However, he was now the Mayor of the Hope City and felt it should be eliminated.

Lin Feiyan pondered and got the message he wanted to deliver. Since then, the super evolved humans would no longer be entitled to any more special privileges. They might still enjoy some

benefits, but it would not be as great as what they used to have. If it was someone else or even the former Mayor who proposed this idea, she would have given them a punch.

However, Luo Yuan was the one who proposed it. She was not going to fight with such a legend. She said softly, "I'm fine with it."

"How about the rest?"

"Master, it's your call, we are good to follow." Fang Peibin said, in smiles.

"Sure, sure!" Crazy Wong quickly said. He used to be afraid of Luo Yuan, it was even worse now. He would definitely leave the room if it was possible.

"Alright, since everyone agrees with this, I'll issue an operation order. I've taken a look just now, and the wind has subsided. I believe it would not cause many problems to you. What you have to do now is to rush to Twilight City, United City, and Victory City to check on the situation of the survivors, as well as retrieve their contact information from the local government.

Chapter 452: Sand Storm

The street was very bright under the row of torches, a big crowd was sweeping the dust under the instructions of the government officer. Some were repairing the circuits by standing on the ladder.

At that moment, everyone in Hope City was pretty busy and there were much more people at the top level. Many of the places have fallen apart and certain regions have collapsed. A strong wind with dark gray crystals and sand blew through the cracks and made the temperature drop to below negative 20 degrees Celsius.

However, they could not feel the cold as they have been warmed up by the torches on the street.

Many of the residents were shouting propaganda while they tried to move the big rocks. Some were holding a pail with cement inside and poured it into the cracks on the ground.

Due to the absence of machinery, they were carrying the cement with their hands and shoulders. Although most of the people were wearing thin jackets, they were all sweating.

People tend to think about negative things in dire times of hopelessness. When everyone in the city began to work together, even those who were depressed would regain their spirits.

...

The Firearms Bureau was a special operations team placed directly under Luo Yuan.

When they exited the underground city, the strong wind was blowing strongly until they found themselves being blown backward. Lin Feiyan, who was the smallest sized in the group was even floating in the air and then rolled a few rounds after falling on the ground. She quickly picked herself up.

She looked embarrassed, everyone pretended they did not see it.

Fortunately, they did proper precautionary measures for the sandstorm. Everyone was wearing a glass with cotton stuffed into their nose and ears. Otherwise, it would be very difficult for them to walk.

Crazy Mister Wang quickly laid down on the ground to resist the strong wind. He then spat out the sand in his mouth and said, "Damn it! The wind is so strong! We could be blown away!"

"The wind was definitely weak for Mayor Luo, but it is undeniably strong for us. Can you talk to Mayor Luo about this?" Li Dong said and smiled.

"Li Dong, no one would think you're dumb if you don't talk." Crazy Mister Wang said angrily.

"Hey, that's enough. What kind of weapon do you think the aliens are using? It has been so long. How long can the night last

anymore?" Fang Peibin tried to calm the situation down, as he looked up to the sky.

The sky was dark with zero sunlight. It was day time, but it felt like a cold night.

"The situation is similar to winter. There is so much dust in the ozone layer. Perhaps we would need another three to four years to see the sunlight though!" Xu Zhiqiang sighed and said.

"By that time, the Earth would be frozen and mutated beasts would not be able to survive." Fang Peibin said. The temperature was below negative 30 degrees Celsius, the earth's temperature would be like that of the North and South Pole if this continues. Everyone remained silent.

"We are running out of time; stop talking nonsense. We have three destinations now – why not divide ourselves into three teams? Wu Qianru and I will go to Twilight City, Fang Peibin, Crazy Mister Wang and Xu Qian Tan go to United City, the rest will head to Victory City. Any objections?" Lin Feiyan interrupted their conversation.

"No!"

"Sure!"

...

As Lin Feiyan was embarrassed earlier, everyone quickly agreed to avoid offending her.

"That's great! Let's go, Wu Qianru!"

Lin Feiyan ran forward with a serious expression. Her body size was really small and she could possibly be blown away anytime.

Xie Junhui said softly when both of the ladies had gone further, "I think the Captain would not make it to Twilight City."

"I think so. She is so tiny, and could be blown away anytime." Crazy Mister Wang said excitedly.

"She could probably fly faster than us!"

Everyone was laughing.

"I hate to remind you, but the wind direction could bring your conversation to her ears!" Li Dong said.

Everyone was stunned and stopped talking. "Oh! I think we better depart now!"

"You're right! It's quite late already, bye!"

Everyone quickly left.

Lin Feiyan was extremely mad, she was gripping her fists tightly. She took a deep breath and suppressed her anger, pretended that she did not hear anything and continued walking. Her big jacket and hair were blowing haphazardly due to the strong wind.

"Let's walk together!" Wu Qianru ran to catch up with her.

Lin Feiyan's expression remained unchanged, but she was holding Wu Qianru tightly.

The wind was still around level eight or nine and it kept changing its direction. When they adapted to it, it became a tornado. They almost fell several times, causing them to feel annoyed and was on the verge of shouting.

Lin Feiyan found a solution – both of them carried a big rock with them. Apparently, it worked quite well!

The world was totally dark, and they could not see a thing. Lots of sand and stones pelted them like rain drops. Some of the stones were as big as a human fist. Although they were super evolved humans, they could still feel the pain.

Compared to the low temperature of below negative 30-degrees Celsius, the sand storm was a disaster to them.

Lin Feiyan's evolutionary power was to absorb heat energy. She could give off cold and absorb heat even at such low temperatures.

While Wu Qianru's power was life absorption, her strength was not powerful enough, but she was the strongest survivor.

When they arrived at the outskirts, the journey was even worse than before.

The Reconstruction Area was in a desert. Several plants had grown since the apocalypse. There was a thin layer of corrosive substances on the ground, hence, it was difficult to find any sand at all.

However, it turned into a desert again after the disaster.

The sand could even be frozen under such a low temperature due to the strong wind. It swirled into a cyclone and some had formed a moving hill on the desert, which kept moving.

The worst thing was that they could hardly see anything. Upon realizing that something was wrong, that was the time they would be buried underground.

They had been buried in the sand a few times and ate quite a lot of sand along their journey. Luckily, they were super evolved humans, or else they would have died earlier.

They finally found a cliff after walking for two hours.

"Let's take a break." Lin Feiyan said as she spat out her sand-filled saliva.

Wu Qianru was exhausted; both of them quickly found a hiding place and sat down to rest. The wind had stopped blowing, and both of them could finally breathe normally.

"Captain, let's see how much further we have." Wu Qianru said while gasping.

The electromagnetic pulse has damaged the intelligent terminal. Luckily there were a few more. Lin Feiyan checked on the intelligent terminal and exclaimed angrily, "25 kilometers more!"

"So does this mean we had only achieved less than ten kilometers of distance in two hours?! How much further do we have left?" Wu Qianru felt helpless.

"What we are going through now is nothing compared to those who passed away during the disaster." Lin Feiyan chimed in immediately.

Wu Qianru recalled the corpses from the warehouses, the burnt factories, and many more cities which had been damaged. She then felt guilty and ashamed.

"You're right, Captain! I'm done with resting – let's go! We need to get to the situation of Twilight City as soon as possible."

Chapter 453: The Ship Landing On Earth

After the Special Operations Team had left Hope City, Luo Yuan handled several documents and activated his space-time bubble, adjourning after them.

Now, the outside the Earth was a harsh, freezing winter that blanketed the entire planet. The time for humans to leave their life underground to return to the surface seemed infinitely far. The underground storage and the remaining industrial system could not save five to six million people living around Hope City, let alone rebuilding an entire civilization and development!

Taking into account the surviving population in the three cities nearby, it was still very difficult to reorganize them with an efficient administrative system.

Although the arrival of aliens almost wiped out the entire human race, it had left a ship intact.

Moreover, it was a massive ship, due to the fact that the alien technology was highly automated, the use of its interior space was pitifully tiny, even luxurious, especially in the living quarters. It was designed in such way that prolonged periods of time being exposed to tight corners can result in adverse psychological side effects. The living quarter's height was two hundred meters or so, taking up $\frac{2}{7}$ of the ship's height, and its diameter was a staggering 1.5 kilometers long.

The central ecological garden took up most of the space. With the

alien's technology, such an ecological system was trivial, as the ventilation system in the ship can assist in subtle adjustments to the air, allowing it to remain fresh and crisp.

The existent of the garden was to quench one's boredom on a long-haul flight and preventing space adaptation syndrome. For a human being facing survival crisis, such things were overly luxurious.

If the botanical gardens and some useless cabins were removed, the entire ship would have a living quarter of 1.7 million square meters, multiplied by the height of 200 meters, amounting in 350 million cubic meters of usable volume.

With the standard of having 2 people for every three by three by three volume, the living quarters could house 26 million people. Of course, that would be an ideal scenario.

The actual space usage would not be this high, but even with a quarter of its maximum capacity, it can still house almost 7 million people, which was equivalent to the remaining earth population.

As compared to Hope City, Twilight City, United City, and Victory City were just small cities. Before the disaster, every city had several million people. Since Victory City was a closer rural area, it had only 900 thousand people or so.

After the disaster, all the population could not even achieve three million. With the remaining population of Hope City, it now has only 5.4 to 6 million people. The workers had built a high-rise

building that boasted a huge housing capability on the ship.

...

Ten minutes ago, his space-time bubble was at its peak velocity.

After the last battle with the alien, he had a small breakthrough in his Will. Although it still could not reach 20 points in an instant, it was enough to make a monumental increase in his space-time bubble's velocity, from 150 kilometers per second to 1,000 kilometers per second in a single leap. The ship was 600 thousand kilometers away from Earth, but with such incredible speed, it only takes ten minutes to get there. Even with the long priming time, it would only take 17 minutes.

He saw the ship getting bigger every moment. After one minute, he slowly decelerates. Soon, the space-time bubble took him straight into the ship's interior.

"Welcome aboard, Captain."

Right after leaving his space-time bubble, the sound of the artificial intelligence lit up softly.

Luo Yuan was not surprised. With the ship's surveillance ability, it was impossible to infiltrate the ship. He briskly walked into the control room, while asking: "How is everything lately?"

"Everything is fine, except for the communication to the

production area, which had been severed. Production has been put on a halt. Please assign an engineer to repair it." The artificial intelligence said gently.

"Noted!" Luo Yuan responded monotonously.

It was a paradox if it was repaired. The artificial intelligence's core program would automatically connect to the production area's communication device, and restore it to maintain a connection to the alien planet. If it was not repaired, the production area could not activate it, and the automated factory in the ship would be idle.

This was just a temporary setback until all the humans had relocated here and learned the functioning modes of the automated factory. It would allow the disconnected artificial intelligence to regain automation and carry out production as normal, albeit with decreased efficiency.

The artificial intelligence made an announcement and remained silent after that.

"Can this ship travel to Earth?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Unfortunately, not. The total mass of this ship is 1.57 billion metric tons, and it can only withstand the acceleration of 5.3 meters per second squared, and Earth's gravitational acceleration was 9.8 meters per second squared. Therefore, traveling to Earth can cause problems and unforeseen consequences."

"Such an intense weight?" The artificial intelligence's answer caused Luo Yuan to furrow his eyebrows. Such mass had indeed exceeded his imaginations. 1.57 billion metric tons was equivalent to 15 thousand to 100 thousand metric tons of aircraft carrier before the apocalypse.

"The total mass came from three sections – the ship's mass, the resources it had gathered, and the spare parts in the storage.

The ship weighed 110 million metric tons, and the spare parts in the storage weighed 400 million metric tons. The rest of the mass had come from resources, including 530 million metric tons of pure water, 180 million metric tons of pure iron, 120 million metric tons of pure copper..."

The resources in the ship were astonishing; it encompassed almost all the elements in the periodic table. Out of all the resources, water took up the most mass – it was one-third of the ship's mass. From a human's perspective, water was the source of life. But from the ship's perspective, besides sustaining life, water was the fuel of nuclear fusion and the raw material of all the organic compounds and industrial chemical reactions. In a long-haul flight, the consumption of water was staggering.

"What about the small ship on the upper deck?" Luo Yuan probed further while arriving the control room.

"If you meant the emergency escape ship, it can travel to Earth!" answered the artificial intelligence. Luo Yuan exhaled in relief, and asked, "How does it operate?"

"Its control system belongs to my subsystem. You only have to give the authority, and it will be able to assume autopilot."

"Great, and one more thing, give me several copies of comparison data between Mandarin and the Glassian language." Luo Yuan said before leaving.

...

After a moment, Luo Yuan held a stack of papers and arrived at the ship's upper deck. After performing authority checks, the ship's door had opened automatically.

"Captain, welcome aboard. This is the emergency escape ship's control system 002, at your service."

Luo Yuan entered the control room. Its layout was similar to that of the mother ship. He took a glance, and said, "I am traveling to Earth."

"Please input the coordinates."

On a holographic screen, the image of the Earth appeared, with numerous coordinates displayed.

After some time to get familiarized, he understood the holographic screen's interface. It was able to capture hand

movements and perform a series of algorithms. Its working principle was similar to that of human's touchscreen technology. But it was unquestionably more advanced by countless times.

He gently swiped onto the display with two of his fingers in an outwards motion, and the image of the Earth was magnified, stuffing the entire control room, displaying the real Earth.

Furthermore, it was the Earth in its current situation, with its surroundings blanketed by a layer of whitish gray fog – the land was totally covered.

"Remove the polluted atmosphere layer!" Luo Yuan said with a slightly knitted eyebrow.

After that, the Earth's original form appeared, Luo Yuan pointed at a location. "Let's go there."

"Coordinate entered. Authorization to open hatch..."

"Granted..."

"Anti-gravitational engine activated..."

"Virtual reality imaging system engaged..."

"Detachment of mother ship is imminent, kindly be on standby."

The hatch opened like a petal, and the small ship rose slowly and leaving the mother ship. Within one minute, the main engine had blasted out a magnificent and dazzling light, and the whole ship cruised towards Earth steadily.

It was accelerating, and in a moment, the mother ship was left behind and shrank to what looked like a tiny dot in the universe.

Luo Yuan sat on a levitated seat, curiously inspecting the virtual reality system, but he had lost interest after a while. He retrieved the comparison data between Mandarin and the Glassian language, studying it carefully.

This paper of alien origins was harder than that of the Earth's, and it was more durable. But in reality, paper such as these was hardly used by the aliens, as it was mostly used in historical archives and backup data.

Such paper can last for a long time as it was also water and fire resistant. It can survive in natural environments for thousands of years and was treated with strictly regulated preservative measures. With every procurement, its purpose has to be clearly registered. Of course, Luo Yuan could not care less about such regulations.

He was seated at the captain's seat. Just after few minutes, the ship had entered the Earth's atmosphere.

Chapter 454: Spirit Boosting

Although it was just a spaceship for emergency purposes, it was very powerful and was able to operate in an interstellar sailing mode. Its highest speed could reach half the speed of light. Of course, it could not travel at that speed in the solar system due to the high volume of meteorites, as it would be far too dangerous. Thus, its maximum speed was almost similar to the speed of Luo Yuan's space-time bubble.

When entering the ozone layer, its speed would be reduced.

Due to the strong friction in the ozone layer, the giant spaceship was burning like a meteorite with flames around its entire body and a long blaze trailing behind. It was moving towards the Earth.

In the control room, the 3D video of the virtual scene had been replaced by the flames, and they could only watch its side view.

Luo Yuan took a glance and did not really care much. As a spacecraft traveling in a dark space, its flight did not only rely on optical detection but instead, various forms of composite detections. Even if they could not see anything outside, it would not affect its operations.

He continued to read the data and information on the screen.

The Glassian's script was quite similar to Mandarin characters, as it was descended from Hieroglyphics instead of multiple terms. Hence, the Glassian's script only comprised about 10,000

characters. In fact, he did not need to communicate in the Glassian language, as it was not necessary for him to learn the pronunciation, but rather, to remember the definition of every single character. That would be helpful for him to learn in the future.

He had an amazing photographic memory as he could remember everything he had seen. In just a short time, he had already understood most of the Glassian script. Although a long article was difficult for him, he could still manage to read the name of the buttons on the device.

The spaceship had finally landed and stopped after taxiing for a while.

It was 600 thousand kilometers away from the Earth when it departed. While it only took a few minutes to complete 590 thousand kilometers, half an hour was taken to complete the last 100 thousand kilometers.

"Mr. Captain, the emergency spaceship has arrived at its destination:

"External gravity: 9.8 meters per second squared"

"Wind power - 8.2 magnitude"

"Visibility: 0.3 meters"

"Temperature: -32 degrees Celsius"

"Atmospheric content..."

"Open the door!" Luo Yuan interrupted. Apparently, the sub-system duplicated from the artificial intelligence was not as intelligent as he thought it would be.

"Mr. Captain, the door is open. Reminder, the external environment is not suitable for life, you are encouraged to put on your space suit..." The artificial intelligent reminded anxiously.

However, Luo Yuan had left even before it finished talking.

In order to avoid damaging the underground city of Hope City, the spaceship landed on a desert nearby. The huge size of its body remained stationary in the sand storm which made it looked like a black hill from afar. Luo Yuan turned back and took a glance before walking towards the Hope City.

...

After spending half a day to repair the circuits, the electricity supply had resumed operations in the underground city. The power supply in Luo Yuan's villa was the first few circuits back in its usual operation.

At that moment, a few people were talking and laughing inside the villa.

Wang Shishi was wearing a green jacket; her cheeks were rosy, complemented by a pair of charming eyes sitting atop her cute face. She looked lovely with both hands propping her chin up on the table "Why is Brother Luo not coming back yet?" She asked.

"He must be very busy now." Zhao Yali said gently. She was wearing a tight emerald jacket, as gentle as the girls in Jiangnan province. She was very excited and surprised by the external news upon hearing that Luo Yuan had become a Mayor!

Although Luo Yuan was the deputy minister of the Firearms Bureau previously, which was of a similar rank as the Mayor of Hope City, he was only responsible for managing his department. In fact, he did not have much authority too back then, but it was different when he had become Mayor of Hope City.

"I heard that a nuclear winter is coming soon and the Earth will be undergoing an ice age. I wonder what would happen in the future." Although Huang Jiahui was wearing a thick beige jacket, it could not cover her svelte body figure. She frowned, with worries plastered all over her face.

Everyone immediately looked depressed upon hearing her sigh. The weather was getting cold, and they could feel the chill despite being in an underground city, let alone above ground level.

"Brother Luo can solve this right?" Wang Shishi said, with no worries. She had been admiring Luo Yuan for a long time, and there was nothing he could not do in her eyes.

However, he was not God, and he could not make the glacier melt. Ye Qiuyu felt rather odd upon hearing what Wang Shishi had said.

Amongst the rest, he was the one with the thickest clothing, as her body was weaker than those who had evolved several times now. She was wrapped with a few layers of clothes but could still feel the cold.

Suddenly, they heard some noises coming from outside; something could possibly have happened.

It got worse after a while. Wang Shishi could not sit still anymore and said as she got up from the couch, "I'll take a look!"

"Quickly come back!" Huang Jiahui said. The situation kept changing from time to time. They had to check it out, otherwise, they would not be in the know of the happenings as they were living in the outskirts.

Wang Shishi rushed out of the manor. At that moment, there were lots of policemen guarding the manor, and there was a group of military police on duty throughout the day and night.

"Mr. Police, do you know what's happening outside?" Wang Shishi asked.

"I'm not sure, let me ask someone to check it out." The chief

police did not dare to ignore her and quickly answered. The communication system is still down, and they were basically communicating verbally instead of using any form of device to help. Apparently, it was not about safety at all.

"It's alright, let me take a look outside." Wang Shishi left as she said.

The police were not very concerned, as Hope City was under martial law at the moment, where there were military police everywhere. Even if something did happen, they would attend to it immediately. Moreover, Wang Shishi was not an ordinary person.

After walking for a few kilometers, the crowd began to gather around and cheer. Everyone seemed to be excited and talking out loud.

Wang Shishi was listening to their conversation and was surprised with what she heard. It was shocking – she could not believe what they had said.

What did she hear? Apparently, there was a spaceship that landed outside Hope City and was looking to recruit manpower to modify the spaceship! Human beings were going to leave the Earth!

...

Since Luo Yuan returned to Hope City, he immediately called for a meeting with the city council. In order to boost the spirit of the

citizens, a series of advertising had been deployed in Hope City. At the same time, some of the government officers would migrate first.

Among all the people in the pre-migration team, apart from the engineers and researchers, most of them were the general workers.

The advertising campaign performed greater than expected. The citizens had stopped working, expressed their emotions with excitement and caused the workforce to be shut down for a short period of time.

Chapter 455: Chen Xinjie's News

It was eleven o'clock at night. The members of the Firearms Bureau returned one after another with news from the three neighboring cities around Hope City.

The feedback was not positive there, but it was not terrible either.

The three cities still maintained basic social order and did not suffer from any crippling civil disputes. The governments of the three cities, once briefed on the current situation, conveyed their willingness to comply to the leadership of Hope City.

Luo Yuan had expected such a decision. Firstly, Hope City was the most strategically reinforced city of the reconstruction area. Before the apocalypse, Beijing, Shanghai, and Guangzhou were the top tier cities, but now, Hope City was a level above them all and naturally it would be much safer than a normal city.

Secondly, under such brutal circumstances, even if they were clouded by ambition, they were not in a position to carry out any evil schemes against humanity. The worse thing they could do was wait it out, inevitable death at a slower pace.

It was not an easy task to survive the nuclear winter. If it was not for the aid provided by Hope City, the three cities would sink into hell within three months.

"I'm not sure how much longer these three cities can last," Lin

Feiyan said.

After Lin Feiyan left his office, Luo Yuan sat back in his armchair to further analyze the situation. His eyebrows were deeply knitted in thought.

He would need more time to execute the plan, he concluded. Regardless of the restoration of the ship, or the rescuing of the remaining three cities, it was impossible to complete each of them in such a short time. He had no idea how many more people would be sacrificed before all of them could safely board the spaceship.

Luo Yuan let out a long sigh. As he was in such a position of authority, he realized that he did not only obtain new power, but also an extremely heavy burden. Every single day delayed, ended countless lives.

The phone rang to break the silence. Luo Yuan picked it up with haste.

"Mr. Mayor, Deputy Mayor Mr. Bi is here with an update on the current situation." said Secretary Cheng over the phone. "Send him in!" Luo Yuan replied and put down the phone.

In a moment, Bi Jianping briskly entered the room.

"Mr. Mayor, the ship is all systems go. Manpower and resources are ready. It can be boarded as soon as we get the order!" he said excitedly while handing over a document to Luo Yuan.

Ever since the disaster, he had not slept for almost two days. He looked exhausted and pale. Even his clothes were dirty, worn and covered in dust.

In fact, this was how all the government officials looked. Time was of the essence in Hope City, with so many tasks at hand, they could not afford a single delay. Every single person was worked around the clock, and never stopped for a moment's rest.

Fortunately, for people that lived through the apocalypse, even a normal human being was now much stronger. But at this rate, even they could barely hold on much longer. Without rest, the government would soon be paralyzed.

Looking at his fatigued manner, Luo Yuan remained silent. He took the document and glanced through it quickly. He then put it on the table, raised his head and asked, "Has the wind outside died down?"

"It was tested half an hour ago. The wind strength is a Level Five, and visibility is at 10 meters. Furthermore, the temperature has dropped to approximately -40 degrees," said Bi Jianping.

The strong winds outside were caused by the explosions of Nuclear Antimatter Smart Orbital Ballistic (NASOB) missiles. The wind would not last long, but the dust thrown up in the atmosphere stayed for prolonged periods of time.

"It is too cold!" Luo Yuan's eyebrows furrowed angrily.

Grudgingly he said, "Forget about it. Since everything is ready, let's initiate the evacuation!"

Luo Yuan stashed the document inside his desk drawer, stood up, and walked out the office with Bi Jianping close at his heels.

There were fifty thousand people to be evacuated this time. Most of them were researchers and robotic engineers. There were a few civilian workers, numbering to about eight thousands of them, along with five hundred military police, six hundred logistics personnel, and enough food for all of them.

Since the communication between the artificial intelligence of the ship and the production zone was severed, the automated production sequence could not be initialized. The personnel on the site had to slowly figure out all production models in every single factory of the production zone, before they reinitialized the factory, and produced the necessary materials to restore the ship.

After all, the ship had to house five to six million people. The materials required were equivalent to that of a few seventy storey skyscrapers. Furthermore, the ship was not just stationary on the ground. Its acceleration and deceleration alone created enormous amounts of stress on the materials. Therefore, the material's tensile strength had to be impeccable.

The ship's deck was not the same as a building's foundation, which made concrete and mutated wood unsuitable for the job. To ensure the ship's structure was as stable as a building, it has to be made of casted metal welded to the living quarters. Such a combination formed a supportive pillar similar to that of a

building.

Not only did that require a lot of steel, it also needed a lot of metal processing lathe skills and higher level engineering knowledge. With the production capabilities of Hope City, building the ship was a huge project. Even with all the tools and workers allocated to the ship construction, it would still take one or two years to finish the project.

If they have waited for one or two years, everything would be too late. They could not afford to wait that long.

Right now, their only hope rested on the alien's advance factory technology.

"Do you really want to permanently stay on the ship?" Luo Yuan asked abruptly, without slowing a step. Bi Jianping stopped. His heart raced in his chest, and beads of sweat covered his forehead. He suddenly realized that he was not only the deputy mayor of Hope City, but also the second in charge of the reconstruction area.

He was too impulsive. He had bravely volunteered during the meeting to reside permanently onboard the ship.

After all, it was a spaceship that was an immense technological marvel. Whoever controlled the ship, controlled unsurpassable martial prowess. Regardless of any being, any ruler facing such a strategic machine of destruction would cower in fear.

He abruptly composed a sentence, and politely replied, "Mr. Mayor, I don't think I am the right candidate for the job. Do you have another suggestion?"

Luo Yuan waved his hand, "No, I think it will be great if you are onboard."

He was just attempting small talk with Bi Jianping, but never thought it would induce panic. Bi Jianping was the highest authority on the ship, what could possibly go wrong?

Even if Luo Yuan felt relieved, Bi Jianping was not. After all, a human was unpredictable, one could not be too careful. After some thought, he politely said, "Since there are fifty thousand people to be evacuated, five hundred military police seems a bit short. I suggest we enlist a special operation team member to also reside on the ship permanently."

"Who would you suggest?" Luo Yuan inquired as he understood his concern and did not second guess his decision.

"How about Fang Peibin?"

"Alright."

Bi Jianping exhaled in relief and regained his composure. He felt a comforting warmth spread throughout his body.

...

After midnight, a huge crowd rushed out of Hope City.

The icy wind howled menacingly and everybody in the crowd shivered against the cold. Sweaters were sparse in Hope City and every person had to put on all the clothing they had to keep them warm. There were even people that wrapped themselves in layers of blankets but the wind still chilled them to the bone.

It was much too cold. The freezing winds attacked the huddled masses with a vengeance.

Suddenly, the wind speeds dropped. Sand had clumped together under the freezing temperature and became as hard as solid rock. Even icicles were present in some of the dunes.

The ice age was fast approaching.

...

Luo Yuan was the first one in the line. His clothing was thin and frail, but he was numb to the outside chill. He turned to Fang Peibin. "This time, you are temporary deputy commissioner of police. It is a test, and also an opportunity for you. It's up to you to uphold it. If you are incompetent at your job, I will remove you from it, even if you are my student," he warned, a grave tone in his voice.

"Don't worry mentor, I'll do my best." Fang Peibin said earnestly.

He completely understood the reason he got this job was due to the fact that he was Luo Yuan's student. With his ability, there was no way he could have to assumed such postion.

The rank of Colonel in Firearms Bureau sounded fancy, but in reality, it was just an honorary title. Even he did not think much of it. On the other hand, as deputy commissioner of the police force, such an opportunity was hard to come by, and when Bi Jianping offered him the post, he agreed without much forethought.

"You have grown so much. Control your temper, learn from others, do things calmly and ask if you don't understand something. There's nothing embarrassing in that." Luo Yuan said.

"I'll keep that in mind!" Fang Peibin said diligently.

Luo Yuan still thought highly of Fang Peibin. Nobody was born with abilities. Persistent practice with the correct attitude made a person adapt quickly to any situation or surrounding. Moreover, Fang Peibin was an evolved human, and all of his attributes were already off the charts. With a little more guidance, he could deservingly become an elite member.

"How's your swordplay?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Mentor, I am somewhat familiar with it. I can make my blade shine, but I still lack the proficiency." Fang Peibin said embarrassingly.

This time Luo Yuan was shocked. It was the first time he had met a person who could make a blade shine other than himself. Even a talented being such as Wang Shishi could not muster enough Will to do that. One could only imagine the insane amount of hard-work Fang Peibin put into his sword practice.

He patted Fang Peibin on the shoulder, "Well done. Stay vigilant. Will is important, you'll understand it sooner or later."

Fang Peibin was dumbfounded. The fear he had towards his mentor receded a little. Just then, he noticed that Luo Yuan was as tall as a small giant, and asked curiously, "Mentor, how is it you've grown so tall?"

"Don't believe everything you heard!" Luo Yuan snapped back.

Fang Peibin noticed the displeasure in his mentor's expression and stopped questioning him immediately.

After a moment of silence, he said, "Mentor, I met Director Chen yesterday. I'm afraid she's not so well."

Luo Yuan stopped, turned his head and asked in a nervous manner. "Director Chen? You mean Chen Xinjie? She's in Hope City?"

Fang Peibin was stumped. He thought Chen Xinjie was his mentor's woman, but how was it his mentor was not aware of her whereabouts?

"Yeah, I met her on the street. She did not look too good, and had lost a lot of weight. When I called her 'madam', her smile was visibly forced. Something must be up."

Luo Yuan thought for a second. If he addressed her as "madam", Chen Xinjie was definitely not going to look good to have been mistaken to be much older.

After Fang Peibin's confirmation, Luo Yuan felt troubled. He recalled every single moment of their life together. Her charming smile, her apparently weak figure lying in bed beside him, all the paradoxes in the past has disappeared through time, and became deep reminiscence. He thought she was killed during the disaster and did not dare think about it. But never did he expect she had returned to Hope City.

"Do you know where she lives?" Luo Yuan asked hastily.

"In the twelfth lot, off Fuxing road!"

Luo Yuan took note silently and prepared to pay her a visit.

Suddenly an uproar erupted from the crowd in the distance. A huge black body rose up in the desert.

Chapter 456: Departure

Everyone was stunned and excited! The howl of the wind was drowned by the noise of chatter all around.

"Is this the Glassian spacecraft?" the voices questioned.

Bi Jianping who was avoiding small talk with Luo Yuan after the awkward moment they shared, ran forward to keep up with him. He had fallen behind while admiring the spaceship.

As compared to the mothership, the spaceship seemed insignificant.

Although insignificant in size, as a rescue spacecraft, it was the Glassians' last resort at escape during a crisis. It was a spacecraft that had the ability to perform interstellar travel. To be able to do that, not only would it require a strong driving force, but also massive amounts of fuel and supply storage space.

Following the principle of momentum, the spacecraft's flight capabilities was mainly designed to move at high speeds. Interstellar travel was calculated at one light year per unit fuel burnt. Based on the figures, the amount of fuel needed for the journey was immense. Moreover, besides the resources found in the stellar system, there was a blank space along the planned path where no habitable meteorites or water could be found. That said, without a gigantic supply cache stored in the spacecraft, it would be impossible to accomplish interstellar travel.

The spacecraft was 200 meters tall with a radius of 600 meters. To be precise, it was as tall as a 70-storey skyscraper and five football fields side-by-side.

It was massive. Standing next to such a huge object, a human looked as tiny as an ant. It was quite a spectacular moment to have been standing underneath it. Moreover, it was created by aliens and everyone in the vicinity was awestruck by it.

"This is a small transport ship and is considered as a backup spacecraft. There are much bigger ones in space." Luo Yuan said and chuckled.

"The alien's technology is mind-blowing!" Bi Jianping said in wonder.

As a senior member of the civil service, he had many years of experience under his belt and had seen many things in his lifetime. But with the current state of human technology, it was impossible to even envision, let alone build such a monstrous creation even if all forms effort and resources were invested into it. Aside from a spacecraft that was capable of interstellar travel, the outer shell alone would stump any human being foolish enough to attempt such a feat. What amazed him more was how Luo Yuan managed to defeat the civilization that created this extraterrestrial spacecraft?

"I will open up the spacecraft's storage compartment while you instruct the staff to move the supplies into it," Luo Yuan said while walking towards the spacecraft.

"Yes, sir!" Bi Jianping said.

Apart from the people, the migration initiative included the moving of food and daily necessities, as well as lab equipment. Before figuring out the production of synthetic food, those were mandatory for the initial phase of survival during the migration.

In the beginning, it required a little effort to boost production numbers as the facilities were run by highly skilled robots. However, the connection within the spacecraft had been destroyed by Luo Yuan, and the same had happened to the mothership. Therefore, everything had to be done manually.

"Permission verification, I am boarding the spaceship." Luo Yuan said as he entered the spacecraft. He then turned around and continued, "Open up all the cargo holds."

With the advanced detection system on the spaceship, it could pick up commands from over 10 million kilometers away. Just when Luo Yuan gave his command, the 60 meter tall cargo doors on the lower middle part of the spaceship were opened. Strips of conveyor belts rolled down from the doors to ease loading effort.

While the rest were stunned, Luo Yuan walked into the spaceship and headed to the control room.

"Welcome aboard, Captain. Ready for your orders!" said the computer.

"Permission granted for the civilians to board the spaceship." Luo Yuan said.

"Temporary access granted. To achieve official access, DNA verification is required. Shall we begin?"

"There's no need!" Luo Yuan responded hastily.

"That was close!" he muttered to himself. Luo Yuan realized that the gravity on the Glass Planet was different from that of Earth. The composition of air was different too where the oxygen on the planet was only 60% of the Earth's air. The rest of the air was distinctly different too, especially with components of sulfur dioxide, which occupied 12% of the air that caused a foul stench on the spaceship.

As an interstellar life-form, Luo Yuan could withstand the environment and he did not make any changes to that, but to ordinary people, the composition forementioned was fatal! He instantly corrected the readings. "Computer, adjust the air content and gravity on the spaceship to match Earth's air. Also, adjust the temperature to 30 degree Celsius!" he commanded.

The most suitable temperature for the human body was 23 degrees Celsius, but since the apocalypse, people got used to high temperatures, which made 30 degrees Celsius the most comfortable temperature.

"Yes, sir!" The robotic voice complied.

Soon, the gravitational pull in the spaceship stabilized and as the air content was being adjusted, a gust of wind began blowing through the compartments to purge out the initial stagnant air. Standing in the wind, Luo Yuan frowned. "How long does the air content adjustment take?" he inquired.

"Sir, it will take one hour!" The computer replied.

"That's too slow, bring on the full force!" he said.

"That will be harmful to you sir, I suggest you leave the spaceship." The computer warned.

"There's no need for that, adjust the air content adjustment to full force now!" He barked. Luo Yuan then laughed at the computer's reaction to him. He was not some weak Glassian. With his body, it would be ridiculous if a tiny bit of wind in the spaceship could harm him.

"Yes sir!" the computer complied.

Then, a strong wind rushed into the spaceship. Each and every air filter in the spaceship ran at full force. It was like a grade nine hurricane in there!

Fortunately, there was nothing fragile on the spaceship as everything was solid metal and extremely heavy, or else it would have been chaotic.

Half a minute later, the wind stopped.

"Captain, the air content adjustment is done. Same goes for the gravity and temperature. Is that all, Sir?" The computer questioned.

"Computer, perform similar adjustments for the mothership!" Luo Yuan ordered.

"Permission pending. Permission granted, sir!"

...

On the other hand, the moving had begun. Many were carrying gunny sacks while some were carrying machines and electrical components. With excitement in the air, they placed the supplies carefully onto the 60 meters wide conveyor belts into the cargo hold, ensuring everything was packed in safely as the Captain instructed.

The disembarking was estimated to take an hour. 50,000 people of the first batch entered the spaceship in an orderly fashion.

Since it was just a temporary transition, Luo Yuan did not let them enter the residential area just yet. Right after all of the people entered the spaceship, Luo Yuan ordered the computer to close the cabin doors without hesitation. Soon, the spaceship trembled and slowly lifted off the ground. After a brief systems check, it flew off

into space at the speed of light!

Chapter 457: The Death Of A Giant Lizard

As they entered the mothership, the experts and technicians started work right away. As ordered, they went straight to the production area to take a look at the Glassians' production system.

There were two floors on the mothership's production area. As compared to the spacious residential area that was 200 meters high, the layout of the production area was tight and compartmentalized. It was much lower and compact with heights of 50 meters on each floor.

The factories were arranged in an orderly fashion with numerous machines whirring away. Some were massive and bulky, while others were tiny and complexed. Parts of the machines were similar to human machines while some sections were completely new to mankind. The reason for this was because the Glassians' production system was very different as compared to a human's and their technology was way more advanced. To mankind, everything on the mothership looked like something out of a sci-fi movie, astonishing and mysterious. Without thorough understanding of the systems and regular operational practice, it was difficult to identify what each machine did.

The factories followed a standard operating unmanned module. They were strictly categorized with each product placed into rectangular containers. There were production robots in the factories but without the command of a computer, they were in hibernation mode. All the factories had stopped running. To restart production, the experts and technicians would have to give the go ahead before anything proceeded.

Luo Yuan stayed for a while to brief Bi Jianping on the precautions and procedures before he left the mothership. He then boarded the rescue spacecraft and went back to earth.

The situation had gotten worse since his departure. People in the nearby cities had migrated away to save themselves in any way they could. There was no time to waste, the spacecraft was crucial for the migration.

It was only 1 a.m. when he departed and now it was almost 7 a.m. as he got back. He stepped out of the spacecraft and looked at the pitch black sky. He felt the stress of impending doom build within him.

Compared to last night, the temperature was 10 degree Celsius lower than before. Snow started to cover the earth. In merely half a day, the layer of ice on the ground was much thicker and made cracking sounds as people walked on it. There were clouds of dust and sand in the air, and the layers of ice seemed dirty like the polluted pitch black sky.

The wind that was blowing had subsided. It was rather peaceful and quiet.

Walking in the snow, he experienced a new level of silence that he had never experienced before. The chaos that he had gotten used to before the apocalypse was long gone. In the desert, Luo Yuan did not see any living things. The weeds that were everywhere were nowhere to be found.

It was at the edge of the zone where the anti-matter bomb attack occurred. There were still mutated beasts in other areas, but they could not survive much longer. Most of the plants were dead due to the shroud of darkness that covered the land for a long time. Besides a small population of plants that evolved to obtain certain unique survival skills that allowed them to live with minimal sunlight, most would die due to their inability to carry out photosynthesis.

Without plants which were the base of almost every food chain, the entire ecosystem would collapse in no time.

...

"Ding! Your battle beast 'Giant Lizard' is dead!"

The notification from system popped in his mind as he walked his way around the reconstruction area. He paused and opened the attributes panel.

Giant Lizard's name appeared to be gray on the panel and soon, it dimmed and four seconds later, it completely disappeared. Luo Yuan was stunned. He stopped walking and frowned.

The Giant Lizard had been following him since the beginning of the apocalypse. It had been with him through thick and thin across the whole of China. They had been through a lot together. His abilities skyrocketed ever since they entered the reconstruction area, and he did not need the Giant Lizard's help anymore.

But now, it was dead!

In reality, it had not died due to the cold weather, but it was badly injured from the aftermath of the anti-matter bomb. It was amazing that it held on until now. As Luo Yuan did not look at the attributes panel lately, its injuries had worsened and now it was dead. Luo Yuan noticed that aside from his Blue Dragon that was healthy because it was far away from the reconstruction area, the Raging Ape was badly injured too. He was not sure how long it could hold on.

He stared in silence at the barren mountains in the distance. That was the place where the two giant beasts used to be. Since then, he had never visited them. In reality, he did not have feelings for the two battle beasts he knew. After all, compared to pets, they were wild and untamed mutated beast. If not for his strong abilities, he would have been eaten by the both of them.

However, without knowing why, he felt sad.

He thought for a while and flew towards the barren mountain.

Soon, he landed in the valley. It was a lush forest not long ago, but it was now barren land. Its height dropped significantly due to the shockwave, and it was much shorter now.

The two battle beasts lay motionless on the ground. The body of Giant Lizard was stiff, while the Raging Ape lay not so far away on the ground, weak and dying.

As Luo Yuan walked closer, the Raging Ape seemed to notice him and lifted its head. It saw Luo Yuan and struggled to stand up. It whimpered, with tears in its eyes.

It was a mess. Its red hair was molted and its body was covered in wounds. A part of its head was scraped and its skull was showing, frozen in ice. There were scabs all over its body. As it stood up, the frozen ice on its body fell to the ground.

Looking at it getting all excited, Luo Yuan sighed. He then turned around to look at Giant Lizard. Its body was completely frozen. From the cuts and blood on its body, he could see that it was severely injured in the disaster earlier and the cold weather accelerated its death.

He took a moment to pay his respects to the Giant Lizard and then stood up.

The Raging Ape was shivering in cold, its wounds caused it great discomfort. It was barely holding on.

Luo Yuan took out a crystal from his pocket. It was a Level Eight energy crystal. To keep it safe from the mutated humans that tried to steal it from him, he had it with him at all times, and now it came in handy.

He flicked the energy crystal into the Raging Ape's mouth. It melted immediately on its tongue, and before it even figured out what happened, the nuclei had disappeared. Soon, there was a

burning sensation in its body. Steam was rising out of its body because of the high temperature. Its blood was boiling, its wounds were healing at the speed of light!

The rich active energy in the level eight crystal worked miraculously on the injuries all over its body

Once it was much better, it rose to his hind legs and let out a resonating roar! It was not as weak as it was just a few moments before.

As its wounds healed, it's hair began shedding rapidly and grew out almost instantly after. But soon, all its hair had shed and it was hairless.

It was the beginning of its evolution.

It started to groan, its muscles tightened and its veins were bulging around them.

It was the same with the evolution of the mutated human earlier. Such unnatural evolution at high speeds did not make its body bigger but on the contrary, its body was shrinking.

Luo Yuan could hear the cracking of its bones like firecrackers as it shrank. It slammed the ground with its heavy hands, roaring in an intense pain. Each hit felt like a bomb attack, smashing the hard ground. With his strong punches, hundreds of tonnes of sand and rocks scattered like broken glass.

As its body shrunk, its strength was increasing relative to the loss in size.

Before the evolution, its Strength was +21 but in 10 minutes, its Strength had leaped to +25 and it was still increasing.

The ground was shaking like there was an earthquake! Gravel fell in landslides from the valleys. Chaos shook the whole area!

...

Half an hour later, the evolution finally ceased. The Raging Ape was now less than 10 meters tall, but its red hair was now golden. Its green eyes burned with a menacing fire, and it gave off a furious vibe.

Its transformation was not physical as its body was still similar to its original form. However, its shrunken body did not make it weak. On the contrary, it was as terrifying as a demon from hell.

Chapter 458: Inspection

The Raging Ape's veins were thick and coiled around its muscles, like an old tree's roots. Its terrifying strength was apparent to anyone who laid eyes on it. If King Kong from the movie was to come to life and see this, it would run away in fear of such a beast! It huffed heavily, billowing white smoke from its open mouth due to the cold weather.

It seemed to be tired from the evolution, its wide chest heaving as it panted with effort. A while later, it recovered. It then looked directly at Luo Yuan. Its ferocious expression gave him the impression that it was going to burst into rage at any moment.

However, what it did next completely put out the hostile vibe in the air.

It scratched its head and smiled with a wide, chimpanzee grin at Luo Yuan. It then started to hoot and roar in his direction, seemingly venting out its fear and troubles about everything it had just been through.

"Let's go. Let's leave this place. We should be able to find food somewhere else!" Luo Yuan said while looking at it. It calmed for a moment and nodded in compliance.

The evolution had skyrocketed its abilities. Although it did not evolve into a level eight creature, it was now level seven. Each of its attributes got a surge in skill points, especially its Strength. It was now +35, which was even higher than Luo Yuan's Strength!

Although it was winter, the ecological chain was not completely broken. There were still mutated beasts in the wilderness. With its abilities now, it was not difficult to hunt for food on its own. Although, its ability to survive the winter until the sun began rising again was now completely left to fate.

As a mutated ape, its Intelligence was quite fascinating and it could understand some human language. Seeing Luo Yuan trying to chase it away, it shook its head and whined. There was fear in its strange, green eyes.

Luo Yuan just ignored its whining.

He turned around and looked the Giant Lizard's dead body. He dragged it to the hole that the Raging Ape had made earlier and buried it with gravels. No matter what, the Giant Lizard had followed him for a long time, and he could not just leave its dead body in the wilderness. He looked at the grave made of icy stones and sand mounds for a while, turned around and walked down the mountain.

Noticing that Luo Yuan was leaving, Raging Ape whimpered in sorrow of his departure. It was eager to follow him, but did not dare go near him. The fear was cultivated deep within its bones, and it did not dare go against his orders.

As it whimpered, Luo Yuan did not say a word. He leaped and disappeared from the face of the mountain.

The Raging Ape climbed to the top of the mountain in an instant and looked around. It did not see where Luo Yuan had flown and sat down in disappointment.

...

Luo Yuan got back to Hope City and proceeded to observe the progress of production.

The weather got colder day by day, and it was almost -20 degree Celsius indoors. Many people had gotten frostbite and the hospitals were crowded with people who had the flu and fever. If the situation remain unchanged, death awaited many of them.

"At our current rate, we have managed to produce 3,000 electric blankets. Without delays, we expect to finish 10,000 more by tonight." A factory representative said to Luo Yuan. He was nervous and shivering as he explained.

3,000 electric blankets were too few! It was like a drop of sunshine in the bucket of doom, but there was nothing anyone could do about it. Before the disaster, the weather was so hot. Nobody thought about producing electric blankets. Since the start of the mission, all equipment required adjustments and training programmes were mandatory for all the workers. It was amazing that they could run the production facilities at such short notice.

"Mayor, we're doing our best!" The vice-mayor who was also around said after noticing Luo Yuan dissatisfaction, "There are 10 factories that are producing electric blankets. They can produce

80,000 of them by tonight."

"That's too little, I don't care how but the production needs to increase. Time awaits no man. Get the machines from the factories that have stopped working. It's such a waste to just leave those machines there. We need more workers as well. If there's a need to do it manually by hand, do it. We need to provide enough blankets to cover each family member of the entire community, by tonight!" Luo Yuan said coldly. Without any countermeasures, many people would be dead by the morning if the weather persisted.

"But, that's impossible." The vice-mayor attempted to explain, a lost look in his eyes.

"If you can't do it, then I'll get someone else who can!" Luo Yuan glared at him and said.

The vice-mayor was stunned. Sweat started dripping down his forehead. He realised that Luo Yuan was a completely different person as compared to the previous mayor.

Apart from being scolded, if Luo Yuan was pushed over the edge, he might even lose his life!

He said immediately, "I will do it right away and I guarantee that the mission will be completed before the night comes!" he stuttered.

"That's great. Fighting the cold is our top priority, we have to do

this right. I don't want to see anyone die due to the cold weather tomorrow."

To be honest, Luo Yuan was not dissatisfied with this vice-mayor. To be able to achieve what he had done, he had to be extremely efficient. However, time did not wait for no him to solve the problem. There were in fact more solutions to solve the problems. If Luo Yuan did not give him the push he needed, he would have stuck by his numerical expectations and failed. With the possible threat on his life, things would change for the better. It was not the time for persuasion and reasonable conversation.

Then, Luo Yuan inspected the clothing factory, blanket factory, air-conditioning factory, heating lamp factory, thermal pads factory and the steam pipe factory.

Luo Yuan had a stony expression on his face the whole time which pressured the people who followed and feared him.

The factories that were running were all of these functional capabilities. However, the result was not up to parr. The quantity of production was limited and not enough for dissemination while some were still going through adjustments, and production was yet to start.

What they needed the most was time!

After he left the industrial area, he inspected the agricultural area. The situation here was much better. Under massive amounts of light and a constant room temperature, agricultural sector

flourished and grew well and in abundance. The amount of vegetables and supplies that were harvested daily were sufficient to feed all the people of Hope City.

...

After an emergency operation of fixing the damaged lighting structures in the reconstruction area all night, the streets were illuminated with bright lights once again. During lunch hour, Luo Yuan went to Chen XinJie's house.

Staring at Unit No. 12 on Fuxing Street, he hesitated. He then composed himself and knocked on the door. After a while, someone opened the door. It was not Chen Xinjie who opened the door, but a middle-aged woman. She looked like she was in her 30s. There was a resemblance to Chen Xinjie on her face, but he could not be sure. She did not seem healthy. He thought she was perhaps ill, as she was pale and tired.

Looking at Luo Yuan's unfamiliar face, she asked weakly, "Are you looking for someone?"

"Is this where Chen Xinjie lives?" Luo Yuan asked with a smile.

"May I know who you are?" She replied.

"Nice meeting you, aunty. I'm her ex-colleague, I haven't been able to contact her so I thought I would drop by to see her!" he responded, as cheerfully as he could.

"So you're Xinxin's friend. She's at work and has not come home yet. Please come in and take a seat." She said with a smile, despite looking rather exhausted.

"It's alright! Since she's not here, I shall not disturb you." Luo Yuan said immediately and asked, "Oh right, I thought she was working at the Firearms Bureau. Where is she working now?"

"She's working at the central committee now, and it's her seventh day!" She was worried as she continued, "She was forced to visit these few days as I haven't been feeling well, or else...I heard New Capital had fallen."

"Are you not feeling well, aunty? Why don't you see a doctor at the hospital?" he asked thoughtfully.

"I've had this forever, there's no cure for my illness. I'm living at the moment. What I want is for Xinxin to find a partner so that she could live with and I can die in peace." She said, and chuckled at the end of her sentence.

Luo Yuan thought he could have used his Will to heal her, as there was no illness that could not be treated. However, it would be strange to do that to her after only meeting for the first time, so he thought of putting the thought on hold until he talked to Chen Xinjie.

Chapter 459: The Toughest Time

As he was making his way back, another earthquake rocked the area!

It was an 8.0 magnitude earthquake. The ground shook intensely and people ran everywhere screaming at the top of their lungs.

Luo Yuan stayed rooted, his feet planted firmly on the ground. He did not move at all to the violent tremors around him. The cracks on the ground and the giant boulders that fell around him had him worried for the people of the region!

Since the anti-matter bomb attack as well as the state of the moon which now orbited the earth at a further distance, the tectonic plates entered a turbulent period of chaos. Volcano eruptions and earthquake were not out of the ordinary anymore and happened a few times almost every day. Some were minimal while serious ones went up to a magnitude of 6.0. It was the first time that such an intense earthquake happened after the disaster.

The space between each layer of the underground city was eight meters thick, which greatly strengthened its resistance to earthquakes. However, this earthquake was unbearable even for the thick ground layers. Moreover, the structure was loose due to the frequent earthquakes. There were huge cracks in the gaps which weakened the structure significantly.

20 seconds after the earthquake, the ground started to collapse. Fortunately, it stopped not long later. Besides a small part which

collapsed, there was no major damage. Luo Yuan wasted not a second longer and rushed to the City Hall to initiate rescue protocols.

The collapse happened at the gap between the fifth and sixth layer where the entire 100,000 square meters of rock plates had collapsed. Luckily the floors below it were strong enough to withstand the collapse, so a domino effect did not ensue.

The fifth layer of Hope City's underground catacombs was a warehouse. The sixth to tenth layers were residential areas and light contaminated industrial area, while the eleventh to thirteenth were agriculture areas. Apart from two factories being buried by the earthquake debris, a major part of the residential area was also affected.

Fortunately, most of the people were hiding in the warehouse area and factories while only some of them, mostly old people and children, stayed at home. However, the disaster covered a massive area. Rough calculation estimated more than 1,000 people were dead. It was impossible to survive being smashed by eight meters of solid rock!

More and more bad news continued to flow in and Luo Yuan was completely swamped. His plan to visit Chen Xinjie in the afternoon had to be canceled. Many people teamed up for disaster relief aid but that was not the most important thing at the time. The utmost priority was to strengthen the structure of the underground layers to prevent a collapse from happening again.

Although all of the people in Hope City would move into the

spacecraft not long after, the transition would not happen overnight. They would have to make sure that the underground layers were stable for the remaining time they resided in Hope City. Looking at the situation, there was a high possibility that the earthquake would happen again.

Luo Yuan and a couple of geological experts were busy checking the weakness of each underground layer the entire afternoon. His Earth Pulse allowed him to sense the hidden risks from the difference of frequency on the ground. Large amounts of reinforced concrete stock were moved to the weak and crumbling locations. More than 100,000 workers were busy fixing the support columns, stabilizing the underground structures to brace it for the next earthquake.

...

It was 9 p.m., vice-mayor Tian Jinping came to Luo Yuan with a good news.

"Mayor, due to the hard work and team effort of all our factories, they have managed to produce almost 500,000 electric blankets. We estimated that they could produce up to 650,000 of them by 12 a.m.," he said carefully, his husky voice controlling his excitement from the success.

As compared to the figure that they promised, which was 80,000, the new figure was six times more. However, it was still not sufficient. But looking at his eyes that were red and blisters around his lips, it was obvious that he had done his best.

"That's great, distribute them to the people immediately!" Luo Yuan instructed.

"Sure, mayor. I'll do it now!" he replied. Tian Jinping was surprised as to how encouraging Luo Yuan was. He exhaled in relief.

Just when he wanted to leave, Luo Yuan stopped him.

"Wait, there's something odd about the free give-away. To prevent the people from complaining about unfairness, let's sell the electric blanket at a cheap price and tell them it's a limited edition offer. Use the broadcast system to let everyone know!" Luo Yuan said.

"You're a genius, mayor!" Tian Jinping said respectfully.

Luo Yuan laughed, "Also inform the people to hold on for one night, they get to rotate shifts and rest tomorrow!"

The staff who were working for the government had not rested for the past few days. If the situation persisted, they would all be ill with sickness and fatigue.

Tian Jinping then left, and the office was quiet again. Luo Yuan massaged his temples and stood up. He paced around his office. After today, the toughest time for Hope City would be over. After the cold situation was resolved, most of the issues in Hope City

would be much easier to handle.

...

Fortunately, nobody had died from the cold.

Humans were conscious creatures, and even without an electric blanket to keep them warm, they started fires and also put on more clothes to fight the cold.

But as there were more electric blankets and other warmth related goods being produced, the people had less to worry about. The crisis was eased and Luo Yuan was relieved. Since he had not been home for a few days, he planned to go home today.

"Mayor!"

"Mayor!"

...

It was hectic at the City Hall. Many expressed their gratitude when they bumped into Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan had been taking the lead these few days and his great act of preserving mankind had earned him a halo in the eyes of the people.

Although most of the people were exhausted, whenever they saw him, they got all excited and pumped to cheer his successes and

express their gratefulness for his aid. It was a great achievement where the phenomena happened during the toughest times for mankind.

He arrived at the hall and stopped walking all of the sudden. Everybody stood up.

Looking at all the staff who stood with admiration for him, he was touched.

"Everyone, your handwork is noted. We survived the alien's attack. Credit should not be mine alone but a team effort, for everyone. Now the toughest times have passed us, our lives will get better soon enough. Let's change shifts and take a much-deserved rest!" Luo Yuan said, with a hearty laugh after he finished.

He gestured to the office manager who walked out of the office, "Get the canteen to prepare a scrumptious breakfast. If there's no more high-class meat, please get it from me!"

"There... there are, I'll arrange right now." The office manager said immediately and rushed off to make the required preparations.

Luo Yuan nodded and left the City Hall.

The bright lamps lit up the underground city like it was daytime. Luo Yuan could see that parts of the LED energy-saving lamps were changed to heated lamps. The endless energy of the nuclear fusion

furnaces coming from the Glassians allowed Hope City to produce all the energy they needed.

He felt the temperature of the area with fixed heated lamps rise steadily.

It was a pity that the production of heating lamps was limited because the priority for such lamps was given to the agriculture area. Only two streets were fixed with heated lamps, and they would need more time to have enough heated lamps to install them everywhere.

Soon, Luo Yuan was home.

Wang Shishi saw him from far away and said in surprise, "Boss Luo is home!"

She then ran towards him, jumped into his arms and he spun around like a kid in complete bliss. Wang Shishi was the most clingy one among all the women.

He smiled while patting her back, "Alright, get off me."

Wang Shishi kissed him and release her hold of him. Her eyes were watery, she was never sick of the sight of him. The rest of the women were as excited as her but they were shy.

"Have you eaten?" Huang Jiahui said with a giggle. She was wearing a beige fur coat which made her look younger and

demure.

Recently, most of the clothes produced were made of high leveled mutated beasts' fur. They ranged from level five and above.

Before that, they were used in the making of aircrafts or were left piled up in warehouses. Now all of them were used to produce clothing to keep warm. However, since it was of a very high quality and the leather was tough, it had reduced the production efficiency due to operational difficulties. Not many of them were produced and the first few were given to researchers who were still in Hope City. Even senior civil staff did not get any of them. Perhaps somebody had taken the liberty to give the coats to the women as a sign of respect for him.

However, Luo Yuan was not pedant. It was normal in society and it would not change under any circumstances even if he were made a fuss.

"It's okay, is everything alright at home?" he answered. Luo Yuan looked around the villa. Part of the artificial mountain in the living room was missing. It must have been damaged by the earthquake yesterday, he concluded.

"Everything is fine. Your job is more important. Don't worry about what's happening at home." Huang Jiahui said.

"I heard we're moving to the spacecraft?" Zhao Yali asked.

"It's true, but not so soon. There's a modification happening on the spacecraft. When it's done, we will leave earth." he said.

Luo Yuan looked at Zhao Yali as he answered her. She was wearing a green fur coat, her skin was smooth, she seemed soft and pleasant. Ye Qiuyu who was standing aside was stunned and exclaimed in surprise. She was embarrassed, but as everyone was stunned by the news, nobody noticed her at all.

"Why do we need to leave earth, just out of the blue?" Wang Xiaguang asked.

Luo Yuan sighed and explained the current situation. Everybody was quiet. Ever since the apocalypse, there were many disasters happening to mankind and now, they had to give up on the Earth, or perish.

"Let's not talk about that anymore. We will cross the bridge when we get there. There's always hope for mankind!" Luo Yuan assured them.

Luo Yuan then asked Ye Qiuyu about Chen Jiayi, "How's Chen Jiayi doing?"

As she noticed Luo Yuan was looking at her, Ye Qiuyu panicked, "May... Mayor, there's positive progress to her situation. She would reach out to us whenever we called her name. But... We need a little more time."

Luo Yuan nodded. He knew the pressure that he had always given ordinary people. It was not just the pressure from his power, but also the mental stress. Even if he suppressed his power, he still gave out an overwhelming sense to normal people, especially the standing committee at City Hall who he was in constant contact with. The only ones who were not affected were those who were close to him.

He stood up and said, "Let me take a look!"

He walked into Chen Jiayi's room and sat on the chair by the bed. The women followed as well. The mutated human hesitated and followed as well.

Chen Jiayi laid quietly on the bed. She was rosy and breathing normally. It seemed like she was asleep.

Luo Yuan looked at her in silence and called out to her. "Jiayi wake up, wake up now," he cooed.

She seemed to hear his voice, her eyes rolled like she was in a nightmare. She could not open her eyes.

"There seemed to be something wrong with her nervous system where she can hear us and try to respond, but she's too weak to react," Ye Qiuyu said softly.

Luo Yuan kept quiet, he knew very well what had gone wrong. It was caused by the invasion of his Will that had messed up her

nervous system.

He saw her fingers were moving, and he held her hand. She was weak at first, but suddenly, she squeezed Luo Yuan's hand so tight that her face was flushing red.

"Jiayi wake up!" He tried to wake her up after seeing her moving.

However, that only lasted for a few seconds. She let go of his hand. Tears rolled down her cheeks and within seconds, she seemed to have used all the energy she had left.

The ladies were sad, their eyes were red and watery. It was a different story for Ye Qiuyu as her relationship with Chen Jiayi was purely doctor and patient.

She only started treating Chen Jiayi about a half an hour ago. She only now had the chance to take a good look at Luo Yuan. She was stunned and a little terrified by all the women he had and the beautiful half human, half animal mutated human.

Luo Yuan had not been around the villa these few days and many things had happened. She had long forgotten that she was ready to throw herself at him.

In reality, there was nothing to complain about Luo Yuan's appearance. His skin was smooth and soft, he had no flaws at all. A great body, a good-looking face and the mysterious vibe he possessed attracted all women. Now that he had evolved to this

stage, his body went through a total transformation. There were no gene defects found on his body like ordinary people do and even if he had any, he could fix them himself. She recalled Luo Yuan's terrifying abilities from Wang Shishi where he managed to squeeze a rice cooker into an iron ball. She was afraid of him. She had no idea how all these women could handle him.

Sensing a strange aura behind him, Luo Yuan turned around and stared at Ye Qiuyu. She turned pale and almost fell to the ground.

Chapter 460: Volcano

After seeing Chen Jiayi, Luo Yuan did not stay for long. Work had been hectic recently, and he was only home when he had time to spare. He returned to the City Hall right away.

The staff employees on shift were busy at work. Although they had some high-class meat for breakfast, they could not hide their exhaustion. Luo Yuan nodded to them and headed to his office. There were people waiting for him at the secretariat.

"Mayor!"

"Good morning, Mayor!"

...

Luo Yuan nodded to them and said to his secretary Cheng Guanghui, "Let them in!"

"Sure, Mayor!" Cheng Guanghui said respectfully.

Luo Yuan walked into his office immediately. The first one was vice-mayor Tian Jinping. After Bi Jianping left, Tian Jinping who was in charge of the industrial area became the temporary second-in-command of Hope City.

He did not look good. He was dark skinned, skinny, and his head

only reached up to Luo Yuan's chest when he stood up. However, Luo Yuan had a good impression of him. He had been running everywhere these few days without rest and completed his missions within a limited time which was impressive. No one was as efficient as he was.

"Mayor, I'm here to report on our progress. The work on fighting the cold has been efficient, and so far we have produced 1,500,000 electric blankets and 35,000 heating lamps. The production of steam pipe will commence today at 5 a.m. ..."

Looking at him losing his voice, Luo Yuan thought he had gone too far. He nodded and said, "Place the documents here, I'll take a look at them on my own. I'll assign you your next mission later. Go take a good rest and come back to work at night."

"No, Mayor. You haven't been resting, so why should I!" Tian Jinping was shocked to hear what Luo Yuan said.

"That is an order!" Luo Yuan said without further explanation. With his physique, he would not feel a thing even if he did not sleep for months.

Even since he became the mayor, Luo Yuan was not as friendly as he used to be to the people around him. He became unapproachable on purpose. The people here had been in the bureaucracy for many years. If he showed preferential treatment or weakness in front of them, he would be bullied as if he were a rookie in the field.

"Mayor, I would like to check with you. What is the target for the production of electric blankets?" As a senior in the City Hall, he had received word that there would be people moving to Hope City. After all, among the cities, the one that recovered best was Hope City.

"So far, the current amount we have is sufficient for six million people. The rest of the products will follow the same target."

After giving it some thought, Luo Yuan said,

"Alright, got it!"

After Tian Jinping left, the one who was in-charge of the agricultural sector walked in. "Mayor, this is the documents you asked for."

Without offering him a seat, Luo Yuan started reading the documents. Within seconds, he had glanced through all the documents, "Is the production of vegetables enough to feed two million people?"

"Yes, Mayor. The previous winter killed most of the plants that could not survive in cold. Fortunately, it was only temporary. We estimate in a month's time, production numbers will go back to normal!"

There was no lack of food in Hope City. To fight any possible crisis in the apocalypse, every city in reconstruction area had a

certain amount of food stored. Even if there was no harvesting in the agricultural sector, based on the storage quantity alone, it was sufficient to last each city a few months.

What Hope City lacked was vegetables. It was not easy to store such large quantities, besides the 10 tons of dehydrated vegetables in the warehouse which were meant for the military. There were no other vegetables. As all these had been moved into the spacecraft during the migration, the supply of vegetables in Hope City was worrisomely low.

"One month is too long!" Luo Yuan mumbled to himself.

As he looked at the next document, he said, "The standard 500 grams for each person is too high. As we are in a time of crisis right now, let's take it down to 300 grams. In the meantime, increase the production. I hope in half a month, the agricultural area would have sufficient food and vegetables to supply the needs of six million people."

300 grams of vegetable was sufficient for the daily vitamin intake. It would not affect a person's health. The biggest difference would be a slight drop in their standard of living. Looking at the situation, the people should rejoice that they were still alive instead of demand for more, Luo Yuan thought to himself.

"Also, strengthen the food control and do better in the eyes of the public!" Luo Yuan ordered.

Facing a powerful being like Luo Yuan, there was nobody in the

City Hall that dared to object his decisions. The vice-mayor said without hesitation, "Yes, Mayor!"

The City Hall got used to this. In reality, when the reconstruction area was set up, necessities were severely insufficient. There were no supermarkets without strict control measures on products they sold.

No agricultural area was developed to produce crops at the time. But lately, there were more crops discovered and farmed on the land. So, it was fortunate that there was food for the people every day.

After receiving all the reports from a few more staff members, his office was quiet again. He tapped on his table while in deep thought. Now that everything was ready, the migration of the three neighboring cities to Hope City could commence.

Due to the nuclear fusion reactor, there was an endless amount of energy in Hope City which allowed them to survive the terrible winters. The other three cities were not as lucky as they lived in icy cold climates and complete darkness. If the situation persisted, the people would die sooner or later.

Luo Yuan picked up his phone and called his secretary. "Contact the political and legal committee counsel, Li Feng, and tell him I wish to see him!" he barked into the receiver.

The guard division of Hope City had always been on standby on the ground but all of them were killed during the disaster. Now the

strongest defensive unit they had in Hope City was the police. There were 20,000 of them. Although the number made it seem like a large force, the weapons they possessed were pathetic. Besides some light weapons, there was no heavy fire artillery at all. The other three cities had the same firepower.

The mission this time was not just migration, but it also meant the handover of authority.

Since New Capital City had fallen, there were no available communication lines. No matter what, the three cities were independent. Nobody knew the opinions of each managing organization. Politics was never about being nice. There would always be greed and unexpected behavior. Luo Yuan had the worst case scenario in his mind.

Their attacks would mean nothing to Luo Yuan. With his abilities, even bomb attack could do him no harm. However, no matter how strong he was, he was alone. It was easier to destroy than to maintain order, in his opinion, but he had to adhere to the objectives. After all, the mission was not to destroy but to save lives. Thus, he could not go about doing everything on his own. He needed many more military police just in case any of the people objected the current arrangement.

10 minutes later, the political and legal committee counsel, Li Feng, walked into his office. He soon left with an excited look on his face.

...

In the evening, about 10,000 military police were sent up from the underground city. They were wearing thick leather jackets that were produced in a rush. They stood in a neat formation and left Hope City immediately.

The military police after the apocalypse were different from the police before the apocalypse. Their training was no different than that of ordinary soldiers. They were in charge of the safety of the city and at the same time, also trained to handle the invasion of mutated creatures.

During the crisis, they would even have to fight during times of war. From their formation, it was hard to differentiate them from a team of ordinary soldiers.

The weather outside was getting colder to a point when the water vapor that they exhaled turned into ice almost immediately. Sheets of ice covered the area till the ground could not be seen.

Luo Yuan stepped lightly on the ground. The ice beneath him cracked and spread like spider webs across the ground. It only stopped after it was about 10 meters away.

Due to the cold, the layer of ice was thick but cracked easily if one was not careful. Once a piece was broken, a big part of the area would be affected. The ice sheets seemed to be about 30 centimeters thick.

In reality, the temperature here was no different to the

temperatures in the north and south-poles. To be soon covered in 3,000 meters of ice was just a matter of time.

He looked far beyond the horizon and saw a gigantic smoke column standing tall, with sparks spewing out of its peak.

Nobody knew where this mountain came from. It seemed to have popped out of nowhere!

As the dust fell, the light in the area was brighter as compared to a few days ago. It was not as dark as before but the sunlight still had not broken through the dust clouds.

But, the dimmed lighting did not affect Luo Yuan at all as his eyes saw his surroundings to be as bright as a sunny day. With his four-dimensional vision, the dust-filled air was nothing to him.

The newly formed volcano had a glowing tip of red, obviously spewing lava. Perhaps the earthquake that happened yesterday was triggered by this volcano.

As the wind was blowing in a perpendicular direction to the police force, and the volcano was a few hundred kilometers away, the volcanic ash had not affected them or else they would have to put on gas masks.

"What happened, Mayor?" Li Feng who was leading the team asked curiously.

"It's nothing, just a volcano." Luo Yuan shook his head and proceeded to walk.

"Were there any volcanoes around here?" Li Feng thought to himself, as he stopped where he stood and spaced out. A cold wind blew and he shivered. He quickly caught up to Luo Yuan and soon, they arrived at the gigantic spacecraft that was stationed near Hope City.

...

Half an hour later, the spacecraft slowly ascended into the air. The plasma jets that shot out from the engine port created a bright, high-temperature flame in the air. The remaining heat alone evaporated the snow under the spacecraft. Soon, they flew towards the United City.

Chapter 461: The Great Migration

United City was located northeast of Hope City and near the center of the Reconstruction Area. It was the city that suffered the worst from the disaster. From the virtual reality image shown on the spacecraft, Luo Yuan could clearly see that it was only 40 meters away from one of the craters. A large portion of the area was covered in thick snow, with an odd form of undulating waves.

It was obvious that when the disaster occurred, the soil had melted into liquid due to high temperature and was then blown by the strong wind, that caused the formation of the wavy structure. Fortunately, it was a distance away from United City, or else the entire city would have melted in the heat as well.

However, the city was hit badly. From the top, the ground including a few layers underneath had collapsed. It was now in ruins, blanketed by snow.

The spacecraft landed five kilometers away from United City.

As the cabin door opened, Luo Yuan and 10,000 military police officers walked out of the spacecraft in an orderly fashion. Many were still stunned and looked at the spacecraft behind Luo Yuan and company.

Soon, they arrived the ruins. It was completely frozen over with snow.

"I didn't expect the damage to be so bad." Li Feng said while

walking next to Luo Yuan.

"It was near the crater after all. Nightfall will soon befall upon us; let's get this over with!" said Luo Yuan, while looking at the time. Although it was hard to differentiate day and night nowadays, when dusk descended, the temperature would drop to a low.

As the place was covered in snow, it was hard to look for a way to go underground. Fortunately, he had an army with him. Under Luo Yuan's orders, the 10,000-strong military police looked around and came back with good news. Luo Yuan went to the gap they found – it was a six meter-wide hole with a 40-degree slant. The snow around it seemed to be cleared up by somebody else.

Standing at the hole, he could feel the heat coming from below. It was considered hot in comparison to the cold weather out there, but in reality, this 'heat' was -30 degrees Celsius.

There was more than one hole. Soon they discovered more and more holes, and there was a total of 18 altogether. No doubt, there were dug up by United City for ventilation.

Li Feng led a small team and entered the hole. The hole led them straight to the residential area – there were no guards around; showing lack of security in there.

It made complete sense – the weather was cold where it was hard to survive, even for mutated creatures. Hence, there would not be any threats in the area. Moreover, the temperature at the entrance of the hole was even lower. It was unbearable for any ordinary

person to withstand, let alone attack.

Without hesitation, Luo Yuan instructed the entire army to enter the underground city.

"People of United City, we are the rescue team from Hope City... We're in a state of siege at the moment, so please stay at home and do not go out... Hope City has regained its electricity and everything is back on track. All of you will be migrating to Hope City. You will receive sufficient food and be protected from the cold..." The announcement was played over and over again via speakers on the streets.

The people were shocked to see countless armed military police whom they had never seen before. They locked their doors immediately. Unexpectedly, the military police of United City put their guards down after hearing the announcement.

Luo Yuan took a stroll on the streets of United City. There was a fire burning on the walls; the smoke was choking. It was like being in an arson attack, where the fire was burning in every house. Due to the lack of clothing, burning for warmth was their only choice.

Some of the braver people peeked through the door their eyes were red from the burning smoke. They were in thick layers of clothes and were practically wearing everything they owned on their backs. Some of them were tied in their blankets but were still shivering in cold regardless.

As Luo Yuan and Li Feng made their way to the City Hall, a group

of people welcomed them. The leader was a tall middle-aged man glancing at both of them.

He was the mayor of United City, Ma Lin. He had met Li Feng several times; they were rather familiar with each other. As part of Hope City's political and legal committee, as well as a Director of Public Security Bureau, Li Feng was considered a senior leader. It was strange for Ma Lin to see him walking behind a strange, young man.

"Welcome, both, to United City. We have been looking forward to seeing you. Director Li, why don't you introduce this leader to us?"

"Greetings, Mayor Ma. Mayor Xie passed away in the disaster. This is our new mayor, Luo Yuan!" Li Feng said while smiling.

"Oh, it's Mayor Luo! Nice to meet you!" Ma Lin was stunned. He had heard of Luo Yuan before and knew how powerful he was. He shook hands with Luo Yuan right away.

"Mayor Ma, we don't have much time. Let's skip all the formalities, we have a mission here. Ever since the disaster occurred, United City can hardly be a place to call home anymore. Everyone here must migrate to Hope City. I hope you could agree to that!" Luo Yuan said while shaking his hand.

The leaders who welcomed them looked at each other. They had thought all the military police that were sent by Hope City was to show off their authority and to provide them with supplies. They

did not expect it to be as exactly as they had announced, which was to assist in migrating their population.

Though confused, they were secretly relieved. The condition in United City was bad – they were in darkness and cold most of the time. It had caused the security of the city to be unstable, and an uproar may even occur soon.

"May I know the number of the first batch of migration?" Ma Lin hesitated and asked after deciding to conform to this arrangement. The amount of military police had left him no choice but to agree to what Luo Yuan had proposed.

"200,000."

"200,000?" Ma Lin could not suppress his shock anymore. He was surprised, and so were the people around him.

"I'm sorry to ask, may I know how many trucks Hope City sent this time round?" Ma Lin asked immediately. The distance from United City to Hope City was not short at all – it was at least 50 kilometers away.

Before the disaster, the distance was not considered too great. At an average speed, one could arrive there in eight hours by foot. Now that the weather was cold and the people in United City did not have proper clothing, walking there would be a disaster. They would be frozen in under two hours.

Li Feng could not help but to show off, "Mayor Ma, you don't have to worry about that. We don't have that many cars, even before the disaster, Hope City had never exported cars for 200,000 people. We have something better – it's a spacecraft. It's parked at the borders of United City.

"Spacecraft?" Ma Lin wanted to make sure if he heard him correctly.

"Yes, a spacecraft. An alien's spacecraft." Li Feng could not help but laugh, "Let's not wait any longer. Mayor Ma, kindly arrange the migration immediately."

...

At their level, they did not know the existence of the Glassians. Li Feng needed to explain it over and over again until the leaders of United City forcefully accepted the fact.

An hour later, the migration had finally begun.

People lined up in a kilometer-long queue to walk out of the city towards the wilderness.

As it was hard to survive in United City, the very moment the news of migration was announced, the citizens had lost their minds in joy. Hordes of people thronged towards the migration crowd, causing a few hundreds of people to be trampled to death. The military police had to open fire to get them under control.

The figures were out of Luo Yuan's expectation. The initial 200,000 people were now 400,000. As people began leaving, the entire city became empty.

Fortunately, the spacecraft was big enough. Its warehouse area alone was 300,000 square meters. Even the entire population of the United City could be migrated at once.

...

On the third day, the spacecraft had landed in Twilight City and migrated 300,000 people. The next day, the spacecraft arrived Victory City and migrated 350,000 people.

And on the fifth day, with the increasing production of items for keeping warm, there was a total of 400,000 people migrating into the city. As many people were coming into Hope City, it was now crowded, with five floors of the residential area filled with people.

Luckily, there were 15 floors of underground space, and only 12 floors were occupied, with the remaining three floors empty. Apart from one floor that was converted into an agricultural area, there were still two floors for accommodation purposes.

The spacecraft was flying in and out, not only for the population's migration but also bringing in massive amounts of materials and machines.

There was sufficient storage of wood for construction. With enough manpower and recovered machines, the construction of buildings was on par with the rising of the population.

On the seventh day, the migration work was completed.

The remaining population turned out less than expected, with only five million people left on earth. Everyone had gathered in Hope City.

In between, Luo Yuan brought the migrated researchers and technicians to the mothership in space. He was also there to oversee the progress.

What delighted him was how the progress experienced a breakthrough, with some of the factories revived and already starting small-scale test-run productions. With the 40,000 researchers that he brought in, the modification progress would also be accelerated.

Chapter 462: Hidden Danger

A shadow flew across the dark sky with the speed of light.

Suddenly, it stopped abruptly and hung mid-air.

It was Luo Yuan.

10,000 meters above the air, there were numerous dark clouds rumbling. There were lightning strikes within the dark clouds, which made the sky shift between darkness and light.

He descended from the sky across the dark clouds into the Reconstruction Area – that once used to be a hive of activity. It was now a ruin with three gigantic holes which almost occupied the entire area. Each of the holes was at least 100 kilometers wide from the outside, and its depth was more than 1,000 meters deep – a result of the three anti-material bombs.

Although the weather was cold, apart from one that was completely inactive, there were still smoke coming out of the other two holes.

Due to the explosion, the tectonic plates in the area were weak. The heat from the ground escaped from the cracks that were caused by the volcano eruption, imminent of an impending eruption. It was a major hidden danger for Hope City.

With mankind's ability, it was impossible to leave this place and

build a new residence with such short notice. The terrifying fact of the harsh cold was sufficient to break the anyone's will to live. The thought of moving into the spacecraft was even less possible.

Luo Yuan was here to see how big this hidden danger was.

Soon, he descended into one of the holes.

The closer he got to the bottom of the hole, the higher the temperature was. The snow around was thinner and more water vapor ascended. The vapor met with the cold up there and was soon frozen into snow that fell back down into the hole again.

The amount of snow was threatening, and snowball that was as big as his fist had hit him from above.

Within seconds, his body was covered in snow.

It was a mini water circulation system in the hole.

When it was 300 meters away from the bottom, as the temperature rose, the snow melted at an instant, showing the virtuous wall that shone with colors.

Luo Yuan could see colorful crystals on the wall, which were minerals created by the cooling of the lava. There were many precious stones seen too. They were valuable before the apocalypse, but now, they were not even worth a penny.

As he descended even further, the temperature increased dramatically. All he could see was steam. When he landed at the bottom, the water vapor had completely evaporated.

Contrary to his expectations, he saw no lava inside, but a boiling lake instead.

The lake was not big – only 100,000 square meters in size. Bubbles were boiling on the surface of the lake; it was humid in there. Luo Yuan was soaking wet with perspiration by just standing there for a short while.

There were 10,000 tons of water flowing from the wall into the lake each second. At the same time, the said amount of water evaporated each second, which caused the lake to remain the same size.

The temperature of the lake was higher than he had expected. If not for the flowing water that refilled the lake, it would be completely evaporated within minutes.

However, the temperature did not affect Luo Yuan at all.

He took off his shirt and jumped into the lake stark naked. There was no water sensation on his skin, and it felt as though the lake was made of bubbles. He felt very light in there.

The unit area of was not even a third of water, and the

temperature was already more than 200 degrees Celsius.

But it was just the beginning. As he got closer to the bottom, the density of water in the lake was lower and the temperature was higher. The lake was boiling intensely. If an ordinary person was in there, he would have been cooked or disintegrated by now.

There was a strong recoil that prevented him from going deeper.

He used both his hands and legs to swim another 100 meters against the force.

Suddenly, he went into another world.

With the earth's gravity, his body descended quickly. He used his Will to float in mid air. He was stunned; there was no water nor bubbles where he was. The humidity in the air was saturated, and apart from the water vapor, there was no other gas in the air.

Even Luo Yuan did not expect the lake to be hollow.

The temperature was 700 degrees Celsius, with all the water evaporating into water vapor. The air pressure there was six times more than normal.

Apart from a slight discomfort, the environment did not affect him at all.

There was a dim red light at the bottom of the hole and the air was filled with a rich smell of Sulphur. It looked like lava in there.

Luo Yuan quickly went towards the bottom of the hole.

As expected, there was lava everywhere. It was boiling like thick porridge, with flames shooting out occasionally, turning the place crimson red.

Looking at the scene had stressed Luo Yuan out. It was not just heat coming from beneath the ground, but more of a soon-to-erupt volcano. To make matters worse, the volcano was located just 150 kilometers from Hope City.

It would be fine if it was just a tiny volcano, which might only cause an earthquake, but if it was a massive eruption, it would adversely affect the entire city.

Since the attack of the anti-material bomb, the earth plates in the area were unstable, where eruption and earthquakes occurred every once in a while. Considering this active volcano and the craters that were boiling the probability of eruption was a strong 90%.

Within 10,000 square kilometers in the Reconstruction Area, there were already three volcanos, of which could possibly even be different parts that came from the same volcano. If a domino effect took place, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Although the fall of the Glassians was over, the disasters happened thereafter had continued to affect the earth. In reality, it was considered bearable in the Reconstruction Area. It was hell for Europe and North America, as volcanos were everywhere and earthquakes struck rather frequently. From above, they were filled with volcanic ashes where the entire Eurasia was engulfed in darkness. Wherever the craters were, eruptions happened all day and all night. Until today, the eruption column that shot 10,000 meters high towards the sky could be seen from space.

It had been half a month, but the nuclear winter had not ended, which was heavily influenced caused by the eruption. However, the impact of any drastic changes in Eurasia could only do little damage to the Reconstruction Area as it was far away.

No matter how powerful he was, there was no way that he could stop the consequences that would befall them, due to the eruption.

However, there was a solution to the volcanos that had yet to erupt.

Luo Yuan was conjuring a plan in his head.

Before the apocalypse, there was a study that came up with a method to reduce the magnitude of the eruption. For instance, through digging holes on the earth's surface, it releases the pressure underground and therefore delayed any eruption.

Another method would be blasting holes in a specific terrain in the volcano area to allow the lava to flow elsewhere.

Alternatively, they could destroy the lava channel to release its force before the eruption, or use a nuclear bomb to blast specific parts of the earth's crust to minimize the pressure.

However, such solutions required many geological experts to probe into the ground. But alas, none of them had such expertise.

After all, the Reconstruction Area was small and there was no need for them to set up geological labs everywhere. There was only one department in the Reconstruction Area which was in New Capital City, but it had been destroyed in the disaster.

Chapter 463: Normal

If it was weather like any other, there was nothing that Luo Yuan could do.

However, as the earth was now experiencing a nuclear winter, the temperature outside was -60 degrees Celsius. Apart from the holes, the ground was covered in snow. It was almost no difference with the north and south poles, which might be possible to deter the volcano from erupting.

The layer of ice on a cold -60 degrees Celsius day was as tough as a rock, which thickened the earth's crust. Although the ice layer was not thick enough yet, it would be much thicker as time went by. Furthermore, due to the unique concave terrain of the holes, it was easier to form bowl-shaped ice layer as a barricade of the volcano that was about to erupt.

That was just his estimation. Looking at the time, it was impossible to stop the eruption completely, but delaying it was plausible.

What Luo Yuan needed was not to completely avoid the consequences as long as the place was safe to live whenever they were still on earth. As soon as mankind left the earth, it was none of his business whether the volcano had erupted or not.

Luo Yuan flew out of the bottom of the lake immediately. He put on his clothes, flew upwards and stopped at the wall that was covered in snow.

It had been half a month since the disaster happened. There was a massive amount of snow that was mixed with volcanic ashes and hailstones that fell from the sky. The layer of ice in the hole was five meters thick, and it was black in color.

He let out a long and powerful breath which formed an air column that shot 10 meters away. Soon, it became nothing but crushed ice and fell towards the ground.

Next, a wave that could be seen with the naked eye was released from his body. The crushed ice around him has then blown away.

The air was vibrating intensely and the force field had been altered. Countless white electric arcs the size of a thumb sparked into the air. It gave light to the dark sky.

Under the influence of the waves, the ice layer began to crack.

In reality, due to lack of training, his growth of power had been stagnant. However, his Strength had reached 500 tons and +32. As compared to his previous stats, his Strength had multiplied by three times. As long as he was willing to, he had the ability to even change the weather. He was indeed God-sent.

Although the wave was intense, it was not sufficient to crush the ice layer.

There were electrical arcs exploding everywhere. The air

pressure was then compressed, the air stopped flowing and it dissolved into a liquid. It happened so fast that only a high-speed camera could capture it.

An explosion was heard, and a shock wave had spread all over the place.

The ice layer was crushed into powder, and even the glass layer in the hole that was solidified by the lava had been blasted. The hole that was 100 kilometers wide was reverberating.

As the glacier disappeared, the hole was like a domino, causing the area to collapse.

Ice layers that covered a few hundred meters fell into the lake, and soon, the area nearby started to collapse with collateral damage.

A crumbling noise followed the massive cracks. More and more ice layers had collapsed and its impact expanded like a virus.

It happened so quickly that within minutes, the entire hole collapsed.

Luo Yuan who was floating mid-air was surprised. He did not expect it to be this easy to fall apart like that, but it was also caused by the unique terrain of the crates that were in a bowl-shaped from the antimatter bomb explosion. The inside of the crate was flat and smooth which made the ice layers collapse easily.

It would be so much harder to do the same on a normal terrain.

As the glaciers fell into the hole, loud thuds were heard. The lake that was initially boiling was soon buried by the glacier.

As compared to the crater, the glacier was just a thin layer, but the moment that all of it fell towards the bottom, it was piled 500 meters tall. Initially, there was still water vapor coming out of the hole, but as the lake's temperature was decreasing due to the burying of the glacier, the water vapor was visibly reduced.

In less than half a minute, the water vapor was nowhere to be seen. Under the extreme cold, the cracks between the ice layers had soon recovered and were now stuck together again.

Luo Yuan watched from midair for a while. Seeing that everything had stopped, he was relieved.

Although the ice did not seem to be able to stop the eruption, the absence of the boiling lake convinced him to know that the ice layer in the crater would be piled thicker in the cold weather. And soon, the entire crater would be filled with ice.

He proceeded to do the same to the other crater.

...

There was an uncanny atmosphere in the bathroom.

A fair body was rubbing against his. Soon, her body twitched and she sat on the floor.

"You are hurting me!" Wang Shishi moaned while slapping Luo Yuan.

There was nothing that he could do. His body was even harder than metal; he was not a normal creature anymore. If not for Wang Shishi's good physique, an ordinary woman would not be able to handle him at all.

"You deserved it! It was you who wanted to go so far!" Luo Yuan teased her.

"Although it was uncomfortable, it was kind of fun," said Wang Shishi while planting kisses on him.

"You're shameless!" Luo Yuan said.

As the most difficult time had passed, he could finally go back to his normal life.

Without the continuous growth of his Strength, he could control it perfectly now, without affecting his life.

The both of them spent time for a while. Luo Yuan then stood up,

put on his clothes and went back into his room. Although he had full control of his Strength now, it was still too dangerous for them to sleep together.

He was afraid that he would hurt her while he was sleeping, and that would be gravely upsetting.

Luo Yuan sat on his bed and used Will to refine his shoes that could anchor space. He then laid on the bed.

Suddenly, he stood up, walked to the small arsenal in his room and opened the cabinet.

He took out a glass bottle with the Wisdom Heart that he retrieved from the Blue Dragon's nest half a month ago.

He was worried that consuming it would bring about an unexpected change in his body. Furthermore, the attack of the Glassians came out of nowhere and occupied all his waking hours, which caused the Wisdom Heart to be neglected in the cabinet until now.

He opened the bottle and poured the Wisdom Heart on his hand.

As it was left there for a long time, it seemed to be dehydrated. There were cracks on its surface, but it was still active.

Perhaps this was the only Wisdom Heart left on earth.

His eyes sparkled as he stared at it.

Chapter 464: Spirit Ignition

Luo Yuan stared at the Wisdom Heart for a while. He took a bite and chewed it. A strange, sour taste flowed into his throat and stomach.

The Wisdom Heart had gathered a majority of the nutrients and active energy from the Wisdom Tree. This purple level Wisdom Heart possessed a terrifying power where even Luo Yuan felt a tad bloated from just a bite.

Just when he was about to eat the remaining one-third of the Wisdom Heart, a thought crossed his mind.

Ever since he became the mayor, he was more selfless as he was able to put his people's lives before his own. He thought he could research further into the mysterious power of the Wisdom Heart, as its structure was still within a biological category.

It was formed by countless cells and possessed DNA of life codes, which meant that it could be cloned.

Now that there were less than ten million people in the world, there were even fewer researchers. With such meager numbers, it was fortunate that their technology did not progress backward.

However, this Wisdom Heart could change everything.

The average human Intelligence was only +10, where +12 would

be considered a genius and +13 was rare, having the ability of perfect recall. A +14 brain could calculate faster than a computer and this Wisdom Heart was at the purple level, which meant it was more effective for those with an Intelligence within +18. As soon as it could be mass produced, human evolution would be drastic and there would be a complete transformation in human civilization.

When that happened, researchers would not be unique anymore – mankind would enter an era where everyone was a researcher. Until then, even the technology of the Glassians would be obsolete within ten years and mankind would enter a technology explosion era. The more he thought about it, the more excited he was. He kept pacing around in his room.

Suddenly, the Wisdom Heart started to take effect on his body. His scalp was numb – he put his excitement aside and tried to calm down. He quickly laid down on his bed.

Just as he did, his five senses were stripped away from him one by one.

Fortunately, it was not his first time eating a Wisdom Heart. He was all too familiar with the changes that he was experiencing.

He was in darkness for a while. When he opened his eyes, the world seemed to be much brighter. He felt elevated; there was an indescribable realization that flashed through his mind. The images from his birth until the present day were crystal clear in now. Every day, every moment, to every second of his memories were played in his mind.

He could taste his first suckle during breastfeeding, his parents' excitement, their laughter, their chatter. The memories that he had long forgotten were so clear in his mind. He even recalled the time when he was in his mother's womb. It was a warm and peaceful place.

Tears rolled slowly down his cheeks...

Those were the best memories he ever had.

He opened his eyes and let out a sigh. He then emptied his mind and looked at the system, his Intelligence was now +17.

He was relieved that there were no changes to his four-dimensional vision.

Suddenly, he noticed that there was an addition to his natural abilities.

"Spirit Ignition (Level 9)"

He was not surprised. To be honest, he had already owned a few natural abilities where he was no longer excited to earn an extra ability. Moreover, during the genetic modification experiment, he had seen all sorts of abilities where most of them were nothing to him.

He clicked onto the Spirit Ignition selection.

"Spirit Ignition"

"Level: 9 (Will-related ability)"

"Effect: The ability to evaluate and accelerate the movement of microparticles."

"Remarks: This is an ability to materialize spirits, distance does not affect its power!"

The remark of the ability was not convincing to him; to accelerate the movement of microparticles did not excite him at all.

Temperature was the manifestation of particle movements. The faster a particle moved, the higher the temperature. The slower the particle moved, the lower the temperature. The system exaggerated its ability. What it meant was that the ability would increase the temperature of the materials.

He took a look again and he was stunned.

What Luo Yuan noticed was not its effect, but how distance did not affect its power. He thought about it and realized the ability was similar to his space-time bubble where it involved the four-

dimensional world.

Anything that involved the four-dimensional world was not going to be an easy task.

Just like the space-time bubble, his four-dimensional travel or even the least attractive four-dimensional vision were all abilities that broke the rules of the three-dimensional world. It allowed Luo Yuan to have a complete view of the world. It was like looking down from high altitudes down on the world which was at a lower altitude.

His Spirit Ignition ability was related to the four-dimensional world.

He was not as calm as he was before. He looked around, opened his arsenal and took a saber. It was a level seven Zhanmadao that was made from a giant beast's teeth. It was a gift that came with the villa. He held the saber in front of him.

Although the system did not show him how to utilize the ability, it was not too difficult for Luo Yuan. Since it was called Spirit Ignition, it had to be related to Will, where its activation was similar to how he usually used his Will.

He let out a breath and gathered his Will.

As his Will drained, there was a drastic change to the Zhanmadao.

The tip of the saber had turned red and got brighter. It let out a bright glow and suddenly, a ball of light appeared in front of him like a mini sun. It lasted for three seconds and the glow soon died down.

"That... That's incredible!"

He looked at the Zhanmadao, and was in shock. He even had slight trouble breathing. The tip of the saber was gone, the place was burnt black, and there was a thick, burnt smell in the air.

Still shocked, he looked around for metal to experiment with. However, there was no metal in the room that he could play with. The supply of metal during the apocalypse was strict. Besides some important kitchen equipment, it was rare to find metal elsewhere. It was rare, even in the villa. For the sake of his experiments, he took out one of the locks since he would not be using it anyway.

He squeezed the lock in his hand and used Spirit Ignition.

This time it was even shorter. Within two seconds, half of the lock was gone.

The lock was made of alloy and other major parts of it were steel too. Luo Yuan remembered that the boiling point of steel was 2750 degrees Celcius. To be able to gasify it, the temperature was three times more than its boiling point, possibly even above 10,000 degrees Celsius. It was possible that even he could not handle such a temperature.

Although it drained his Will, it was only five times more than the time he used his space-time bubble. If he was willing to, he could last for more than ten minutes.

He could not hide his excitement. Before this, his Will could heat up materials but the most he could achieve was burning wood or melt metal where the temperature would not go above 1,000 degrees Celsius. It was impossible to gasify materials. However, this ability that came from the Wisdom Heart seemed to have made it possible through his Will and other unknown techniques.

Looking at the piece of metal, he realized that if it were just pure power, it would not excite Luo Yuan that much. What excited him was that this ability made up for his drawback for lacking a long-distance attack.

If he had this ability when he was fighting the Glassians, it would not be so chaotic when he encountered the antimatter bomb from the mothership. All he had to do was to lock the target down and detonate it from afar.

Chapter 465: Technological Gap

The next day at the canteen, Luo Yuan and Chen Xinjie sat across each other in absolute silence. They had not seen each other for quite some time; she seemed to have lost weight. He could see pain plastered across her face, the cheerfulness was no longer there.

"I'm so sorry..." Luo Yuan broke the silence after a while.

He did not know that her mother had passed away a few days ago. It was too sudden, and he was lost for words. If he had visited her earlier and treated her mother, this would not have happened!

"You don't have to feel sorry, I knew this was coming; it was destined!" Chen Xinjie said softly, as she looked away. Her eyes were red.

There was a pin-drop silence between them again!

It was lunch hour, where many people were walking in and out of the City Hall's canteen. Most of the seats were taken but the seats near them were empty. Nobody dared to come close.

Sensing judgmental eyes looking at them, Luo Yuan asked, "Will you work at my secretariat? I will assign Cheng Guanghui to be in charge of something more practical."

"I don't think that's a good idea, Mayor. I'm doing good right now!" Chen Xinjie bit her lips and said with her head hanging low,

"You already know that I was here for what I was assigned to do by the superior. So now, there's no need anymore."

"But everything has passed, we should move on..." Luo Yuan said more seriously.

"Mayor, I'm done eating, I'm making a move!" Chen Xinjie immediately took her leave and adjourned.

Looking at her running away from him, Luo Yuan, with his jaw hanging open, let out a sigh. Their relationship was never normal. It was like a white cloth stained with dirt, they could never turn back time and erase what they had done.

...

Luo Yuan returned to his office. After reading more than ten documents, he had nothing to do. Now that Hope City was back on track, there was nothing much to be done by him. As the heating system was completed and the expansion of the vegetable supply, more factories were running and lives were better.

Although it was nothing as compared to before, people did not have to live in hunger. The biggest credit was the nuclear fusion furnace from the Glassian's spacecraft. It provided endless energy which allowed mankind to survive in the cold.

There was more than one nuclear fusion furnace in Hope City now. For safety purposes and to prevent any emergency situations,

Luo Yuan dismantled one of the nuclear fusion furnaces from a spacecraft that was floating in space for energy backup. Even if one of the nuclear fusion furnaces went wrong, it would not affect the lives of the people.

Luo Yuan tapped on the table repeatedly while thinking. Soon, he picked up the internal phone and called his secretary Cheng Guanghui.

"Get the institute director to see me!"

He hung up right away.

Now that the majority of the researchers had been sent on the spacecraft, the biological institute was the only laboratory that remained on earth.

This would mean that many genuine researchers were in the institute. Besides a couple of authoritative ones, most of them were lab technicians who were newly hired as talent reserves, as well as operating the assembly line of the human clones.

The population was too low. Reproduction was difficult ever since the apocalypse, where pregnancy rates dropped drastically. To depend on natural reproduction to recover the population in the Reconstruction Area before the disaster would take up to 1,000 years while recovering the population of mankind before the apocalypse would take a few thousand years to 10,000 years.

While things would be much easier with cloning, it was also the only way for mankind to recover their population rapidly.

Unfortunately, regardless if it was Hope City or the spacecraft that people would eventually migrate to, the capacity for mankind was limited. It would not take a long time for the population of mankind to maintain at a maximum of ten million unless there was a planet capable of sustaining life, or a certain technology to modify a planet.

Unfortunately, the possibility of the first alternative was low, while the latter needed time.

...

Soon, with the help of his secretary, the institute director walked into his office.

He was a short and skinny old man who was almost 60 years old. He came right after he received the call - without so much as a chance to change his clothes.

The news about Luo Yuan defeating the aliens was still playing on speakers. He was now a legend in the peoples' eyes, where he was highly respected. Although this senior researcher had seen all kinds of leaders, encountering Luo Yuan had made him nervous and rather startled, "Ma... Mayor, you asked for me?"

"Sit!" Luo Yuan said while nodding in acknowledgment.

He closed the door carefully and sat on the couch anxiously. It was his first time meeting the legendary mayor. While thinking of the research progress, he could not sit still.

"How's the research on human cloning techniques going?" Luo Yuan asked.

"We need more time. There were some issues with the amniotic formula; we need more experiments." Realizing that the mayor was asking what was already in his mind, there was sweat dripping down his forehead.

The clone factory in Hope City was not successful. Since the disaster, there was a chasm on the technique. There was no breakthrough to simulate the amniotic fluid in the womb, which caused the clone factory to stop operations.

Human cloning usually involved issues such as morality and ethics. Even during the apocalypse, human cloning remained a secret. There were only a couple of such laboratories in New Capital City and before that, many of the biological researchers had not heard of it. It was a completely new topic for them where everything had started from square one.

Luo Yuan frowned while he listened. Although he had many cloning experiments himself, he never engaged the most basic amniotic fluid technique. At that moment, nobody cared how the cultivation fluid was made.

However, he was not in a rush. After all, the biological technique in Hope City was not much different with New Capital City. Moreover, with the advanced genetic technology from the Glassian's spacecraft, he believed that would be easily solved as soon as people figured out the technique used by the Glassians.

"Can we clone plants in the lab?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Plants cloning?" The director was shocked, and he replied immediately, "Mayor, as compared to human cloning, plant cloning would be much easier. Sexless breeding would be even simpler, as, with our technology, there shouldn't be a problem."

"That's great, let's prepare the related technical reserves. I will drop by again to take a look after a while." Luo Yuan nodded and said.

The director was confused. Although he did not know what Luo Yuan had in mind, he agreed anyway as his priority was to complete the political mission. He then left right away, the office was quiet again.

That was a plan to produce intelligence.

As compared to the low efficiency of cloning, Luo Yuan hoped to directly synthesize useful ingredients in the Wisdom Heart into materials such as high molecular substances and protein for industrial production. However, with the available technology in Hope City, that was not possible. Perhaps he would need technology from the Glassians to make it work.

Chapter 466: Frozen Life

Luo Yuan left the office, as he got ready to patrol the volcano sites.

Heating lamps lit up the street to maintain the surrounding temperature. It was unimaginable how everything out there had frozen over.

There were not many pedestrians as it was only two o'clock. Perhaps it would be crowded later during dinner time.

Earlier, Hope City implemented a centralized cafeteria system to control the availability of food. Although the situation seemed to have improved, this system was not abolished due to several reasons and to prevent the wastage of food and resources

Not only the availability of food was considered, but a lot of utensils were needed if it were to be supplied for the cooking needs of each family. Under such circumstances, there would not be a supply of natural gas or coal gas, as only electronic kitchen appliances could be used.

Based on the current technology of Hope City and the materials stored, it was impossible to prepare all these things in a short period of time, and they were far from necessary.

However, there were only a few people walking on the street, possibly due to the city being governed by martial law at the moment; both sides were heavily guarded.

They had no choice, as survivors from the three cities had migrated to Hope City, resulting in a subsequent surge of the population. However, there were not many vacancies available in Hope City. In order to increase the rate of employment, the use of machines was reduced. There were several ongoing renovation works and construction activities offering job opportunities to the people. Nevertheless, there were still a lot of people unemployed.

Million people were at home doing nothing, and with the ongoing conflict between local and foreign citizens, the enforcement of martial law became a necessity.

It was believed that martial law would be exercised for quite a long period of time. Perhaps the situation would turn better after humans had all migrated to the spaceship.

.....

Luo Yuan walked out of the underground city.

It was snowing out there.

After the disaster, the city started to snow more frequently. Apparently, it had been snowing for a long time, considering the amount of snowfall that had accumulated on the ground.

The snowflakes were dark gray in color falling with a huge amount of dust. Before the snowflakes landed onto his body, the

surrounding air was stirred. The snowflakes on his body were instantly drifted by his Will.

He stomped hard onto the ground and his body immediately propelled himself forward like a rocket. Suddenly, a very sharp hissing sound came from the air. His figure was now as small as a dot, flying towards the sky.

As usual, he headed toward the pit resulting from the explosion of the antimatter bomb. Everything was fine and the volcano beneath had been completely frozen, forming thick layers of ice. Sublimation of the ice layers did not happen, indicating that the initial plan was still effective.

He then headed towards the erupted volcano.

The volcanic activity gradually subsided after half a month. The red lava was cooled and covered by layers of ice. Other than some steam coming out of the volcano, everything was fine.

Luo Yuan was slightly relieved. Sometimes it was not too bad to have such a bad weather as the volcanoes were greatly influenced by such extreme temperatures.

The place was deserted. Countless gigantic plants were frozen and had turned black. They were dead and looked like gigantic carved metals.

Luo Yuan felt heavy-hearted to see this.

He walked into the forest. The place which was initially loaded with danger, filled with birds chirping around and the roaring of beasts. All these had disappeared now and most of the living creatures had perished.

He stood there for a while, getting ready to return.

At this moment, Luo Yuan's sensitive hearing senses had picked up a rustling and hustling sound.

He immediately switched his thoughts away and followed the direction where the sound came from. It was around six kilometers away. His vision was blocked by trees. However, thanks to Luo Yuan's four-dimensional vision, it did not affect him at all.

He saw a squirrel-like mutant carefully squeezing out of the snow. Its body was half a meter long and was considered as a small sized creature.

It was covered with thick beige fur, making it look as plump as a round ball. Obviously, it was able to survive under such an extreme conditions.

It looked around with its dark small eyes, and as soon as it squeezed out of the snow, its long red ears were monitoring the surroundings, being extra alert.

Suddenly, it ran very quickly and climbed onto a frozen big tree.

Its sharp nails were strongly embedded in the ice layers, ensuring its movements were not affected, being quick and agile.

In just a short while, it climbed into a tree cave and scratched the ice layers into tiny pieces and scattered everywhere.

Soon, a very small hole was formed. The size of the hole was to fit the size of its body. Soon, it climbed into the small hole with a little bit more effort.

Luo Yuan waited for a while and he got curious as he did not see the mutant coming out from the hole.

His body levitated slowly and flew next to the big tree. With his sensitive hearing, a chewing sound was heard.

Was it possible that the squirrel-like mutant had hidden some food over here?

Luo Yuan felt interested but he did not want to disturb the "squirrel" while it chomped down its meal, apart from the King Kong, which was the first creature he met after the disaster.

He waited patiently for another ten minutes. Perhaps it was full now and was squeezing out of the hole. It first exposed half of its head, looking around vigilantly. It waited for a moment to ensure that its surrounding was safe.

Eventually, it got out of the hole. With its claws, the tree cave

was carefully covered with snow. The mutant then jumped down from the tree and disappeared as soon as it got back into the hole beneath the ground.

Luo Yuan did not feel anything uncanny. Compared to the tree cave, the cave under the frozen ground would certainly be warmer.

After the "squirrel" had disappeared, Luo Yuan looked at the big frozen tree curiously. The layer of ice had accumulated on its surface and was reaching 30 centimeters thick, surrounding the tree like an armor. He pressed against the tree and tried to put some force on it.

The extremely cold ice layers were solid yet fragile, as it could easily crack into pieces.

The original color of the bark was exposed as soon as a large amount of crushed ice fell off the tree.

The tree looked bald and bare since the leaves fell off together with the crushed ice. Luo Yuan then immediately cleaned up the tree cave that the "squirrel" had entered from.

There was nothing special about the tree cave. There were no dead bodies or fruits stored inside. However, he was surprised to see when there was a white and creamy fluid seeping through the bottom of the tree cave. It was the position where the mutant scratched off the ice layer.

He wiped away the fluid, exposing the wood which was light green in color.

He was astonished to see the tree still alive, as the inner part of the wood was not frozen. It seemed like it was in hibernation, reducing the metabolic activity while waiting for the sun to shine on Earth again.

The plants were stronger than one could imagine. Luo Yuan thought in his heart that these creatures were no ordinary living organisms. They were mutated creatures. Their ability to survive had gone beyond the ordinary and it would not have happened before the apocalypse.

Luo Yuan was happy with the discovery.

The humans were going to migrate and leave the Earth temporarily as to protect themselves against the threats of the Glassians. However, one day, humans would still return to `Earth.

Perhaps the day would not come so soon, but Luo Yuan strongly believed in this.

.....

Luo Yuan left the big tree, continued to look around.

He noticed that there were a lot of big trees that were still alive. Generally, the size of the tree would be bigger if it had a higher

level in which it would also have better ability to survive under extreme weather conditions. Most of the low-level trees had been found frozen to death.

He discovered that some of the trees had undergone special mutation when they were trying to survive and withstand the cold.

There was heat releasing from the tree trunk of one of the trees. Luo Yuan did not see any ice or snow around the tree. The trunk was not bare and bald like the others but it was growing densely with large branches full of leaves. The tree branches grew like an umbrella, covering the large region, making it look special in the deserted forest.

Its presence had created a shelter for the creatures and a simple food chain.

It provided a habitat for the birds and living organisms. The crowd was huge. Fortunately, the tree was big enough, resembling a small forest.

Of course, this was not the only place with a shelter. He flew across the sky and discovered that despite some of the regions that did not have such species that undergone such an evolution, they were still emitting a large amount of heat due to the extreme weather, forming an oasis. It was the miracle of life, allowing life to go on into the restricted area.

However, most of the oasis was small. The largest oasis that Luo Yuan found was only 100 square kilometers, whereas the smallest

one was around 100 square meters. The deserted forest and still air were what was often being seen.

Subconsciously, Luo Yuan had come to the ocean. He stopped and stared at the terrifying scene in front of him.

The entire ocean had frozen. But this was not the reason that Luo Yuan was terrified.

He gradually landed, standing at the coastline.

The sea had frozen over but the coastline was still visible. The top layer of the seawater was frozen, and as the ice was less dense than water, it resulted in an overall increase in the level of ice layers, as if a highland was formed.

He stared at the glacier that had grown a lot bigger, not recovering for a while.

Chapter 467: Terrifying Effect

Luo Yuan then headed towards the ocean.

He moved across the surface of the ice like a stream of light. Countless cyclones and tornadoes had appeared in the air and subsided as he moved along. The clothes synthesized from the Demonic Horse's Mane were destroyed and only the belt was left unscathed. Although its effect was a lot weaker, it could still allow him to reach a speed of one kilometer per second. It was sufficient for him to fly in a regular manner.

The whole ocean had been frozen over and covered by layers of jet black ice. In some of the regions, it was visible that the sea had barely a ripple on it, which would normally be formed with the rocky waves.

On the surface of the ice, Luo Yuan could occasionally see the traces of marine life. However, they were all dead. Perhaps it was due to the abrupt changes that occurred, its curiosity, or even the hope to obtain oxygen (for some of the sea mammals), the gigantic marine beasts attempted to break the surface of the frozen ice before it thickened. They realized that they could no longer escape from the sea as soon as they jumped up to the top layer of the ice. Soon, they were frozen to death and turned into ice sculptures.

Most of the marine wildlife were fish; one of the cold-blooded animals.

Compared to the mammals, the aquatic life had lower cold

tolerance. Basically, they were living in an environment above zero degrees Celsius. They had a weaker resistance to cold, as compared to the amphibians. Once they were exposed to such an extreme temperature, they would bound to perish.

Luo Yuan saw a dead body of the giant mutated fish. Regardless of how powerful the mutant was, it could not withstand such cold weather. The crater-like holes surrounding the dead body showed that the mutated fish was struggling for survival before its death.

After flying for half an hour, Luo Yuan stopped. He was at a place that was around 1,000 kilometers away from the coastline. He looked at the frozen sea surface and decided to examine the depth of the ice sheet and the living condition of the sea wildlife.

He struck a blow against the surface of the ice.

The blow emitted a dazzling white line before it struck on the ice sheet. With its strong pressure, the air had turned into a blue liquid. When the attack hit the surface of the ice, ripples were formed on the entire surface of the ice as if a meteor had just landed. The impact caused a huge explosion. With his current Strength, the energy released from each attack was equivalent to 3 tons of TNT.

With just one blow, a 60 meter-deep hole with a diameter of around 200 meters was formed.

There was a massive crack in the ice, which looked like a big spider web forming on its surface.

However, the hit did not completely break the layer of ice in the sea.

Luo Yuan struck seven blows until there a flow of seawater emerged from the crater-like hole.

The depth of the ice had reached 300 meters. However, in comparison to the thickness of ice sheets in Antarctica, this was just the beginning.

Luo Yuan was glad that despite how freezing cold it was outside and many of the living organisms had all gone extinct, inside the ocean, there was still a hope of survival. In fact, the temperature of the seawater beneath the ice sheet was not too low. Its contact with the ice sheet was only around zero degrees Celsius. The temperature was even higher in deeper levels of seawater. The marine life would certainly be able to survive under such temperature.

He was so close to the fresh seawater. Suddenly, he could see many marine creatures living under the sea. In just a few minutes, it was filled with a large group of fish.

Looking at these beautiful creatures, Luo Yuan decided to stay on for a while.

After the disaster, eating meat was a luxury. Even Luo Yuan as a supreme leader consumed only vegetables and carbohydrates for his meals. The only difference perhaps was only the taste.

The terrestrial creatures that he encountered earlier were rare. However, the marine life here was still living healthily and Luo Yuan would definitely hunt them for food.

After a minute, he caught an unknown mutated fish and threw it towards the surface of the ice.

He made a cut along its belly and removed its skin. He briefly cleaned the fish and started to cook.

Of course, there would not be a branch or a twig in sight now as everything was frozen everywhere he went. However, he was certain to still find a way to cook it.

Although the power of Will was incomparable with the Strength of his body, it was more than sufficient to use it for a barbecue skewer.

The first attempt had caught Luo Yuan on the hop. He burned the mutated fish as soon as the fire was built.

When Luo Yuan regained his senses, the burnt mutated fish could no longer be eaten.

Luo Yuan then realized that he had ignited the flames with his spirit. In fact, there was a seamless connection between the ability to use his Will to generate heat and to ignite flames with his spirit.

Using his Will to heat up and spirit ignition was actually really the same.

He gained the ability of heart ignition after consuming the light purple wisdom heart. Ever since then, his Will heating-up ability had completely changed. It became more powerful and difficult to control, just like how the earlier occurrence had easily overpowered him.

Being difficult to control did not mean that it could not be controlled. It was similar to how a sudden increase in Strength required sufficient time to train for and to adapt to. Eventually, he would have strong control over it again. Luo Yuan caught another mutated fish and attempted for the second time.

As time passed, there were more and more burnt mutated fish.

After half an hour, he carefully controlled the fire and successfully grilled a fish.

However, Luo Yuan was curious as the fish had no smell. There was neither a fragrant nor fishy smell. The surface of the mutated fish was not carbonized. Otherwise, he would have thought that the fish was burnt again.

Luo Yuan frowned again when he was cutting up the fish. The color of the meat looked strange as it was grayish white. He placed it in front of his nose and caught a whiff of it again. There was a very light and strange smell but he could not put his finger on whether or not the smell was a good or a bad one.

He had never come across smell like this.

He hesitated for a while and decided to eat it. His facial expression changed after a few bites and immediately spat it out.

It tasted rather off. To say that it was the meat of a fish would be unlikely, as it was more of a mix of several indistinguishable meats. A strange chemical reaction had seemed to have happened when the mutated fish was grilled.

He was really puzzled. He looked at all of the burnt fishes and most of them were only burnt on the surface. He then checked the meat of the fishes and realized that they were all the same, with grayish white meat and had no smell at all.

Luo Yuan suddenly recalled the introduction message from the system, "The ability to evaluate and accelerate the movement of microparticles."

Earlier, he focused on the effect of how the spirit ignition ability was able to change the temperature and completely underestimated its ability to threaten creatures and destroy physical structures.

The internal energy of an object can be increased by working on it and transferring heat energy.

Heating food in a microwave was one of the ways of working on

the particles inside the food. Spirit ignition belonged to the former, while flame heating belonged to the latter. Compared to heating it up with microwave molecules, heat generated by spirit ignition could directly agitate quantum level microscopic particles.

The microscopic particles were moving randomly and the molecular structure would be completely distorted.

Chapter 468: Untitled

Eventually, Luo Yuan decided to give up on cooking the mutated fish.

Even though it was already evening and the sky was getting darker and darker, Luo Yuan was not going home yet. Since the disaster happened, he was responsible for the survival of the nation and he most certainly did not have a chance to take a break from it now.

He resumed his journey like a lonely traveler.

After a few hours, he was closer to the equator and he could see the ocean once again despite the fact that the temperature was only 0.3 degrees Celsius. However, compared to the other regions, this place was undoubtedly warmer. There were a few convergence regions of the ocean's currents, making it relatively difficult to freeze.

There were icebergs slowly bobbing up and down in the sea like a lonely island and the ocean was shrouded by crushed ice. The crashing sound between them could be heard due to the continuous movements of the seawater.

Without a doubt, this place had become the largest colony of organisms.

Even above the crushed ice, there were many living organisms including mutated birds and sea mammals. On the bigger icebergs,

the original color of the iceberg was no longer visible as it was crowded by organisms. Of course, there were still a large number of aquatic organisms living beneath the crushed ice though it was not visible to the naked eye.

As the sky got darker, all of the creatures huddled together and the place became quiet and peaceful.

There were hardly any ripples on the surface of the ocean when Luo Yuan arrived. A mutated giant bird stared at him and buried its head under its wings. Another ocean beast which was farther away from him did not even bother to move.

The air was filled with a strong smell of blood and there were blood stains everywhere on the ice. Luo Yuan knew that this was not a peaceful place. Instead, it is a place where the living organisms ate one another in order to survive. They had a unique way of living in this unique environment. One could either be the hunter or the hunted.

The sky further darkened and it was now the coldest time of the day. Most of the organisms were done hunting for food before the weather turned colder and the survivors were now relying on each other to withstand the extremely cold weather at night. However, the very next day, this would be a place where they killed each other again for food. But at least it was still quiet and peaceful until that moment arrives.

Luo Yuan stepped on the crushed ice and walked step by step, passing a few giant beasts along the way. As the weather got colder, the giant beasts did not move and seemed to be

hibernating. All the mutated beings that survived were high-level creatures ranging from level five to eight.

At this moment, there was a notification from the task system and he had discovered three level eight mutated beasts. With his current abilities, he could easily have completed the given task and would probably have leveled up and gained an additional attribute point. However, Luo Yuan was absolutely indifferent to this.

Before the disaster, the mutated beasts were human's greatest enemy. However, they were now the same as any human, struggling to survive.

The reason why he did not kill the mutated beasts was not because he was weak. Instead, it was because he now had compassion for those mutated beasts.

After a while, he passed through the region and the ocean began to freeze. He finally stopped and looked at the time, finding out that it was already nine o'clock at night now so he decided to return. He intentionally passed by the lightning tree on his way back.

Coincidentally, the lightning tree was absorbing the lightning around the area when suddenly, a lightning struck the entire region! It looked like pythons wriggling across the sky and the area turned bright while the static electricity in the air grew stronger. Putting aside the erupted volcanoes, this was probably the only place on Earth that one could still see light.

The level nine creature that was still inhabiting the Earth was not affected by the bad environmental conditions. In fact, it was more nourished than the other creatures as the dissipation of energy that happened during the process of absorption resulted in a warmer surrounding for it.

There was a ring-liked forest forming at the border around the tree. Some of the plants that grew near the lightning tree had mutated, giving them similar electrical charge absorption abilities as the lightning tree; their leaves were now emitting a faint glow of light.

Perhaps a unique forest will form here and after 10 years or even a 100 years, the whole Earth would be fully occupied with these unique plant species. However, humans might be living in space during that time.

Luo Yuan did not want to waste any more time. He immediately launched his space-time bubble and arrived home in less than 10 minutes.

...

"Why did you come home so late?" Huang Jiahui grumbled.

The women were not asleep yet and were waiting for him. Luo Yuan apologized and said, "I'm going out as I have something I need to deal with. Don't wait for me to come home and get some sleep first."

"The food is still warm. Don't forget to eat!" Huang Jiahui replied.

Luo Yuan nodded his head before he walked into the kitchen and ate all of the dishes. As he was about to wash the plates, Wang Xianguang came in and said, "I'll help you to wash the plates."

Luo Yuan was stunned for a while as he saw that Wang Xianguang was wearing her pajamas. Her pajamas were so short that it could hardly cover her round butt. The existing factories would not have manufactured pajamas like this and it was obvious that Wang Xianguang had modified hers.

Wang Xianguang blushed and lowered her head slightly as she walked in. Luo Yuan seemed to have understood something and became slightly agitated. He felt guilty as he knew that he had neglected Wang Xianguang for some time. Since she was an independent woman, Luo Yuan did not pay much attention to her.

Instead of leaving, he sat down and stared at Wang Xianguang who was washing the plates. The kitchen was so bright that it made her long and fair legs look so attractive. It seemed like Wang Xianguang could feel that his eyes were on her, which made her face even redder while her body trembled. She wanted to leave but she did not want to give up so easily.

She understood that there would not be any romance after the apocalypse but since she had decided to stay with him, behaving in a reserved manner would make their relationship feel rather distant. Hence, Wang Xianguang undressed herself there and then. Their first night together did not please her as it was a rather

painful experience, however, her heart was filled with love and satisfaction.

"Your body is finally mine." Wang Xianguang said as she covered her breasts with a thin blanket.

"I should be the one to say this." Luo Yuan replied.

Wang Xianguang smiled. She did not say anything but she thought in her heart, "You belong to many women, but in my heart, you're my only man."

Chapter 469: Megastructures

The massive spaceship of the Glassians which floated in space was the humans' last hope - the future Noah's ark.

The habitation, which was originally empty, had become very crowded after many rounds of migration. There were currently around 10,000 people staying there.

The extraterrestrial botanical garden that was located at the center of the spaceship had been demolished with only some of the biological samples kept for research purposes. The place was then sterilized and replaced with several tents. This had occupied almost the entire habitation area.

Though these extraterrestrial creatures and different types of bacterial viruses were not harmful to the Glassians, that might not have been the case for the humans and therefore it would have been risky to not have them removed.

Some of the tents were to be relocated by today as they were going to launch a trial-manufacture of the human's first internal building on the spaceship.

In these three months, with the aid of information provided by the intellectual brain as well as many engineers who had been working day and night, the project of manufacturing the Glassians' modular factories was launched. A variety of engineering machinery and infrastructural equipment had been manufactured lately, hence, it was now the perfect time for the humans to modify

the spaceship.

Luo Yuan purposely returned to the spaceship and organized a simple ceremony to launch the construction project at eight o'clock in the morning. Hundreds of engineering vehicle then gradually entered the construction site.

Luo Yuan was surprised when he saw the familiar appearance of the engineering vehicles used for construction. However, compared to the machines used in the Reconstruction Area which were rugged and black in color, the ones here looked big and were silvery white. Its surface was smooth and shiny and the important components had been assembled tightly, showing no visible gap between the joints.

The Glassians' precise processing machinery and their advanced materials technology had transformed the appearance of the engineering vehicles which now exuded a strong sense of elegance. Technological deterioration after the disaster was clearly shown in the performance of these vehicles. For instance, these engineering vehicles did not have any electronic devices and most of the technologies adopted were from the 50s or 60s (of course, this was partly because they were working on a tight deadline).

There was a shortage of fuel oil here and Hope City's storage cells were not sufficient to supply the high horsepower necessary to operate the vehicle. Therefore, these engineering vehicles carried an electric cable on top of them all the time which was somehow awkward and embarrassing!

Luo Yuan nodded his head as he listened to the chief engineer's

introduction. Regardless of whether it was ugly or not, at least they were still able to use it. The project had commenced and numerous trucks carried prefabricated metal parts to the construction site. Looking at the obviously overloaded vehicles, Luo Yuan felt that it was not too bad to use electric cables. Even the Reconstruction Area which was technologically advanced would not be able to move these overloaded vehicles if only storage cells had been used.

Luo Yuan then noticed that each of the prefabricated metal parts were standardized at six meters by six meters while its thickness was set at 0.15 meters. He doubted and asked, "It is so thin. Are you sure it's fine?"

The construction of the internal part of a spaceship was different from its surface as the spaceship's speed would be increased or reduced accordingly during a flight. The compressive strength of the materials used for the construction of a skyscraper would certainly not be the same as the ones used for the construction of a building in a spaceship.

The chief engineer that was standing at the side immediately explained, "Mayor, the intellectual brain recommended a high-tensile strength metal which had undergone a complicated production process. It had been passed through a demagnetizer after fusion in a furnace. Then, it was coated with a layer of heat insulator before it was forged and compressed and so on... Therefore, it is at least 10 times stronger than the normal flight deck. A trial was done and with this thickness, the skyscraper could withstand a G-force of 200 G."

Luo Yuan nodded his head. The manned spaceship would normally experience gradual acceleration and a sudden deceleration or instant braking would rarely happen unless necessary. If ever the skyscraper had to withstand a force of 200 G's, before the skyscraper collapses, most of the humans would already be dead.

Since it was prefabricated with metal, v-blocks had been attached between two metal arms and the need for welding was greatly reduced. The progress of the construction project was quite fast as three floors of the skyscraper were built in just a few hours.

With this rate of progress, it was estimated that the project could be completed in less than a month. It was going to be a mega building with a height of 200 meters, a length of 300 meters, and a width of 30 meters. Upon the completion of this building, it could hold 800,000 to 1,000,000 people. At the same time, it would have its own street, shop lots, agricultural area, park and all kinds of residential facilities.

The building was like a small city which could sustain all the people within it. According to the plan, the whole residential area was going to have 12 similar buildings like this. Most of them had been built to resettle the survivors and five of them were built in case there was an increase in the number of survivors. The streets connecting the buildings would be the only spaces left of the habitation area.

It would be a small city that could hold at most 1,200,0000 people and it was unbelievable that a spaceship like this could have accommodated so many people.

...

In the afternoon, Luo Yuan visited the research centers in the industrial area. He lingered for some time at the genetic research center, however, everything was still in the investigation process.

The instruments used in the lab were more complicated than the machines used in the factory and most of them involved gene-editing techniques as well as some professional knowledge. One would not be able to use it even if he or she knew the functions of each instrument.

The Glassians' available technology was way more advanced than the human's technology and as introduced by the intellectual brain, the Glassians now had the ability to alter genes like how Luo Yuan could. The Glassians could only modify the genes of fertilized eggs on a nano-level, however, this was already a fantasy to the human race.

Technology advances by steps and not by leaps. The humans had a lot to learn and improve on before they could completely adopt the Glassians' technology. Luo Yuan was disappointed and agitated by the apparent gap between the two species. The Glassians' had a mature technology of synthesizing artificial organic molecules and their artificial food was synthesized through the mixture of elements during their journey to Earth.

The research center in the spaceship had a miniaturized instrument like this and once the humans could master this

technology, food supply would no longer be restricted. They could even artificially manufacture the wisdom heart. Although the spaceship's intellectual brain could now automatically synthesize food, the intellectual brain was not from the Earth. The process of biological evolution would somehow be different as many of the protein sources contained metals which would be harmful to a human's health.

Before Luo Yuan left, he provided the research center with a sample of the wisdom heart. He then returned to Hope City and would only be coming back during the next migration.

Chapter 470: Corpse

"My teeth are going to break into pieces!" Lin Feiyan said unsatisfyingly while she bit the hardtack and chewed on it with her white teeth.

She has not had a good time since the Firearms Bureau began working with Luo Yuan. Most of her time was spent in the Reconstruction Area in search of survivors. Although she had a unique evolved ability which kept her warm, she still suffered from the bad food and accommodation.

That was not the worst part of it. If she could find even one survivor, at least her hard work would have paid off meaningfully. However, the entire Firearms Bureau had not found anything for months, not even a single corpse.

"Let me boil some water first." Wu Qianru said. She was sitting next to her and tried to persuade her while she put down her backpack and unzipped it to take out the burner, a small portable pot, and a wooden water storage tank. She knew that the water inside the tank had been frozen even though she had not opened it.

"So troublesome! It's easier to just eat it like this." Lin Feiyan whispered as the sound of ice being crushed was coming out from her mouth. This would certainly have irritated the people that were listening to it. Furthermore, if she was not an evolved human, she might not have been able to chew through hardtack at all.

Wu Qianru had stopped persuading her. Unlike Lin Feiyan, she was afraid of the cold and even if she had good teeth, her stomach would not be able to withstand the coldness of the ice.

She took out a clean piece of cloth and a hammer from her backpack. She put the cotton cloth on the surface of the frozen ground and gently hit the edge of the tank. Soon enough, the ice came out off the tank and fell onto the cloth. She then used the cloth to wrap the ice before hitting it with her hammer.

A few minutes later, she opened the cloth and saw that the ice inside had broken into pieces. She picked out a few pieces, threw it into the pot and stored the rest back into the tank before she lit up the burner and began to heat up the ice.

The flame quietly licked the bottom of the pot and in a short amount of time, the water was boiling. She took out two cups but only poured the water into one of the cups and said, "Here you go!"

Lin Feiyan bluntly took the cup and finished it in one mouthful as though the cup of boiled water had actually been warm water. She released a sigh of relief and after a while, she asked Wu Qianru, "How far more to go?"

"About 10 kilometers." Wu Qianru said casually while pouring herself a cup of hot water which she would then soak the hardtack in.

"We will return to rest for a while after searching the city in front of us!" Lin Feiyan sighed and said. This time, she had experienced a

lot of challenges and had become more mature as compared to the past. She continued, "In fact, we have been out here for a week and our supplies are almost used up. It's time to head back."

"Oh great! We can finally rest for a couple of days." Wu Qianru said happily.

She could not have imagined how it would have been like living in the wilderness if she had not personally experienced it herself. She trekked in the snow during the day and shivered inside her sleeping bag during the night. Besides that, there was no source of clean water and every time before sleeping, she needed to use the purifier she was carrying with her to filter the snow to meet the water demands for the next day. The worse thing was that the purified water would freeze quickly in the cold weather and every morning she needed to melt the ice before brushing her teeth. And, that was what happened on the days with good weather. Snowstorms were common and sometimes there would even be hailstorms.

It was during one midnight of last month while they were asleep when they experienced their first hailstorm. Plenty of football sized hail fell from the sky without any warning and hit their sleeping bags. Although they were evolved humans, they felt like a drowning mouse in that situation. Furthermore, they had been camping on a flat ice ground and there was not even a single hiding place for them. They could only use their hands to support the tent and endure the experience throughout the rest of the night.

They rested for half an hour during lunchtime before they departed for the city again. Soon, they had arrived at their

destination.

...

"This is probably the compound of Endeavour City." Lin Feiyan said after she took a glance at the latitude-longitude grid and observed the surrounding area.

There was no sign of any human activities. It was just snow falling down from the sky.

"There should be no one alive here!" Wu Qianru sighed and said. She did not hold any hope as the recent situation was worsening and now everything could only be left to God.

"Anyway, try checking the surroundings first," Lin Feiyan replied.

...

The ground had been covered with thick snow and they were lacking in strength to conduct a meticulous search. Luo Yuan, a human nuclear weapon, could have easily broken through the frozen ground, but despite him being not around, there was still a way to do it.

The easiest way to determine whether there were any survivors was to look for any possible vents since the vents would not be sealed if there were still survivors alive in the city. It was

impossible to survive for three months with sealed vents.

They took out the topographic device from their backpack and began to work. This device had a wide range of applications which was very important to civil engineering and many other fields. It was an indispensable instrument; hence, Hope City kept a few of it.

Time had passed and they could not find anything even until nightfall.

Lin Feiyan's patience had run out and she was ready to inform Wu Qianru to end the mission. Suddenly, she heard Wu Qianru shout, "Captain, please come over here, there...there is a corpse."

Lin Feiyan was startled as she heard that and quickly rushed over. The surface of the ice had thickened by tens of meters and gradually got thicker by one meter on average each day. The snow was not transparent as one-third of it was made up of dust which made it look dark and dirty. The naked eye would usually not have noticed that there was a corpse underneath.

Apparently, the person had died just a while ago... approximately somewhere between one to two days.

The corpse would have been buried deep underground if it had been there for a long time and the existence of this corpse showed that there might be a great possibility that there were other survivors nearby.

"Where?" asked Lin Feiyan as she quickly ran over there.

"Look! Over there!" said Wu Qianru. She looked tensed and pointed at the arm that was exposed on the surface of the snow about five or six meters away.

There was a small and naked body buried inside that protruded through the filthy snow.

Lin Feiyan looked along the direction with a slight change in expression. She could not blame Wu Qianru as the arm did look strange and odd and later discovered that the arm from the corpse did not show any signs that it was frozen. The skin looked rosy with a trace of pink and they could not have imagined that he or she had been buried inside the ice ground. There was even a high chance that he/she might still be alive.

Now, the temperature of the earth was close to -70 degrees Celsius, which was almost like the nightly temperature at the two poles. Without wearing any clothes, she could still absorb the elements to evolve, however, the remaining members of the Firearms Bureau might not have been able to survive under this terrible temperature.

The arm and the body size under the ice obviously looked like it belonged to a five or six-year-old kid.

"Captain, what should we do?" Wu Qianru asked.

It was so strange that even Wu Qianru who is a super evolved human was bewildered.

"Let's check it out first, perhaps he/she is still alive!" Lin Feiyan also felt nervous but as a captain, she was calmer than Wu Qianru. Besides, it was a shameful act for a captain to retreat from a fight in front of their crew.

However, when she quietly took a deep breath and was ready to go over, she saw that the exposed arm from the icy ground was moving and the small hand gently grabbed some ice.

The scene had shocked her and before she was able to calm herself, she saw that the ice that buried the body suddenly splintered with a cracking sound. The kid sat up from the ice and revealed his/her bare back as countless pieces of ice came crashing down.

Looking at her flexible movements, the ice that had pressed on her did not seem to be as hard as steel but rather more like a layer of crisp skin. She showed her back to them and yawned as if she was still feeling sleepy. She sat there staring blankly and then stood up.

Lin Feiyan and Wu Qianru glanced at each other and felt nervous. They had never seen a child with special abilities and the gestures made by the child earlier had struck a deep fear within them. The hardness of the icy ground, which was below -70 degrees Celsius, was almost similar to that of steel and even the two of them could not have easily broken the ice like that child.

They silently retreated a few steps, however, the unknown child seemed to have heard their footsteps and suddenly turned around. She was a beautiful little girl who was naked. Upon closer observation, they noticed that the crushed ice on her body slowly melted.

She was surprised when she saw the both of them and said,

"Ah, I finally see humans!"

Lin Feiyan and Wu Qianru were glancing at each other and felt slightly relieved that at least she was someone that they could communicate with.

Wu Qianru asked cautiously, "Little...girl, why are you lying down here?"

"Hi, Auntie. I was sleeping!"

This little girl had clear enunciation when she spoke and was very polite. However, the answer that came from her mouth had shocked the both of them.

"Where did you come from?" Wu Qianru thought and asked. Perhaps they could find out if there were other survivors.

"New Capital City's genetic laboratory. But, everyone there is

gone. My sisters, brothers and also our aunts that took care of us are all gone. I was looking for them." The little girl said with an innocent look.

They felt even more uncomfortable the more they listened to this girl. Not to mention that she came from the laboratory, or that her sisters and brothers had come from there too. New Capital City was the main area that had been attacked by the Glassians as one of the nuclear antimatter smart orbital ballistic missiles had been dropped directly on them which made the entire city a huge pit.

Chapter 471: Underground Water

"Li... Little girl, then how did you come out?" Wu Qianru tried to ask further.

"Ah, I have no idea. I slept for a moment and when I woke up I was already underground. I then started digging a tunnel, and kept digging and digging and after a long time I was able to emerge onto the surface." The little girl spoke as she tilted her head while she was recalling the incident.

The two ladies were frightened after listening to what she had said and even though what the little girl said did not seem to be in proper English, it was still comprehensible. What exactly had she experienced during the disaster?

She could have possibly been hurt by the nuclear missile shockwave while she was asleep and by the time she woke up, without a doubt, her body would have been buried by volcanic ashes as the lava cooled down.

If everything she said was true, despite having such a frail and weak body, she certainly possessed an immense amount of some power. However, regardless of whether it was her innocent expression or the fact that she had been buried in the layers of ice, you could obviously tell she was not lying. It was simply a cruel deed to have just deserted such a little girl in the frozen wasteland.

Even though it could cause some complications if they brought her back to Hope City, her capabilities were still within their scope

of comprehension as compared to Luo Yuan's who could single handedly destroy the aliens. His powers were certainly beyond their reach. They looked into each other's eyes, and had come to an understanding. Such a little monster should be handed over to a big monster like Luo Yuan to worry about.

...

In just a short time, the little girl had decided to follow them back to Hope City with no ulterior motives. As the three of them started talking while they were on their journey home, more and more information had been revealed by the little girl.

She had no name and no parents. Other than a number that did not have any special meaning, nothing else seemed to have been able to identify her. Similarly, according to the little girl, her brothers and sisters were the same. They were a bunch of children who had special powers and lived in a laboratory with the same level of education and upbringing.

After pondering for a short while, Lin Feiyan believed that the little girl was a human clone. She was not surprised as the apocalypse was a crazy era. When good and evil people were forced into survival mode, there was no longer a difference between them and she had heard rumors of many crazier experiments than human cloning itself. In fact, in some human experiments, the mortality rate was one person each month. However, all those were merely rumors and this was the first time she had met a real clone.

According to the little girl, there were no dark places, no

medication, injections, or any operations involved, just a stricter military management.

"Oh right... How old are you?" Lin Feiyan asked as she was curious.

The little girl touched her head and started to think, "Aunty, I think I'm nine months and twenty days! I was asleep for some time underground so possibly a few days older..."

"You are not even a year old?" Lin Feiyan was so surprised that she missed a step and almost fell. She looked at the little girl and was definitely sure that she looked like a five or six year old girl. Besides that, when she was talking earlier, her speech was so fluent and clear that even if she were a five or six-year-old child, she sounded like an adult.

A normal human child would have only started to learn how to speak at the age of one!

Was she even human?

Wu Jingru was also shocked and her face showed disbelief.

"I'm considered one of the faster-growing ones. Most of my younger brother and sisters grew at a slower rate." She said. She seemed to notice the expression on both of their faces and the little girl lowered her head and blushed.

"Then how about the others? Are they as clever as you are?" Lin Feiyan asked.

"No, some are stupid. For example, brother A51621 only knows how to play and would not even complete the homework prepared by the teacher. He didn't even complete primary education while I have completed my secondary education and am currently pursuing my tertiary education." The little girl said proudly.

"Then... You are really clever!" Lin Feiyan said as she was rendered speechless knowing that she herself was a slow learner during her younger days. Instinctively, she changed the subject and asked, "Since you've been alone for such a long time, what have you been eating every day?"

"I haven't eaten for months but sometimes when I am thirsty I would eat the ice. The ice was very dirty but I could not hold my thirst so I ended up swallowing a chunk of it. How pitiful!" The little girl said. She started recalling her misfortunes and twitched her mouth, then tears started to drop from her cheeks.

Both girls started to feel sorry for her after hearing her tale and started to console her. They immediately stopped their journey, put down their backpacks and started preparing some food for her as the little girl had not eaten in months.

...

"Mayor, please have a look at the results of the underground geology analysis." An engineer carefully passed over a stack of

documents to Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan's face turned emotionless as he flipped through the layouts. He tried to suppress his anger and asked with a deep voice, "Is this your report!? How did it become so serious!?"

The officers behind him and the manager of the water factory turned pale. Their hearts started to beat quickly and they did not dare to let out even a single breath. The problem was truly serious and it was not unexpected for him to be furious.

"I can't believe that you only began to conduct the analysis when something had gone wrong! Why on earth do I keep a bunch of useless people like you!?" Luo Yuan paced back and forth with a gloomy face.

The entire Hope City was relying on the underground water source for its daily activities as well as its source of drinking water. However, based on the geological structure drawings, there was an indication that since two months ago, one of the underground rivers which was located 300 meters deep was almost depleted. The original location of the underground river had formed an enormous cavity.

Based on the forecast, Hope City would lose its water supply in five days.

However, that was not the main reason that he was pissed off. It was the fact that none of the officers had conducted any underground river inspections until the lowest level of the underground city had collapsed.

Hope City would not have been in such chaos if there had not been a collapse.

Luo Yuan took a deep breath and calmed himself down as he realized that he have frightened the people around him with his temper.

He pondered and realized that he was not supposed to put the blame on them as he had allocated most of the scientists and technicians to work on the spacecraft earlier, resulting in a lack of manpower to inspect on the water bed. Besides that, too little attention was paid to Hope City which had led them to the danger they were facing today.

"Could you explain further?" Luo Yuan walked towards the collapsed site and spoke softly.

"We have neglected the possibility that the layer of ice could affect the underground water supply. The frozen surface layers have interrupted the water circulation, causing the rainfall to be unable to penetrate into the ground to replenish the underground water." The worker spoke while sweat dripped down from his forehead. Luo Yuan's emotionless face made it impossible for them to guess his thoughts. All the workers hence remained extremely nervous.

In fact, the water supply was not the main issue but rather it was the huge bottomless hole that was affecting the entire underground city. That level was initially an empty space which

was transformed into an agriculture area after the disaster. As it was the lowest level of the underground city, the foundation's stability would greatly affect the entire city which may end up putting it on the verge of collapse if it became unstable.

Although the affected area this time was more than a few hundred square meters, the impact to the overall structural stability was minor. However, the occurrence was a sign that the hole was formed and the geological structure had changed. Even if the water drawing activity was stopped, no one could guarantee that it would not continue to collapse. Perhaps a low magnitude earthquake was sufficient to destroy the entire underground city.

"How much water is left in the water reservoir factory?" Luo Yuan asked.

"It's sufficient for three days of normal consumption." The worker replied hurriedly.

Luo Yuan let out a sigh of relief and said, "Starting from now, stop all the water drawing activities!"

"Yes!" An immediate reply was given.

While listening to the mayor's order, the workers immediately felt that they had been granted amnesty.

"Besides that, what is the plan to solve the huge cavity that had formed underground?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Pour in cement or set up many supporting poles!" An engineer suggested.

Secretary Chen Guanghui reminded him, "Mr. Mayor, we are running out of cement and there is not even one hundred tons left."

Luo Yuan was aware of this as a lot of construction materials had been used to reinforce the underground city to help overcome the frequent earthquakes, hence, there were not many materials left in the store. In fact, cement was not the only material which was almost depleted. Other resources were facing the same problem as well. If Luo Yuan had solved all this earlier, humanity might have ended up hiding in the comfort zone of Hope City and slowly died in it.

"If we don't have cement, water might work as well. Water could help a lot in supporting the entire structure."

The main reason why the collapse had occurred in the first place was due to the underground water turning dry. Therefore, replenishing the underground river was a feasible solution except that it was not an easy stunt to pull off in a such a short notice. He looked at his watch and told Chen Guanghui, "Inform the leader of every city to assemble for a meeting at 4PM!"

"Yes mayor, I'll do it now!" Chen Guanghui said politely. As it was already three something in the afternoon, he rushed towards the office and called every city's leader to attend the meeting.

During the impact of the nuclear antimatter smart orbital ballistic missile, a strong electromagnetic wave had damaged most of the telecommunication equipment. The only working telephones right now were the old phones which were easier to repair.

Luo Yuan nodded again and continued with his inspection of the water factory. He only managed to calm his nerves a little after looking at the large pool of water already in the reservoir.

Though the water supply had become abnormally plenty after the nuclear winter, the ice on the Earth's surface had increased up to ten meters. If all that ice melted, it will form a vast sea and solve their problems. However, it was not easy to break the ice under such an extreme weather as the ice was harder than the steel. Normal metal equipment was rendered useless and utilizing it would only end up wasting time and energy. Furthermore, the water was not drinkable even if they could break it or melt it as one-third of the water contained impurities and a very high percentage of the water contained a lot of electrolytes. A series of complicated chemical processes were required before it was safe for consumption. Undoubtedly, all these took time to complete.

Nevertheless, there was an additional buffer time of three days which should be enough.

Chapter 472: Awakening

Of course, even if the situation was worsening, the spaceship had a reserve of food and water which was enough to last the humans for decades. Based on the speed of the rescue spaceship, the transfer could be done in half a day. However, unless it was absolutely critical, Luo Yuan would prefer not to utilize the water supply for the interstellar voyage.

While the spaceship had been under the command of the Glassians, water was used to support life as well as being the fuel for the nuclear fusion furnace. Therefore, it was crucial to store as much water as possible for interstellar voyages.

Even if the water was only for emergency use, it was still unknown whether they could regain control of the ship's resource mining system in one or two years time to make up for the water source depletion. If they prolonged their stay on the Earth, the risk would rise exponentially.

The Glassians were already an interstellar race and the humans knew too little of advanced civilizations. It was 60 years ago since they first stepped on Earth and over the past 60 years, technology had gone through such a tremendous transformation that people shuddered just from the memory of it. In the future, it was possible to invent technology that could help others form a space-time bubble for quick travel.

Perhaps, at this very moment, a stronger spaceship that was faster than the speed of light was traveling with the use of a warp drive after leaving its mothership and was once again on a journey

to conquer Earth. There might not be enough time left for humanity if they continued to stay here!

With everything at stake, not even the slightest mistake is allowed and even Luo Yuan would not dare to risk the lives of all the humans.

They should leave the Earth without any further delay.

...

All the executives of Hope City had gathered together at four o'clock in the afternoon as planned.

Aside from Luo Yuan who had just become the mayor and Bi Jianping who was hosting in the spacecraft, there were another three leaders present at today's senior management meeting. The main reason for the meeting was not only due to the sudden rise in population that had increased by one-fold as compared to pre-disaster numbers. Firstly, it was to arrange for the settlement of the extra population and rehousing of a large number of government personnel in the remaining three cities. And secondly, it was to appoint the current district mayors (the mayors of the former three municipalities) - Mayor Ma Lin from the United City, Mayor Zhang Jiwei from Victory City and Mayor Chang Menghao from the Twilight City, to be the head of the secondary cities respectively. In other words, there were not many changes besides the administrative aspect and gathering the people into one city which would allow the four cities to live harmoniously.

...

Luo Yuan once again emphasized the safety issues that were being faced by Hope City during the meeting.

Everyone including Luo Yuan could finally have some mental relief as the necessities like food and clothing were no longer in shortage. The migration plan had been carried out smoothly as well though some of the issues could have been avoided if only people had started paying attention to them earlier when the problem arose.

Luo Yuan was aware that earthquakes and volcano eruption might occur anytime and that the Earth would never be stable again. A swarm of debris was scattered around the Earth's surface as the moon was damaged by the nuclear antimatter smart orbital ballistic missile. A small amount of the debris flew into space but many larger pieces fell to the Earth due to its gravitational force.

Small meteorites were about a few kilograms in weight while large meteorites weighed millions or even billions of tons. The first wave of meteorites was too small and was not even worth mentioning as they would eventually burn out due to the friction with the ozone layer. The latter on the other hand, were big enough to trigger a new wave of disasters.

Although none of the meteorites had caused any impact on Hope City, there were some meteorite fragments scattered around the surrounding perimeter. Luo Yuan often went into space to crush the potential large meteorites before they could cause any disasters, however, there was always a limit to what he could do

alone and even though he was strong and powerful, compared to the vastness of the sky and outer space, he was just a drop of water in the vast ocean and there was always bound to be a slip through the net.

...

Once the meeting was over, all the departments in Hope City had their heads straight and started working quickly and efficiently. Luo Yuan had adjusted to most of his tasks as the mayor for the past three months and was bearing the responsibility and immense pressure from holding this position.

Before nightfall, the next task had already been placed on Luo Yuan's desk.

Luo Yuan quickly skimmed through the contents and retyped it to give his endorsement. The task required many mechanical engineers from the spaceship which would delay its modification and potentially sacrifice one or more important tasks. Besides that, it was not an easy task even though Luo Yuan had hoped that it would possibly help to reduce the unemployment rate.

People were not worried that they got less but were more concerned about the fairness and equality.

Hope City did not implement systems of equal sharing regardless of work performance and this could lead to insecurity and many other social problems as the unemployment rate increases. Besides that, the basic living allowance which had been given to the

unemployed would also cause distress and jealousy among others. Similarly, a lot of unemployed people could potentially reduce their motivation to find work which could breed laziness and that was one of the most important issues to be aware of. It was still way too early for humanity to start relaxing and get complacent.

Not long after, a second task was brought to Luo Yuan's desk.

The entire project would involve nearly 30,000 to 500,000 staff and also 200 construction machinery trucks (those were the only operable machinery that was easy to repair and maintain). The reason why there was a big amount of manpower involved was due to the limited exploration tools and machinery available. The leather factory, glove factory and boot factory that had stopped production would need to re-start and even expand their production to accommodate for this project. Therefore, this would undoubtedly help to increase the employment rate.

Luo Yuan did not see anything unusual and signed the agreement.

The official operation would only be able to commence the very next day despite the efficient team that Luo Yuan had under his command. The weather at night was much colder than during the day and the ordinary humans could not endure it even if they were wearing their sweaters.

Luo Yuan looked at the clock and realized that it was already ten o'clock at night. He tidied up his desk and stood up from his seat, calling it a day.

...

Luo Yuan stopped walking abruptly as soon as he entered the living room of his villa.

Chen Jiayi who had been paralyzed in bed for a long time was unexpectedly sitting in the living room surrounded by plenty of people. She was probably still very weak from staying in bed over a long period of time and looked rather frail and weak when she was lying on the chair.

"When did you wake up?" Luo Yuan asked as he hastened across the living hall.

"Ye Qiuyu is the one who discovered that I had woke up when it was almost time to eat!" Chen Jiayi said as she smiled with a brightened face. Chen Jiayi's situation had left a thorn in everyone's heart and her awakening gave everyone a pleasant surprise.

"Jiayi shouted your name once she woke up. Honestly speaking, when did you both start?" Huang Jiahui teased Luo Yuan.

Hearing the jokes from Huang Jiahui, Chen Jiayi simply turned shy and even her neck turned a little red. Chen Jiayi was free of the parasitic moss and her emotional fluctuations had completely returned to normal. She was no longer in the state of trance she was in earlier.

Luo Yuan's face looked a bit awkward. To cure Chen Jiayi's sickness, he had touched her body quite a number of times and he felt shy as he recalled the memories.

"Don't simply say things!" Luo Yuan reprimanded with a soft but serious expression.

Fortunately, before Chen Jiayi became parasitic, her character had always been soft and gentle and she easily blushed. Other than Ye Qiuyu who was suspicious, the others had not suspected anything.

"How are you feeling now? Can you walk?" Luo Yuan was sitting beside Chen Jiayi, as he asked with concern.

Chen Jiayi started to blush like a ripe apple as she saw Luo Yuan approaching her and she opened her mouth and said something in an inaudible speech. In the end, Wang Xianguang helped to lift the mood.

"Not yet, according to Doctor Ye, she had been lying for too long and her muscle had shrunk. She needs to carry out some rehabilitation training before she can walk normally again."

Luo Yuan suddenly looks towards Ye Qiuyu, "Dr. Ye, I understand that it has been tough for you. If there is anything I can do to help speed up her recovery, please do let me know!"

Ye Qiuyu could no longer hide among the crowd and said hurriedly, "There's nothing much that needs to be done. Just perform the regular massage and along with some muscle rehabilitation training."

Besides that, her stomach has shrunk a little and she would still need to take liquid food for a period. She can only resume her normal diet in about one week or so if the situation allows. Add in some high-quality ingredients in her diet as it will greatly speed up her recovery process."

"High-quality food? That's no problem at all." Luo Yuan said. The remaining meat powder had already finished but he had an even better thing - level eight energy crystal!" It was clearly more appropriate for Chen Jiayi who was weak.

He had plenty of energy crystals which had been used to strengthen the human body of the women so that it prevented Luo Yuan from accidentally hurting them in their daily lives. However, what made him speechless was that nearly half a year had passed since then and there were only a few energy crystals left. Specifically, he only had two in his possession so it was quite valuable!

The reason why the consumption of the energy crystals was slow was because every single time the energy crystal was consumed, it caused a serious imbalance in strength for everyone. Ordinary humans would not be able to control that energy as quickly as Luo Yuan could and so they required a long period of time to adjust and adapt. Coupled with the disaster and the fact that they had been busy, the consumption rate of the energy crystals had slowed

down.

"I'm going to get the energy crystal!" said Luo Yuan as he got up and walked upstairs.

As the mutated woman who stood not far away from Luo Yuan heard the news regarding the energy crystal, her eyes brightened up. She stood up and followed Luo Yuan upstairs.

Chapter 473: Depression

Luo Yuan felt helpless and picked up the pace. As he entered the room, he immediately shut the door before the mutated woman was able to sneak in.

The mutated woman accidentally knocked her head on the closing door and hissed angrily. She was very frustrated and unsheathed her claw before she proceeded to vengefully slash the door a few times. Though a few deep claw marks appeared on the door, Luo Yuan did not care about it. Besides, the door was already full of scratch marks anyway even before the mutated woman had clawed at it. Every part of the door was full of abstract arts from "wild cats" and it did not make a difference if there were additional claw marks on it.

The mutated woman probably felt dreadful when she was facing large organisms. Ever since the improvement of Luo Yuan's attributes that had caused his body size to increase, there were times where the mutated woman felt unaccustomed to Luo Yuan. She was not as dependent on Luo Yuan as she was before and had even picked up the habit of sleeping in her own bedroom at night.

However, those unaccustomed feelings did not last long and after some time, the mutated woman slowly adapted to Luo Yuan's new appearance and began to return to her old habits of trying to enter his bedroom at night.

Though it was difficult to foster independence into the mutated woman, Luo Yuan did not want to spoil her.

Except for one time where she barged into Luo Yuan's bedroom and slept for one night, he would intentionally lock the door every night. Regardless of how she scratched or hissed unsatisfyingly at the door, Luo Yuan would ignore her. She would grudgingly give up after several repeated attempts.

To be honest, how could the door stop her from entering the room? Her energy had been constantly increasing ever since the application of the level eight energy crystals. Her power was no longer the same as compared to when she had first arrived.

In the evaluation system, she was already categorized as a level seven creature. When there was a comparison in power, even a special operation team member (original members of the Firearms Bureau) would have had a difficult time getting even with her.

In reality, the thing that was really stopping her was not the door, but Luo Yuan's attitude!

The mutated woman had been instilled with the idea that she was actually a human after the prolonged exposure of living with other humans. She had slowly escaped from her barbarism characteristics over the period of living with Luo Yuan.

However, it is important to note that the prolonged usage of energy crystals did not change her in a big way and in fact, there were even some weaknesses that had appeared. For example, her scales were shrinking and its texture was getting softer which caused its defense to weaken. Besides that, the color of her scales had faded and was now a jade white color. In the wilderness, such coloration was somewhat eye-catching and apparently, it did not

fulfill the principles of apocalyptic evolution.

Luo Yuan once guessed that it was because of the stable life she was living and being in a human populated environment that triggered such changes. Initially, there had been a huge difference between her and the humans that subconsciously made her feel uneasy and uncoordinated and therefore she began to actively mimic human beings and evolved accordingly during the evolution process. In a way, it was a form of protective skin layer.

...

Luo Yuan went to the armory and with a height of two meters; he just had to raise his hands slightly to reach the top of the shelf. When he retracted his hands, he was holding a metallic ball the size of a fist.

One of the levels eight crystals was tightly secured and sealed inside this circular metallic ball just to be sure that no one else could access it.

Firstly, this was to isolate the energy crystal from the air so that it could be stored in dry environments. Energy crystals were like crystal minerals and could dissolve in water very quickly. If it was left alone in the air, it could get damp from the air and would be dissolved, causing an accelerated loss in its energy.

Secondly, it was to prevent the mutated woman from sniffing its way to the crystal. The scent of level eight crystals was an indescribable temptation as it was a creature's instinct to evolve.

Even Luo Yuan was allured to the energy crystal when he first handled it.

Of course, he was no longer affected by it as his body was constantly cultivating a huge amount of energy to the extent that the energy crystal in his heart had grown into the size of a ping-pong ball. It was several times bigger than any energy crystal he possessed and even his blood circulatory system was affected by it.

If his heart ever weakened to the point where he needed a replacement, he would have to open his own chest and substitute the energy crystal himself.

Luo Yuan used his fingernail to draw a circle along the metal ball's circumference. His nail was apparently much harder than metal and a countless number of sparks came off the metallic ball as his nail dragged across its surface.

He blew off the metal bits and a scar of two to three millimeter appeared on the surface of the metallic ball.

"It is done!" He thought.

He held the metallic ball with both of his hands and twisted both of his palms in the opposite direction. Of course, he made sure that he did not exert too much force on the ball when he was opening it as he feared that the hollow ball would be squashed.

An ear piercing shrill sound filled the armory and the mark had

noticeably reddened.

A few seconds later, the metallic ball was opened. There were two intact crystals inside and a transparent thin slice.

This hollow metallic ball was not thin as it had a thickness of 20 millimeters. However, compared to Luo Yuan's 500 tons of force, 20 millimeters was no different from two millimeters.

"The energy of this thin slice was a one-time use only."

He took out the thin slice and sealed the metallic ball with a gentle press. Continuous kneading was applied while ensuring that his action was gentle and careful. A scorching heat emanated from his palm during the process.

After a while, he stopped.

He looked at the ball and nodded with satisfaction. A metallic ball that had split in half was now sealed back together. It was done without even the slightest flaw (except for some fingerprints) and it was as if it had never been split into two before.

Luo Yuan went to the washroom and used the tap water to cool down the metallic ball before putting it back on the top shelf.

He walked out of the room and the mutated woman suddenly pounced on him and tugged his trousers tightly as she became excited.

"Get off me! Can't you see that I am not able to walk properly?" Luo Yuan flung his leg and cursed.

The mutated human held onto the trousers tightly, ignoring Luo Yuan and hissed continuously. She seemed to have caught the scent of the energy crystal and had gotten excited.

As he saw that the mutated woman did not want to let go, Luo Yuan had no choice but to allow her to grab onto him as he dragged her down with him.

"Somebody give me five glasses of water!"

"I will go get it!" Wang Xianguang got up and said.

Zhao Yali was about to get up, but seeing Wang Xianguang had beaten her to it, she just sat down. She thought only Chen Jiayi was allowed to take the energy crystal, but seeing now that everyone was going to take it, she muttered to herself "I just adapted with great difficulty. How could I do this again? Last time when I was frying, I accidentally broke the wok."

"Yours is only a wok. I broke my bedroom handle and still have not repaired it!" Wang Xianguang returned with the cups of water and complained after listened to Zhao Yali.

"How come I heard strange noises during the night?" Huang Jiahui stirred the pot for fun.

The ladies let out a lovable laugh.

Wang Xiaguang put down the cups of water and blushed. She was not as experienced as everyone else and was not accustomed to adult jokes.

It was Luo Yuan's fault; she stared at Luo Yuan and recalled the past moments.

Luo Yuan had been brief about it during the first time so she thought this kind of thing was just as simple as that. However, after a while, she discovered that Luo Yuan was as tireless as a beast and this had made her miserable.

She was suspicious that the reason why Luo Yuan would have them take the energy crystal from time to time was actually to have even more fun in this matter.

Luo Yuan was not aware of Wang Xiaguang's self-complaints and pretended to ignore Huang Jiahui's joke. He shook his head and said, "You all do not really appreciate my intention. This is a level eight mutated beast's energy crystal. Except for you bunch, nobody else has ever taken it!"

Ye Qiuyu looked at all this in envy and felt depressed as this was something that allowed a normal being to become superhuman. It was a fate-changing factor and if this thing was to leak out, she believed it would consume everyone in madness.

As a normal human, she had a huge desire to be strong but she knew that it did not belong to her. She was just the servant, a private doctor and had clearly understood her role even before she got here. She lowered her head and hid her depressed expression, not allowing anyone to see it.

"Doctor Ye!"

"Doctor Ye!"

Ye Qiuyu suddenly realized Luo Yuan was calling her so she quickly regained her composure.

"Take this water to Chen Jiayi and have her drink it!" Luo Yuan said.

"Yes, right away Mayor Luo!" Ye Qiuyu said it in a polite manner.

"I told you already to call me Luo Yuan." Luo Yuan said upon seeing her fearful expression.

"Yeah, Sister Ye. You do not have to be so reserved as we are all are part of a family here." Wang Shishi tried to calm her.

"Sorry, sorry!" Ye Qiuyu panicked and apologized.

"Whatever, whatever. Call me however you like!" Luo Yuan

grudgingly said. Even after such a long time, this woman treated him like a lamb had met a tiger.

Luo Yuan shook his head and seeing how Ye Qiuyu took the water and walked off quickly as if she was escaping, he did not know what to say. Everyone just kept whispering among themselves.

Ye Qiuyu still gave him a good impression as she was diligent at home. Not only had she took care of Chen Jiayi but she also actively took care of the chores.

She was probably just a timid person!

Luo Yuan recalled her depressed expression and he muttered to himself as he split the remaining crystal for one more person.

He did not care about the level eight energy crystals even though it looked precious to everyone else. In fact, there were two remaining energy crystals, which was more than enough even if one more person had taken it.

The mutated human which was nearby tugged even more forcefully and hissed impatiently when she saw that the water had been given to someone else. Luo Yuan's trousers would have been torn apart if not for the fact that it had been made from a space creature's composite skin.

She was getting impatient after waiting for such a long time and

it appeared that her resolution had grown rather thin.

"Brother Luo, don't tempt her. Give her the crystal first. Otherwise, she will become crazy." Wang Shishi who used to get along well with the mutated woman was worried about her.

"Such a hot-tempered and greedy person. I don't even know when you will change. Here, catch it!"

Luo Yuan stared at her in a displeased manner and threw a slice of crystal to her. A silhouette leaped up and snatched the energy crystal while it was in midair before the mutated woman excitedly threw it into her mouth. She hurried into a corner and slowly digested it.

Everyone drank the water and soon, a burning sensation spread across their bodies.

Chapter 474: Working

After Ye Qiuyu had fed Chen Jiayi and wiped her mouth, she was called over by Luo Yuan, "Doctor Ye, can you please come over?"

Ye Qiuyu did not know why but quickly trotted over, "Mayor Luo, how can I help you?"

"This is your share." Luo Yuan picked up the remaining piece of the energy crystal and handed it to her.

Ye Qiuyu looked at the almost completely transparent piece of energy crystal and was stunned for a moment. She then breathed heavily and quickly shirked, saying, "This... This is too valuable Mayor Luo."

"Don't be so concerned about it. Just take it." Luo Yuan patted her on the shoulder, "Just do your job well."

This was the first time Luo Yuan had intimate contact with her body. The warmth of his palms went through her thin clothes and penetrated her skin. Ye Qiuyu shivered and her face turned slightly pale.

At this point, her mind was messy and she did not know what to do. She was always deep in thought and sometimes a common word would be much considered and analyzed in her mind, "Is this a hint? What should I do? Should I insist to reject or pretend not to understand the hint and just accept it for now?"

Luo Yuan looked at her pale and flushed face and thought that she was shy to accept it, so he took up her hand and placed the piece of energy crystal on her palm and said, "Take it!"

Ye Qiuyu looked at it and was stunned as if she had lost her mind. It was only after a while that she regained her consciousness and found that Luo Yuan had walked over to Chen Jiayi.

She bit her lip, retracted her hand, and looked at that piece of energy crystal. Even though it was physically light, she felt that it was heavy in value.

...

A shrill sounding alarm suddenly rang somewhere around midnight.

Cui Weichuan, who was still fast asleep with his eyes shut, was confused for a while when he suddenly became conscious and was completely awakened by the sound.

Today was his first day of work so he could not afford to be late. He quickly woke up and switched off the alarm.

He was originally an entry level public servant in Desert City. Unfortunately, the entire Desert City was buried underground after it was hit by a major earthquake and thus he came to Hope City as a refugee.

At that time, Hope City had accepted a large number of refugees from all the other cities which consisted of some public servants like him so it was impossible to assign jobs to everyone.

After waiting for a few days, he was assigned as a deputy minister in the logistic department of the first steel plant in Hope City.

This career was not bad as it was considered a small promotion to some extent. He had speculated that there was a certain factor that had contributed to this hiring process because he knew a great man and it was also because of this man that he was able to come to Hope City with his daughter. Perhaps this was the reason why he got the exceptional promotion.

To the great man, the period of friendship might have been insignificant and he might even just be considered as an acquaintance. However to him, it was probably a turning point in his life.

However, good things do not last long and the brutal disaster that had happened a few months ago buried his factory deep underground in just a matter of minutes. He was fortunate to have survived as he was assigned the day shift on that day and so he was not in the factory when the incident took place.

The entire Hope City was in chaos and darkness during that period of time. There was crying throughout the night and everyone was mourning in the city. Some of the people were hopeless about the future and released their desperation

everywhere. Occasionally, gunshots could be heard on the streets too.

Those were his most feared days and he and his daughter had hid in his lodge and did not dare to go out for a few days.

Fortunately, the chaos did not last for too long and everything started to improve gradually. Order was restored in the city and there was hope in Hope City even though he had completely lost his job.

Unemployment days were quite tough as he could only go to the cafeteria which belonged to the public welfare to line up every day and fill his stomach. Though he was not starved, he did not eat sufficiently too. Usually, he also had to think twice even if he wanted to purchase some small items for home.

As a new migrated refugee, he did not have much savings and had almost depleted most of it by now. He could still tolerate a poor life but he did not want to let his daughter suffer together with him. His daughter was even being discriminated by the other students at the boarding school.

He must get a job! Fortunately, studying was completely free since the apocalypse or he would not even be able to afford the school fees.

He went into the bathroom to wash his face and brush his teeth. After he cleaned himself up, he walked to the closet and took out all his clothes and wore all of them on, layer by layer. His job

required him to work in the cold so had to keep warm.

He put on all the clothes on his body and suddenly started to sweat. He wanted to take off a few pieces but decided against it after he had given it some thought. It was just a few steps to the first level which was only one layer away from the outside world. The temperature would have dropped a lot over there.

Finally, he pulled out a fur coat, leather gloves, and boots, and held them in his hands before he closed the wardrobe.

This three-piece suit was quite heavy, especially the fur coat that was about 20 pounds or more in weight. The outside layer was a mutated creature's skin that was only 3.5 millimeters thick while the inner liner was generally soft red fur. The suit served like a heater after he wore it on his body regardless of how cold it was outside.

Last time when Cui Weichuan wanted to buy the cold clothing during a limited sale, he had to queue up for an entire day under the temperature of -30 degrees Celsius before he managed to buy the clothes for him and his daughter. Furthermore, the clothes had taken up most of his savings.

However, he started to regret after they had only wore it for a few days as heating lamps were installed all over Hope City, which caused the temperature to get warmer as if it was spring. The expensive cold clothings then became luxurious accessories lying inside his wardrobe and every time when he saw them his heart pained.

Nonetheless, everything happened for a reason and this time the job requirement clearly stated that the workers had to bring their own leather jacket. When he thought of it, he felt that it was kind of prescient to know that he would have needed it someday in the future.

The pay of this work was very high - almost three times more than normal. Besides, he was hired as a team lead to manage more than 100 people as he had experience in management. His salary was two times more than a normal worker's so his life would be better off after this.

He closed the door and walked out of the house and soon came to the first level of the underground area.

This level had collapsed during the disaster but it had been repaired after that so he could see the different layers of cement that had been used.

He found that he was not the earliest but rather there were hundreds of people earlier than him. Now, most of the space had been transformed into a large open-air food hall and people were eating breakfast during this time.

When Cui Weichuan smelled the tasty food, his stomach kept rumbling so he immediately went to the counter and ordered a breakfast set too.

When he chatted with the chef, he received good news that the

food here was not limited. These days Cui Weichuan had not been eating sufficiently and it was pretty suffering. He could finally eat as much as he needed now.

The crowd started to pick up as breakfast time got closer. The cafeteria that was silent at first was slowly getting crowded and his dining table was also gradually filled up with people.

"Hey, Chief Cui!"

"Hey brother, you are here too!" Cui Weichuan said quickly as looked up and found his previous department colleagues.

"What can I do if I don't come here? This is the only place that provides sufficient food to eat." Lao Hu said with a wry smile. Apparently, he had suffered during this period too.

"Everyone is the same. This is my first time eating sufficiently too." Cui Weichuan also said with empathy.

"How many people do you think are here today?" Lao Hu was wondering looking at the crowd in the cafeteria.

"10,000 to 20,000!"

"I think there are more than that, at least 30,000 or more. Have you heard that the underground water source is starting to deplete? That's why we are here to do deep mining into the ice." Lao Hu suddenly secretively said.

"This is not something you should simply say!" Cui Weichuan quickly said before continuing, "Be careful not to be heard."

"Don't worry, we have Mayor Luo here. If he can resolve the alien issue, what is a water depletion issue to him?" Lao Hu replied.

Currently, Hope City was still under martial law and there was no freedom of speech. Once he was suspected to incite public disorder or spread rumors, he might get punished. "Good that you reminded me. Let us continue eating then."

"Your daughter is in freshman year, right?" Lao Hu tried to change the topic after some time.

"Yes, she comes back home once a week and she is getting chubbier every time." When he talked about his daughter, Cui Weichuan's face showed happiness and joy.

"Of course. The meal supplied in the school is not comparable to our public welfare cafeteria. There is an unlimited supply over there." Lao Hu said in envy.

...

The number of people still continued to increase over time.

When it was six o'clock in the morning, a team of heavily armed

police and public officials came into the first level.

"The first team of workers, please gather over here!"

"The second team of workers, please gather over here!"

"The third team..."

...

"The 32nd team..."

"I have to go now." When Cui Weichuan heard the calling of his team. He quickly stood up and rushed towards the gathering point.

...

"All the team leaders, please stand out! Sort out your team and start to do the counting."

...

The workers in reconstruction areas were not only workers but also reservists and almost everyone had carried out military training. In just a few minutes, the crowded mess of workers had lined up orderly into a few squares.

When the steel door at the exit opened, all of the workers marched out neatly.

"Hiss... so cold!" The air that was breathed out from his mouth immediately turned into fine pieces of ice under the cold weather. Cui Weichuan tightened his clothes yet his body started trembling.

The sky was dark outside as if filled with blank ink. This was the first time he had walked into the outside world since the disaster. Before this, he had expected that the weather would be cold but he never knew that it was going to be to this extent.

Even though he was wearing a thick fur coat, he could still feel the chills.

He touched the hard liquor inside his coat which was distributed to all workers before they departed to keep them warm. At first, he thought that he would not have needed to use it but now he kept thinking about drinking it. In the end, he decided not to do so as there was still a long way to go and the amount of liquor given was not enough to last the whole day.

When the 15th team arrived at the assigned area, they stopped.

"I know that every one of you is cold so I will keep it short!" The captain took out the horn and shouted, "The working conditions will be quite difficult and many of you may already be regretting. I know a lot of people have heard the rumors and unfortunately, the situation is as true as what the rumors had said. Hope City's water supply will soon be depleted.

I think every one of you is aware of the consequences if there is no water supply in Hope City. So, this is not simply just a job but it is also for you and the entire Hope City. It is not possible for you all to quit the job!

Now, please start the ice mining process. Team leads, please bring your team members to come over and take the tools from here."

When the captain was talking, two trucks had stopped nearby and the workers on the truck kept throwing the tools down to the ground.

Cui Weichuan had not expected that the guess made by Lao Hu was actually correct. His heart was heavy as he greeted his team members before he went over to receive the tools. The tools for ice mining were quite simple. Each team received three ropes that were tied to a thick metal stake to break the layer of ice. Besides that, they also received a lot of soldering iron and five simple wooden sleds. However, there was no excavator or any other construction machinery at all.

Even the trucks had quickly driven off after they had finished throwing the tools. There were only two trucks assigned to a team so every truck was very valuable. They could not stand staying for so long under such a cold temperature. The ice would be transported to the underground first level using ice sleds before they are loaded on the trucks and delivered to the factory.

The mining work soon began.

After Cui Weichuan assigned the work, he took the lead and began to hit the ice with a metal stake.

The metal stake was about 30 cm thick and 800 kg in weight. With five of them, it required at least 160kg of strength from each of them if they lifted it up using the rope. It was impossible for them to lift the metal stake without a support strength.

Fortunately, during the time when he had followed Luo Yuan to Hope City, he had eaten a lot of high level food and so he had gained a significant amount of strength. Nonetheless, no matter how strong he was, he was still an ordinary human. The ice mining job was very tiring as it also required continuous shouting from the commander.

It often required more than a dozen hits just to slightly crack the surface and over another hundred hits before it could be broken. After that, they would switch to another place to continue breaking the ice layers. Only when the ice sled was fully filled, would it be sent to the underground for further processing..

However, there was an advantage whereby he did not feel cold anymore as his body was covered with sweat that kept him warm. Even though it was already noon, he had not taken a sip of the hard liquor inside his coat.

Suddenly, there was a commotion somewhere far away and one of the workers suddenly stopped.

"Why did you stop?" Cui Weichuan almost broke his waist and asked unpleasantly. It was such a heavy metal stake and hastily stopping could cause a serious injury to other team members.

The worker answered in a fervent tone, his face flushed and was full of excitement, "Mayor Luo! Mayor Luo has come to visit us!"

Chapter 475: Influence

"What!? Mayor Luo is here?" Cui Weichuan repeated in shock.

"That's right! Can't you hear the crowds cheering for him!" his assistant said.

The leader ran over with a speaker and said, "Ladies and gentlemen! Comrades, Mayor Luo will be here for an inspection soon! Don't stop working and don't chat with each other. Show Mayor Luo how serious we at Team 15 are about our jobs."

The leader of the team Cui Weichuan was in was a strong, tough guy, but he shivered at the thought of Luo Yuan's arrival. His face flushed when he talked and he was overwhelmed by excitement.

"Yes sir!" the staff members shouted in unison.

Everybody responded positively. They were all pumped up and sang their work song at the top of their lungs. They were so fired up that the cold did not bother them at all.

After such declarations and announcements of Mayor Luo Yuan's arrival over every form of media, an ordinary person would seem like a legend in the eyes of the public. Moreover, Luo Yuan was the man who rescued mankind from annihilation! All across every class of society, his legend resonated with the people as a symbol of hope. Some people even worshipped him. In such an environment, no matter how intelligent a person was, anyone could be influenced by their admiration for another.

Furthermore, it was not only among ordinary civilians, the adoration of his person happened at every corner of Hope City.

By now, even if Luo Yuan lost all his strength, his power would not be shaken. No rebel could do him any harm.

...

"At the moment, our stock of thermal clothing is quite limited, sir. We have a total of 32,000 people working with us!" Tian Jinping, who was responsible for the project, reported to Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan considered the numbers and nodded in approval of his progress.

As compared to Luo Yuan who was not affected by the cold at all, Tian Jinping was dressed in layers of clothes which made his small body swell up.

"Have the factories responsible for thermal-related gear started work?" Luo Yuan asked.

"As of last night before 7 p.m., all the workers have been briefed and production has begun!" Tian Jinping said carefully.

"That's great!" Luo Yuan said with a satisfied gleam in his eyes.

Tian Jinping was relieved. He was not promiscuous, not greedy

and not a man who enjoyed life as it was. He was cautious when he worked and did everything with a meticulous mind for details. But, he was a man who loved authority. He did not have any interest in material things. What he enjoyed was the ability to use his authority however he could.

As Luo Yuan mattered so much to him, obtaining his approval made all his hard work worth it.

"Mayor, I read about the production status of leather clothing last night and realized that we have produced more than 100,000 of them. Now that most of the people own thermal clothing and can go about their full-time job, they won't be joining the production teams. I suggest that we take a portion of funds from the Finance Department and repurchase the thermal clothing from the civilians so we won't have a problem with a shortage of workers," Tian Jinping said, confident with his hypothesis.

Luo Yuan stopped walking and thought for a moment. He found the idea to be sensible and agreed with him. "That's a great suggestion. Let's purchase them at the original price and allow the workers to utilize the thermal clothing for free. Draft a proposal for my approval as soon as you can," he said.

As the objective of keeping the citizens of Hope City warm and safe was completed, the thermal clothing that was in demand was now redundant. If the government was to hoard stock of thermal clothing from the people, there might be an uproar. If not for Tian Jinping's reminder, Luo Yuan would have overlooked the issue.

As for the financial situation of the government, it was not a

worry anymore. No matter if it was Hope City or the old reconstruction area, the circulation of products available on the market were pathetically low. The use of currency in the form of food vouchers were restricted. Some of the necessities on demand were not for sale even with monetary transactions. Besides an upgrade of food varieties, there was nowhere to spend any currency.

It was a failure in the financial system that only happened during the time of war in the apocalypse. As soon as peace was regained and stressful times relieved, the exploitation of privilege and acceleration of corruption would then begin.

Therefore, the restoration of a normal market circulation was one of the most important steps in his plan. But it was not the time for it yet. It had to wait until mankind migrated onto the spacecraft.

...

Looking at the enthusiasm and the admiration in the eyes of the people that gazed at him, Luo Yuan paid little attention to it as he had already gotten used to the attention.

The temperature was -70-degree celsius. Living conditions were unbearable. For the older generation of people, no matter how much they wore, they would be dead in half a day under such harsh environments.

Now that mankind's physique was three times stronger than

before, their bodies could better withstand the cold. However, it was only just slightly better as they were still human. There were many who had lost fingers and toes to the frostbite. Luo Yuan noticed that most of their noses were numb and some did not even notice there were icicles hanging off their chins.

"What time do they start work?" Luo Yuan asked as he noticed it was already 10:30 p.m.

"6:30 a.m., sir!" Tian Jinping replied.

"That's too long. With the environment being this bad, we can't use the usual measure of work hours for the employees. I suggest they get half an hour breaks every two hours they work. Also, there will be cooked vegetables and hot soup available 24-hours a day, every day at the canteen for them to keep warm and replenish their strength," Luo Yuan said.

It was not considered a suggestion for Tian Jinping as he took his job and Luo Yuan's instructions very seriously.

He said in embarrassment, "Mayor, I apologize. It's my fault that I overlooked this. Thank you for your observation. Let me rearrange the work schedule later when I get back to my office."

Looking at him with a frown, Luo Yuan was actually speechless. Although it had been a long time since he had become the mayor, the occasional ass-kissing now and again was still too much for him.

If not for his capabilities and cautiousness, Luo Yuan would have doubted the means of his rise to becoming the vice-mayor. Perhaps even the good ones had their flaws.

"Let's take a look over there!" Luo Yuan said to change the subject.

...

"Mayor Luo is looking in our direction!" Cui Weichuan who had been watching Luo Yuan's movement exclaimed excitedly. When he saw Luo Yuan was walking towards his direction.

"Is he really coming?" The worker who was facing the opposite direction asked nervously, his palm sweating under the pressure.

"Yes, he's just a few hundred meters away. Let's give everything we have and chant our song. Hi-ho! Hi-ho!" Cui Weichuan shouted as they broke into song.

The chants got even louder as the rhythm got faster. With Cui Weichuan leading the chants, he was worried about what Luo Yuan's would say when they meet each other. A greeting or hand-shaking, what would his own response be, he thought.

But, in truth, Cui Weichuan wondered if he might have forgotten about him. After all, he was a nobody. It was a long time ago, how would Luo Yuan remember him!

While he stood over thinking the possible scene to come, Luo Yuan was fast approaching. His heart raced in his chest. He made eye contact with Luo Yuan, and was surprised when he nodded in response. A gush of excitement overwhelmed him.

He did not expect Mayor Luo to remember him, and now he even nodded to him.

Although Luo Yuan was just passing by and walked on away from him, he could not hide his excitement.

"Did you guys see that?" Cui Weichuan said softly. "Mayor Luo nodded at me," he pride in his eyes.

"I saw that. But I think Mayor Luo was nodding to all of us. You can't take that away from everybody," said a worker who stood next to him. Everyone had gotten excited too and now some of them were resentful of what Cui Weichuan had said. The nod was sufficient for all them to boast for a lifetime.

"That's right, sir. That was an honor for the whole group. It belongs to the team. Why would Mayor Luo nodded to you alone?" he continued. The people around him murmured in agreement.

Cui Weichuan was stunned, "But Mayor Luo and..."

Just as he attempted to explain himself, the leader of the operation's voice burst out through the speakers, "I believe that all of them saw Mayor Luo's attitude towards us. He was satisfied

with our work. It's an honor for our team. Keep the hard work going..."

Cui Weichuan's jaw dropped. He felt his brief moment of pride slip away as his heart sank in his chest.

...

Luo Yuan thought to himself as he walked on. He did not expect to see someone that he knew. His stunning memory allowed him to remember Cui Weichuan who he knew from before. For the old Luo Yuan, he would definitely have stopped to chat with him but now, he represented more than just himself. Each move he made was watched by many so he had to be very careful. The same phenomena did not apply to him before and he felt rather awkward about it.

Although nobody could restrict Luo Yuan, he did not show any favor to the people he knew from his past as there would most definitely be people looking and over-analyzing the situation. Luo Yuan tried his best to avoid that.

...

Soon he left after his inspection of the ice mining site. He then arrived at the genetic lab in Hope City as he heard earlier that day that the plant cloning facilities were ready for production.

Ever since most of the researchers had migrated onto the

spacecraft, the research activities in Hope City had basically stopped. The lab that was responsible for cloning became infested with rodents.

"Let me see the results," Luo Yuan asked.

"Yes, Mayor!" the institute's director said immediately. He was ready for the mayor's inspection. Soon they arrived at the embryo storage incubation pods.

The plant embryos were placed in petri dishes as it was just the preliminary stage of mitosis, where the embryos were still insignificant. Luo Yuan picked up one of them and looked closely while the director explained.

"That is one of the 50 types of plants that we handpicked for cloning. A part of them are the plants that we consume while the rest are the samples that we collected before the disaster occurred. Most of them are approximately a millimeter in length. We estimate in two to three days, buddings would take place and for the vegetables, they would be fully grown in six to 10 days," he said, a monotonous tone to his speech.

"Isn't that faster than the growth of vegetables in the agricultural area?" Luo Yuan asked curiously, as he was not too familiar with plant cloning.

"That is correct, the plant cloning has the characteristic of that particular growth cycle, but with a faster rate of reproduction," he said.

It seemed like the director wanted to make up for the bad impression he had left earlier. He made sure he was fully prepared for any questions asked during the inspection.

He proceeded to say, "To make them grow even faster, we have conducted research on a nutrient for the plants to accelerate their growth. We have already gotten the base figured out. If everything goes as planned, the speed of growth would be 50% faster."

"Well done!" Luo Yuan nodded in satisfaction.

The institute's director was over the moon with Luo Yuan's compliment, "We will put all efforts we have into that research..."

Luo Yuan stopped him right there, "I don't want empty promises! I want to see results. As long as you keep up the good work, I will definitely acknowledge your progress," he said.

"Yes, Mayor!" the director quipped, taken aback by his response.

Luo Yuan took out the sample of the Wisdom Heart that he brought from his bedroom this morning and said, "Since the plant cloning is almost done, we can carry on with this research project. This is a unique plant. It could possibly change the fate of mankind. Please clone it, do your research of it and report back to me. Your research lab isn't the first lab to do research on it. There are many more out there with more advanced equipment that are conducting their own tests. I hope we can be at the forefront of them all."

The director was stunned. The immense pressure aside, he was very curious. He was an outstanding researcher, but also a very humble person. He still had the urge to know everything in the world and never took things lightly.

Now that the mayor said this plant could change the fate of mankind, his instinct for curiosity was killing him.

"May... Mayor, what is this plant exactly?" he stuttered once he had mustered to courage speak.

With a thoughtful expression on his face, Luo Yuan replied, "It is a sapling of the Wisdom Tree!"

Chapter 476: Mother

Luo Yuan bumped into Chen Xinjie on his way back to the City Hall. She had stacks of documents in her hands as she walked towards him. The ugly work uniform became very sexy on her attractive body. Glancing at her neck, down to her chest, he could almost see the shape of her perky boobs in his mind.

Looking at Luo Yuan's eyes, she started feeling uncomfortable. She wanted to avoid him but it was too late. The only thing she could do was pretend that she did not see him.

Soon they were passing by each other, Luo Yuan stopped walking. He whispered in a deep voice into Chen Xinjie's ear, "Drop by my office later!"

Chen Xinjie was stunned, she was mad and bit her lips. What does that even mean?

She was just a clerk in the City Hall, even her superiors did not have the right to enter Luo Yuan's office. Many people were watching the scene take place, she as the beauty she was would definitely be the topic of gossip if she ever did enter Luo Yuan's office.

...

Back at his office, Luo Yuan sat on his chair and read the documents that he had for the day. Soon his secretary was there with a cup of hot tea. The heat did not bother him, he had a gulp

straight away and said to Cheng Guanghui, "Chen Xinjie from the Organization Department will drop by later. Just send her in when she's here."

The strange request did not surprise Cheng Guanghui, "Yes, Mayor! Is there anything else?" She said.

"No, you're dismissed!" He replied.

"Yes, Mayor. Let me know if you need me," Cheng Guanghui said as left the office and closed the door softly behind her.

Luo Yuan glanced at him and proceeded with the documents. Now that he was the mayor, what people thought of him did not bother him anymore. He had a bad reputation for being promiscuous anyway and everyone in the management department knew it. The women he had at home was a prove to the rumor.

He would never be a clean leader. Although everybody knew about his behavior, nobody would dare say anything. As long as he was alive, he was still a godlike being to people, and that was what they published. In the eye of politics, this was nothing.

Luo Yuan waited for more than 10 minutes. He had gone through all the documents that he had for the day and had a couple of tea but Chen Xinjie was not there.

He forced a smile. His smile had the power to make everyone

obey him but that did not seem to work on women. He looked at the time and was ready to head out for lunch. He could sense that Chen Xinjie was near.

She held her head down while she walked swiftly towards his office. She hesitated at the door for awhile before she decided to step into his office.

"Mayor Luo, what can I do for you?" She looked away while she talked to him, her face expressionless.

"What took you so long? I have been waiting for a long time!" Luo Yuan grumbled, genuinely upset with the delay.

"I'm busy working!" Chen Xinjie said without making eye contact with Luo Yuan.

"Look at me when you talk to me. Where did your courage to seduce me go?" Luo Yuan scoffed.

"I was just doing my job!" Chen Xinjie said and bit her lips. Her eyes were red with anger. She could not hold the wall that she put up any longer. An intense shame overwhelmed her. She was tearing up. She was never a flirtatious person but her job had made her do things that she did not want to do, one of them placing her in this awkward predicament.

Between the benefit of the country and her personal relationship, her choice was the first one. But what was wrong with that? It was

all over, why would he want to bring it up?

Luo Yuan stood up and said in all seriousness, "Who instructed you to do that? The director of the Firearms Bureau? Some information department that despises evolved humans? Or was it the high committee?"

"None of them exist anymore, what's the point of saying all that," Chen Xinjie said, shocked and panicked with his hostile questioning. She looked at Luo Yuan innocently hoping that he could stop asking her about it.

Her status at the Firearms Bureau was not a simple affair. Apart from the status that she held, she was secretly one of the members of the Special Information Department and she was quite highly ranked too.

Although the organization was destroyed in the disaster, there were some of the members who remained in Hope City and were absorbed into the governmental department. If the investigation persisted, there would be much more people involved.

Worse, the person who was investigating it all would hold the fate of mankind in his or her hands!

"If those organizations don't exist anymore, then which organization do you belong to right now?" Luo Yuan asked, as he walked closer to her and whispered into her ear.

"Be... belong..." she mumbled. Feeling Luo Yuan's breath, she felt extremely uncomfortable and slightly aroused against her better judgment. She composed herself and cleared her throat, saying "I belong to the Hope City's Organization Department!"

"Then who do you report to in the department?" Luo Yuan leaned closer to her, his tone becoming more and more menacing.

"Stand... standing committee!" she stuttered. As Luo Yuan got closer to her, Chen Xinjie felt something was wrong. She had no idea what he was up to.

"And who does the standing committee report to?" Luo Yuan was now behind her. His fingers lightly touched her body, caressing her ample curves.

Now, even an idiot knew what Luo Yuan was up to. She was furious, she looked away but did not say a thing.

"It's okay if you don't tell me, as long as you know that you are to adhere to my instructions," Luo Yuan said, as he took his hand off her body and patted her shoulder. He continued, and said in a serious tone, "Stay back at night, that's an order!"

She was shocked to hear such a shameless request. She stepped on the back of Luo Yuan's foot but not only he did not feel a thing, she almost twisted her leg. Looking at his handsome face, she suddenly had the urge to scratch his face.

"Shameless! That will never happen!" She snarled between pursed lips. She stared at Luo Yuan and said while biting her lips.

She was worried that people would gossip if she stayed any longer. She right herself, adjusted her uniform and left his office immediately.

...

As his desire went away, Luo Yuan forced a smile to his face. He used to be able to control his lust but now that his body was so powerful, he felt like a crack in the dam, nobody could stop him. What Luo Yuan presented was like one of the essays by Lu Xun, the ancient writer. When one saw a shorter sleeve, he would think of the arms, then the thighs and then the naked body. Chen Xinjie's appearance in the corridor led to this. If not for his conscious state making him aware that they were in the mayor office, unimaginable things would have happened.

"But should I go at night?" Luo Yuan thought to himself.

Before he even decided, he sensed something and stood up.

"Eh!" Luo Yuan looked to his left as if he looked at a distance of a few hundred meters away, right through the walls of his office.

...

"We have been walking for almost two days, and now we're

finally arriving at Hope City. We will be home in a few hours." Lin Feiyan said as they walked on.

Lin Feiyan looked at the map on the GPS and said to the little girl, "Are you happy?"

The little girl who was usually giddy seemed to not be in the zone this time. She only responded a few times after Lin Feiyan called out her name.

"What's wrong?" Wu Qianru squat down and patted her head.

Along the journey, Wu Qianru had gotten closer to this poor little girl. Her unusual silence upset her. "Are you worried about what would happen to you in the future? If you don't mind, you can be my daughter," she said warmly.

The little girl shook her head.

"No, shouldn't she be my daughter? I'm the leader, don't you dare take her away from me." Looking at Wu Qianru trying to steal the little girl away, Lin Feiyan stepped in and used her rank benefits to obtain her prize.

Unfortunately, now that the Firearms Bureau was dissolved by Luo Yuan, her power was not a big deal anymore.

"Why not? I know how old you are, and you're still young. Too young to be responsible for another person. Can you take good care

of her?"

"I have said this many times before and I will say it again. I have matured now. Don't bring up my age," Lin Feiyan said, hints of anger broke through her voice.

...

During the argument, the little girl suddenly said, "Aunties, I think I felt my father!"

Hearing the strange statement the little girl said, the both of them stopped and looked at each other in shock. Wu Qianru asked, "You have a father?"

From what the little girl said earlier, she had no parents and grew up in a lab. They were stunned.

The little girl looked at them curiously, "If I have no father, how was I born?"

Feeling foolish, Lin Feiyan was speechless. She did not even graduate from junior high to know the answer to that, let alone explain it to a child.

She said softly, "I thought all you needed was a mother?"

"What's a mother?" the little girl said, doubtfully.

Listening to their conversation, Wu Qianru placed her hand on the little girl's forehead.

The little girl's maturity often made her think that she was older but in reality, she was not even a year old. The teacher obviously did not teach kids this young about biology, which frustrated her as she did not know anything about how babies were born.

Though speechless, Wu Qianru taught her how parents usually explained the birds and the bees.

"A mother is a woman, like me and this leader. When a mother sleeps on the same bed with a father, a baby would be born 10 months later!"

"Babies would be born when they sleep together? Is this how I am created? But how come I've never seen my mother?" The little girl said innocently.

"I'll be your mother then?" Wu Qianru said and hugged her.

"I am your mother too, so you have two mothers!" Lin Feiyan said immediately. She did not want to lose out on such a good and powerful little girl. She was not even a one year old and she was already so strong. Perhaps she would even exceed Luo Yuan abilities in the future.

Wu Qianru and Lin Feiyan put their hatred aside and came to an

agreement to be the little girl's mothers.

"Say, mother!" Wu Qianru said.

"Mo... Mother!" The little girl said in confusion.

"I'm your mother too, call me Mother too!" Lin Feiyan, jealousy apparent on her face.

"Mother!"

She was becoming more fluent.

"Repeat that again?"

"Mother! Mother! Mother!" The little girl did not know how to say no, so she said everything accordingly.

On the other hand, both of them had forgotten about the fact that little girl mentioned her father.

Chapter 477: Scum

"I think my father is coming!" The girl screamed with excitement.

The joyful atmosphere ended when the little girl said those words. The two ladies looked at each other. They had just realized that there was a flow in the air that was previously stagnant. There were some strange, weak and unusual cyclones coming from far away. It seemed like there was a being with a terrifying aura approaching them at full speed. The aura was so horrifying that they were slightly suffocated by the pressure.

They looked at each other again to acknowledge the danger that they were in as the atmosphere was heavier.

"Little girl, do you really have a father?" Wu Qianru asked instantly. It was not her fault that she did not ask that question earlier as it was unusual for a parent to have a kid who was so powerful. That person had to be a super evolved human that was even stronger than the both of them combined. But the strange thing was, why would the parent leave his own kid at the lab for experimentation?

Although there were many loopholes in the reconstruction area, such a case involved the safety of a human being. It crossed the line of an evolved person's code of conduct. If it was exposed, it could cause instability in the reconstruction area. It was so risky that it seemed impossible!

They suspected the little girl must be a product of some secret super-warrior genetics program where no parents were involved in the creation of such lethal force. The 'father' that the little girl talked about is probably only in her imagination.

But what they did not expect was, her father was really here. Within seconds, the cyclones became mini tornados with a deep, loud buzz that filled the air. It felt like the sky was crumbling. The fearsome sight seemed like God was descending upon earth.

Lin Feiyan's scalp went numb. Her palms were sweating and her mind was blank.

"Do you think that's an evolved human from Hope City?" Wu Qianru asked nervously.

Lin Feiyan thought about all the evolved humans that she had met and heard before but none of them could cause such sight before they even appeared.

"I don't know, maybe there is some other super-evolved human that we have yet to discover," she said while shaking her head.

During the purge, many evolved humans were chased out of the reconstruction area or they ran away. Some of them were still alive and some of them might have gotten even stronger.

"Should... should we hide ourselves?" Wu Qianru said, her voice trembling nervously. Her face was pale as they were not sure if the

approaching entity was good or bad. It was even more dangerous just to stay there.

"Let's... see!" Lin Feiyan insisted to stay as she thought she did not do anything wrong. Even if it was a level eight mutated beast, it might let them go as they had its daughter with them? She immediately thought up hostage negotiation tactics just to be sure.

The person that advanced towards them was none other than Luo Yuan. It was normal for Lin Feiyan to think it was someone other than him as he had left the Firearms Bureau since his last mission where investigate the aliens. He would have usually been in the wilderness on normal days where they hardly met each other anyway. Furthermore, she did not have the right to track him down at the Records Information Department, therefore, she was not aware of his ability to cause such a scene when he flew.

Lin Feiyan looked at the little girl and realized that she was even more nervous than they were. She looked into the sky, her fists balled tight till her knuckles whitened. There was a buzzing sound coming out of her fists while her body started boiling.

"Have... you seen your father before?" Lin Feiyan asked, now legitimately afraid.

The little girl looked at her and continued to look at the sky, "I saw him when I was born!" She said.

The little girl was one of the subjects of Luo Yuan's cloning project. To avoid the clones from looking like him, Luo Yuan

intentionally modified their genes where some of the Y chromosome were removed which caused the gender to change as a result. Her attributes were basically similar to Luo Yuan's where her Intelligence was already +16 when she was born which cause her to have a clear recollection of memories of the time she was in the cloning pod.

What the little one said shocked the both of them.

"Do you think... your father is a reasonable man, possibly with a calm temperament?" Lin Feiyan asked carefully.

"I don't know. But he's respectful and very powerful!" The little girl thought and knew that the both of them were extremely nervous! Just as they talked, the air around them became exceedingly intense. Many cyclones formed out of thin air and the snow on the ground started rising in the air and the buzzing sound became louder and louder.

A small dot appeared in the sky. It was a blur at first but within seconds, it was magnified much larger as it approach at the speed of light.

Seconds later, a person descended from the sky and landed on the ground. The landing made a giant hole on the ground.

They were shocked to see who the person was.

"You..." Lin Feiyan glared at Luo Yuan and did not know what to

say. She did not expect he was the one that got all of them in a panicked state.

She then rolled her eyes at him. She was surprised to find out that he had an unlawful daughter. But that was nothing strange as he was known to be promiscuous.

Looking at the both of them staring at him, Luo Yuan thought they were strange but he did not dwell on it. He looked at the little girl, "So it was the both of you who found her. Where did you guys find her?" He asked.

"Father!" the little girl blurted out before the both of them said anything.

Luo Yuan was shocked to hear that and said, "I am not your father!"

She was just his clone. To some extent, she was barely even his clone as they were very different. Even their gender was not the same. The only thing that they had in common was the soma that he provided while she was growing and from that soma, it gave them a unique connection.

"But, you are my father.." The little girl said softly.

Ever since she was in the cloning pod, she and her siblings could feel the connection. She could even remember him when she first opened her eyes. The memory was brief but clear. It was a

consensus that her and her batch of clones had.

Looking at Luo Yuan's odd expression, Lin Feiyan was tempted to call him a scum but she did not as she respected him.

"Let's talk about this later!" he said. Luo Yuan was slightly annoyed as such a complicated relationship was hard to explain.

It was not because he despised kids but the problem was that this had come out of nowhere! He did not even have lunch before he came here and now he found out that he had a daughter. He was not prepared for this. Worse of all, her survival was not an accident. Perhaps there were more clones that were living out there somewhere in the world.

There were more than 4,100 clones in this batch and the survival rate of those with fusion based bodies was almost 300 individuals per batch. If all of them were to call him father, that would be a headache.

But no matter what, there was a chance that there were more clones survived that needed to be rescued. Those clones were not merely the expansion of his Strength and Will, as they could be trained to be terrifying warriors just as he was. Even if they did not become warriors, their outstanding intelligence would be a great asset for the advancement of human civilization.

"Wu Qianru, where did you find her?" He turned around and asked her. Between the two of them, Wu Qianru was more trustworthy.

"In Endeavor City. She was almost frozen in the snow." No matter how much she despised Luo Yuan's personal life, Wu Qianru had to answer his question.

"Endeavor City.. That's very far away from New Capital!" Luo Yuan mumbled to himself.

It was not that he had never been to the giant pothole in New Capital City. It was just that he had not sensed anything when he was there. Perhaps the clones were scattered around the region.

After all, his spiritual sense was limited by distance. He could not sense things that were too far away.

"Could you show me the map?" Luo Yuan asked.

Lin Feiyan passed the map to him and he returned it to her after a quick glance. After a moment, he said, "Please go back to Hope City. I'll go look around for awhile longer. There might be more of them around the place."

He then looked at the little girl and said, "You, be a good girl and follow them to Hope City, where they will arrange your accommodation."

He had yet to decide where the little girl would live as it depended on situation. If there were one or two of them, they could live with him but if there were more than ten or even a

hundred of them, he would have to arrange something else or his home would become a kindergarten.

"Yes, father. I'll be a good girl." The little girl said.

"It's alright, Mayor Luo. She will stay with us," Lin Feiyan said.

"Mother, I want to stay with father!" The little girl said shyly.

"Mother?" Luo Yuan looked at them with suspicion. What exactly happened here?

The both of them blushed and looked away from Luo Yuan, "She's now our step-daughter!" Lin Feiyan said.

Luo Yuan nodded with no disagreement to their statement and said, "Please take good care of her. I'll be on my way then. About her accommodation, we will talk about it when I get back."

As he finished talking, Luo Yuan slightly bent his knees, stomped hard on the ground and shot into the air like an arrow. Soon, he disappeared far away into the clouds.

Lin Feiyan tidied her hair that was messed up by the wind and said softly, "Bastard!"

"Perhaps there was a misunderstanding," Wu Qianru said. She liked Luo Yuan and believed that there was something behind

what just happened that he did not say.

"Why are you covering for him?" Lin Feiyan shouted as could not contain herself any longer. "Don't be misled by his handsome, innocent face. Do you know how many women he has kept? You would be shocked! There are at least six of them that I know of, and he has two underage ones at home! You know Chen Xinjie, the previous manager of the Firearms Bureau, they had an affair. When he became the vice-captain, he made her his secretary. He is an ass! We don't know how many unlawful children he has."

"Is that so?" Wu Qianru said. She could not believe what she just heard. Her imagination of Luo yuan was ruined.

"That's not just it. He always looks at me like a pervert and flirts with me. If I did not reject him, he would have gotten what he wanted," Lin Feiyan continued her anger fueled rant.

To convince Wu Qianru, Lin Feiyan did not mind embarrassing herself. Wu Qianru then looked at Lin Feiyan body that was like a primary school kid. She was confused but did not say a thing. She believed what Lin Feiyan said, but she did not buy what she said at the end and thought. No matter how desperate Mayor Luo was, it was hard to believe that he would want Lin Feiyan.

Chapter 478: A Nestful

It was noon, but the sky was dark, it felt like it was late in the evening. As compared to the time when the disaster just happened, the visibility of daytime was almost back to normal now and not as dark as before. There was a fine line between day and night, however, it did not cause the temperature to return to normal. It was still -65 to -70 degree Celsius during the day and the temperature would drop 10 more degrees at night.

Luo Yuan stopped flying as he arrived at his destination. He looked beneath him into the darkness. It was a gigantic hole that covered about 10,000 square kilometers. The antimatter bomb that dropped on New Capital City did not only destroy the city, but the terrifying force destroyed the smaller cities nearby too. Even the mountains around it were either burnt to ashes or crumbled into flatlands.

Luo Yuan had been here before. The heat that came out of the Earth's crust due to the explosion and the ice layer that he had destroyed was now frozen again. The place seemed to be back to normal and there were no trails of eruption from the underground active volcanos.

But he was not here for this.

He descended from the sky, closed his eyes and used his Sense to find out if there were any human beings in the area.

Unfortunately, there was nothing. If he could sense anything, he

would have the last time he was here.

To be honest, if not for the clone that he found by accident, he would not have believed there were any survivors from such a disastrous attack.

But now that he thought about it, it was possible. The impact of the antimatter bomb was powerful and terrifying. As soon as it touched any form of matter, there would be massive high-energy particle flows of radiation released from it. The impact was similar to the explosion of a thousand hydrogen bombs at the same time. If he ever encountered such an attack, no matter how strong he was, there was nothing that he could do.

But it was most probably just an exaggeration if this gigantic hole was, in fact, the center of the explosion. In reality, the area of the explosion was not even one-fifth of what they imagined. The size of the hole was partially caused by the gasification of matter and the high-energy flow of particles that liquefied the ground around it. Naturally, the impact of the shockwave was not to be underestimated.

But to his body, it was not as destructive as it seemed. Using his body as an example, although he had never experimented his sensitivity to heat, he could now handle almost 3,000 degree Celsius. Such resistance allowed him to even shower in lava or boiling water without getting burnt. His defenses were similarly terrifying where he could withstand short-distance explosions of conventional missiles and even an electromagnetic bomb which speed was less than 30 times of the speed of light. His body's defense system and attack capability were equally high making

him extremely dangerous and almost indestructible. Regular attacks could do nothing to Luo Yuan.

Although the clones that had his genetics would not be as powerful as he was, with the same type of body, they would not be weak either.

There were almost 300 clones that had fusion bodies and they had been categorized into 28 groups. Most of them had two abilities and there were two groups among them where a small percentage of the clones had three abilities which meant they had an amazing potential for growth. Those that had two and three abilities were outliers. With the kind of body they had, even Luo Yuan could not imagine the kind of chemical reactions going on within them. To be able to survive such an attack, perhaps that was no accident.

Luo Yuan started to look outside the hole.

...

The weather after the disaster was unusual. Perhaps there was too much dust in the air as well as clouds in the sky that caused the water to condense more frequently. Within a couple of minutes into his search, the visibility dropped and soon, the space before him was as black as coal. A soft breeze blew in the air at first but soon it became a strong wind and within seconds, there was an ice storm. Filthy hail stones rained down like meteorites. The hail stones ranged from being as big as a football to more than half a meter in diameter. If people were to be hit by it, they could be hurt badly or killed.

Luo Yuan had to use his prediction ability to avoid the bigger hail stones. Of course, his defense allowed him to remain unharmed even if a metal boulder were to hit him but as he was flying using his Will which meant that he was not as fast as usual. However, due to the low maneuverability and the density of the hailstones, he was hit three times in the span of 10 minutes.

His fusion body made him impulsive. He lost his temper when a hailstone hit him again. He stared at the sky and allowed the hailstones to rain down upon him.

Sensing that the storm would not stop anytime soon, he decided to fly into the cloud and attempt at getting rid of the dark clouds.

Just before he started to fly, he suddenly sensed a weak soul. He put his anger aside, closed his eyes and used his Sense in that direction. It was not an illusion. The soul was weak. If not for the hailstones that forced him to fly at a low altitude, he would have missed it.

From the where he was, it seemed to be underground and it was not moving.

He was happy. Without hesitation, he gathered his Will and started flying in a space-time bubble. The space around him morphed into a bubble and soon, his body sank underground.

He went underground through the ice layer. It was dark in there as no light was shining through. Besides the black hole, there was

nothing else that was darker than this.

Fortunately, his four-dimensional vision did not rely on light, so even under such conditions, his vision was not affected at all.

It was just 30 kilometers from the hole in New Capital City. It was all made of a glass-like substance that solidified, molded by the lava around it. He dipped a few hundred meters deeper and there he found normal rock formations. He accelerated and sank 1,000 meters below the ground. He could feel the feeling intensify, but the clones were much deeper than where he was. He wondered how the clones got so deep underground in the first place.

"Could it be lost and couldn't find its way up?" He thought, but that was ridiculous.

"That's possible. From the day they were born, they should now be one-year-olds. What a nuisance to have to find a toddler that made me sink so deep from the ground," Luo Yuan thought.

He had limited interactions with the little girl so he did not know much about the clones.

Back in the reconstruction area, he treated the clones like geniuses. They were never ordinary children to him.

As he was closer to the soul's location, he felt something strange. There was more than one. There were a few of them.

Luo Yuan did not only find one, but he had found a nestful of them!

Chapter 479: To The Rescue

When Luo Yuan was 1,500 meters underground. He could not be sure if the spirits were close by or 30 meters away from him. It was impossible to get the accurate coordinates to where Luo Yuan had to estimate them himself. He got out of the Space-Time bubble and suddenly a four-meter wide burrow appeared.

As it was deep in the ground and near the Earth's core, the nuclear winter did not affect the environment underground. The temperature here was about 40 degree Celsius which was similar to the temperature before the disaster happened. Perhaps it was the reason the clones had been staying here.

Luo Yuan sensed their direction and started to dig further underground. The structure here was made of sedimentary rocks and they were as thin as the pages in a book. With Luo Yuan's strength, he did not have to do much to dig through the rocks. He was confused as there were trails of seashells and aquatic plants along the way. He then realized that he was in the buried Taklamakan Desert, where the reconstruction area was before. A hundred million years ago, it was an ocean.

After digging a few meters deeper, Luo Yuan noticed that the rocks nearby had been hacked by man. He was relieved as that meant the clones were not too far away.

He dug even faster. About 10 meters into the digging, there was a loud thud and dust was everywhere. Besides the irritating dust, there was a stench that smelled like a dead body. He got worried. He then squeezed himself into the 1.2-meter tall cave.

To enter the cave, he had to squat down but he had expected that as it was underground. It was air-tight. It was impossible for someone to move the rocks out which meant the normal digging would not work.

To open up a space like that, the only way was to compress the rocks around it and every inch of space required massive amounts of effort and time to manipulate.

The cave was long and curved and it could only fit one person. The surface was only three square meters wide. That did not bother Luo Yuan. What he saw shocked him! There were 13 clones lying on the ground. The children looked like they were two-year-olds, and the eldest one was about five years old.

There were eight of them who had lost their senses and they were all smaller in size.

Luo Yuan regretted the experiment he did. Their dead bodies were complete but their skin was slightly rotten with a horrible stench.

It was obvious that those that died did not have fusion bodies. Under the circumstances of no air and food, they could not live for long. Perhaps they died within half a day of finding the cave. What made Luo Yuan curious was how the strong and the weak escaped together to this place, but that question could wait.

He then looked at the clones that were still alive. They were in no

better shape as they were so skinny, they looked like breathing skeletons. They laid together in a corner and seemed to be asleep. Even their heartbeats could barely be sensed. If not for Luo Yuan's ability to sense spirits, he would have thought they were all dead.

It was four months since the disaster happened. Not having food and water for such a long time, they were on the verge of death.

In reality, food was of least importance. The most important thing was the lack of water. Without water, cold fusion could not occur. There was no water in the cave and as the wall of the cave was overly compressed, there was a highly absorbent layer that surrounded it which made the air extra dry.

Luo Yuan used his Will to look at the conditions of their bodies. They were in a very bad state. Their cells had all dried up as water was drained from the cells which made mitochondrial fusion impossible. Their blood had almost solidified and countless red blood cells were clumped up and most of them were dead. The water and nutrients in their bodies were even lower than that in their cells. Their bodies were eating themselves. If the condition persisted and their organs consumed, death would be instant.

"Fortunately, we still have time!" Luo Yuan thought. He was both worried and grateful. Without hesitation, he used his space-time bubble and brought all the survivors up to the surface. The dead bodies remained in the cave where nobody would ever find them. There was no grave better than being 1,500 meters underground.

The ice storm was still going on out there. Luo Yuan knew that they could not stay in the cold as their bodies were weak. He did

not stay any longer and went straight to Hope City.

...

Back at Luo Yuan's villa, a group of people surrounded the mummified-looking children. They were both curious and horrified.

"Mayor Luo, these children have been starved for a long time. Their consciousness has shut down and many of their organs have stopped functioning. The only way is to inject nutrients into their cells and slowly nurse them back to a health. But, their chances of survival are... slim." Ye Qiuyu put down her stethoscope and said with her pale face.

The children's condition was beyond her understanding. They were not breathing, their hearts were not beating, they were cold and stiff. If Luo Yuan did not insist that they were still alive, she would have scolded him for wasting her time.

"Don't worry about all those things, hydrate them with water first." Luo Yuan frowned and said.

Ye Qiuyu was stunned. She attempted to say no. As a professional doctor, she was sure that they would not be able to swallow. If they were to give them water, the water would go straight into their trachea and drown their lungs. But as Luo Yuan was adamant, she went ahead to get them water.

It was not her place to say anything, she could only obey whatever he said.

"Luo Yuan, where did you find all these children?" Huang Jiahui could not help but ask.

"Not far away from New Capital City!" Luo Yuan shouted.

"Are there still survivors out there?" Zhao Yali said curiously as he joined the conversation.

"I am not sure, perhaps there are!" Luo Yuan shook his head and said.

The only survivors would be the powerful evolved humans who had the knowledge to live in the wilderness. But they were either living under the icy layer and hardly out on the surface or they were far away from reconstruction area. It was not easy to find them. Even if it was easy, Luo Yuan did not want to look for them. Under such cruel circumstances, people would lose their humanity and would be no different than animals. It might bring harm to them if he was to bring them back to Hope City.

"These children are unique. They are my clones. We have some sort of connection or else I couldn't have found them," he admitted.

Luo Yuan told them the truth as he had nothing to hide and it could not be a secret for long. If he did not explain now, he might

have a bigger problem when they woke up and started calling him 'father'.

They looked at each other in shock and disbelief as Luo Yuan had never mentioned it before. Ye Qiuyu who had just fetched water for the children almost dropped the cups when she heard what Luo Yuan said.

Human cloning was beyond being accepted by ordinary people. Unless one had reached a certain level, they would not even know it existed.

"It's nothing new, the technique of cloning has been around for a long time. Looking at the birth rate right now, without clones, mankind would have perished much sooner than later. That's the reason why I spent so much time in the lab earlier." Luo Yuan explained further as the people looked at him incredulously.

Then, Ye Qiuyu used specific medical techniques to open up one of the clones' mouth. She was not soft and weak as she had experienced working in war torn regions before. Under such condition, it was ridiculous to be soft as she had to treat up to 100 people during the war. Also, she had consumed an energy crystal nucleus yesterday, it gave her the strength of a man.

However, no matter how hard she tried, she could not open the kid's mouth.

Ye Qiuyu was embarrassed. She turned to tell Luo Yuan, "Mayor... Mayor Luo, I can't open their mouths!"

Looking at her being so disappointed, Luo Yuan smiled and walked over to her, "Let me do it!"

He took over the tools and walked to one of the clones. Without using much strength, he managed to open the clone's mouth and he turned to Ye Qiuyu, "Pass me the water?"

Ye Qiuyu passed him the water immediately. Before Luo Yuan fed the clone, she mustered her courage and asked, "Mayor... Mayor Luo, as a doctor, I need to remind you that people in a comatose state wouldn't be able to eat and all the fluids would go straight into their trachea."

Luo Yuan paused and looked at her, "Thanks for reminding me. But to them, that shouldn't be a problem."

That was true. These clones did not have to breathe. As soon as water entered their bodies, it would be absorbed immediately by the cells. Even their skin was absorbing the water in the air. Luo Yuan had noticed this earlier.

As compared to when they were underground, their skin color had already improved since they entered Hope City. It was not as dull and wrinkled as before.

Luo Yuan fed the water from the cup into one the clone's mouth. It seemed simple but was done roughly. Everyone who looked on was worried.

"Bring me more water!" Luo Yuan turned around and said.

Huang Jiahui and the rest went to fetch water immediately. Luo Yuan then gave each of the clones 500 millimeters of water. Looking at their bloated stomachs that could not take any more water, he stopped.

Just when he put down the cup, a stunning transformation happened to the first clone that had consumed the water.

First, its pale, gray body faded and its body temperature rose. From a temperature that was near negative, it returned to regular body temperature.

It was just the beginning.

Their skin became rosy and warm, there was heat coming out of them. The mutated human touched them out of curiosity but she retracted her hand and hid behind Luo Yuan.

"Are they okay?" Zhao Yali asked, concerned as to what was happening.

Luo Yuan touched their bodies, it was around 80-degrees Celsius. It was a deadly temperature for ordinary people but to people with fusion bodies, it was normal.

As soon as they began intense exercises, the heat their body gave off could start a fire.

"Don't worry, they are fine. They have been dehydrated for too long and their mitochondria have lost its balance. They will be back to normal after some time."

Soon, the second, third... and the fifth clone went through the same intense transformation.

Within five minutes, the first clone that went through the transformation was now glowing and rosy. His heart started beating and soon, he breathed normally. It was almost nothing to him as he did not really require those to live. A few minutes later, the clone's eyes twitched. Next, a pair of bright eyes opened.

He sat up and the first person he looked at was Luo Yuan.

"You are... our father!"

Chapter 480: Reasons

His voice was rough. It sounded as if sand was passing through a glass. One would feel slightly uncomfortable when the sound was heard. Apparently, his voice had not fully recovered yet.

He heard people calling him father once again. This time, Luo Yuan was not against it and nodded his head calmly, "What's your name?"

"My name is B1E32!" the clone replied.

"Who gave this name to you?" Luo Yuan slightly frowned and asked, as the name sounded odd. Despite the name being simply a term used for identification, an intelligent person or even the human clones should be respected with it.

As the person in charge of the project, Luo Yuan could briefly guess how the code was combined. B1 was the ability code of the Body Fusion. Luo Yuan vaguely remembered that F3 represented a flame-like ability. He had no idea about the numbers at the end though but he assumed that they were the sequential numbers of the clones from the same group.

"You should change your name! My surname is Luo. Since you addressed me as your father, you should follow my surname and with your ability to ignite, your new name will be Luo Lie." Luo Yuan said.

"Thanks, father. Luo... Luo Lie. My name is Luo Lie." He looked

happy and he repeated his name a few more times.

Luo Yuan was warmed by his happiness and smiled, "You should be hungry!"

As the kids were afraid of him, Luo Yuan did not give them a chance to answer. He then said to them, "Jiahui, please prepare some dishes for them."

These were Luo Yuan's clones. Perhaps it could not be determined by conventional methods. Huang Jiahui, being unsure of their habits had to ask before she left, "How much food should I prepare?"

"The more, the better!" Luo Yuan said while looking at the skinny clones.

Even though they had fusion bodies, water could not solve everything. Many of the essential human elements could not be synthesized through cold fusion and required to be absorbed through the consumption of food.

Four of the clones were now awake. After asking for their names, he noticed that one of them had only one skill, which was a fusion ability. The other three clones had two different abilities and one of them was Luo Yuan's clone with the qualities he desired.

It possessed the Body Fusion ability and teleportation.

The rest of them were from the same group of clones. They had the laser and the Body Fusion ability. The only difference was their gender.

Among five of the clones, there were four males and one female. Besides Luo Lie, their names were created based on their abilities, which were Luo Kong, Luo Fan, Luo Guang. The only female was named Luo Yan.

They did not act like kids as they were afraid of Luo Yuan. They treated Luo Yuan in a friendly way, with the utmost respect.

Luo Yuan frowned as he understood the emotions they were going through. Such emotions had existed since they were embryos. Perhaps because of the clones, his Will being homologous and also due to intimacy, the clones could feel the control their parents had over them.

Like a newborn vampire, the respect they had for the older generations was like the respect the kids had for their parents now.

It was not beneficial to Luo Yuan to have his kids being too respectful or even fearful of him. Eventually, that would cause them to feel distant.

They were not normal human beings. Each of them were super-evolved beings that were more powerful than the super-evolved humans. Luo Yuan would be in trouble if people with ulterior motives bewitched them.

Fortunately, they were still kids and it would be easier to build their characters from an early age. The environment they lived in after birth would be the most influential to their innate personality traits. At this moment, he decided to let the little girl stay together with them.

In order to reduce their nervousness, Luo Yuan's asked gently about their life in the lab and how did they avoid the disaster.

They answered only when a question was asked and kept quiet for the remainder of the time.

Luo Yuan roughly knew what was happening during that time and why there were dead bodies without the Body Fusion ability in the cave.

Luo Yuan's clones were more sensitive to danger than normal human beings.

Before the apocalypse, many of the clones could sense they were in great danger.

Some of them cried helplessly and became extremely annoyed. There were even clones that tried to escape from the lab, and everything was a mess.

There were around 4000 clones from this batch. Of course, not every one of them stayed in the hostel. If they were lucky, they would get to stay with the normal clones with certain freedoms

and liberties.

The clones would not be as strong as their parents and were way smaller than those with the Body Fusion ability. They seemed to be unattractive when compared to the stronger clones in the hostel. They did not have any abilities to survive destructive attacks as well.

When the antimatter bomb was dropped, four of the clones together with their partners began to flee.

However, nobody had expected that the disaster would be so terrifying. Due to the earthquakes, vaporization of substances, the power of destruction, and death threats, they had to burrow their way underground to escape.

Until the moment they were out of breath, they stopped digging. Most of the normal clones had died and only five of the clones with Body Fusion survived.

Luo Yuan sighed with emotion as he listened to how they made it through the horrific disaster!

In fact, with their strength, five of the clones were able to escape the disaster. Even the underground dig they had to endure to a depth of 1500 meters could not stop them. They would have possibly emerged from the ground within 10 days.

Perhaps it was due to the good relationship they had with each

other. None of them wanted to escape alone. It was possible that they were threatened by the antimatter substances and were afraid of escaping above ground. What they did was to expand their shelter and did not take any further action.

They would have died if Luo Yuan did not notice them in time.

.....

Luo Yuan stayed at home for half an hour and the women took good care of the clones. Then, he departed once more.

After all, he had just started looking for the clones and he might be able to find more clones this time around.

Again, he returned to the site where he had found them. He was relieved that the hail had stopped falling. The ice that had accumulated on the ground was thick and were stuck firmly on the lower ice layers forming a mysterious phenomenon.

He continued searching around the huge caves surrounding the area, but it seemed that he was out of luck. Even until the day was turning to night, he could not find a single one. He patiently looked for another hour but still, there were no traces of the clones. He had no choice but to return the next day and resume his search.

.....

Luo Yuan did not go home but headed toward the Municipal Government.

Today was the launching of the ice block mining project. A super project like this was complicated as many departments were involved. The expansion of the project had caused the rush of numerous other projects to completion to ensure time did not go to waste. He was sure that there would be many documents awaiting his approval since he had not been in the office that day.

The office was pretty busy.

"Mayor!"

"Hi, Mayor!"

.....

Luo Yuan nodded his head in response to their greetings and strode into his office. Indeed, the documents were all stacked up on his table.

He sipped the tea brewed by his secretary and started to work on the documents.

He had a keen brain which enabled him to handle those files very quickly. In just 10 minutes, he settled half the documents.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan took out a document and glanced at it. He was shocked as it was about the expansion of university enrollments.

The population size of the Hope City had exceeded 5,000,000 people. Most of them were coming from other cities and many of them were students. They were interrupted midway through their studies as the migration happened. The document proposed to recruit these students and assign them to the universities in the Hope City so that they could continue their education.

As a top tier city of great importance, many opportunities for higher education were available. There were institutes like the Hope University, Reconstruction Area Polytechnic, Hope University of Electronics, Hope University of Computer Science, Hope Medical College and many other vocational and technical colleges.

90,000 of them were university students and they were very talented individuals.

Unfortunately, the Reconstruction Area had only existed for two years. Many of the facilities for higher education were not available and had been delayed for a year. Therefore, many of the students who had yet to complete their studies had given up and started working.

This resulted in most of the students having low levels of education. There were very few graduates, postgraduate students as well as doctorate graduate students.

There were apparent talent gaps in society. Be it the Reconstruction Area or Hope City, the strength of scientific research was basically overdrawn and repetition from technology before the apocalypse.

However, the talent gaps will be filled eventually.

Luo Yuan sighed slightly. He then took out a pen and approved the document.

He sipped the tea and returned to his senses. He then took another document and continued to work on it. In just a short while, he had completed his task for the day.

Luo Yuan's asked his secretary to send back the documents to the related departments.

"Mayor... Mayor Tian wanted to report his work to you. Should I inform him to come and see you now?" The secretary asked politely.

"Yes, he may come now."

Chapter 481: Exposed

After half an hour, Tian Jinping walked out of his office and closed the door gently.

One after another, the officers came to report to him.

He then stayed at the office until late that night.

After telling his secretary to leave, Luo Yuan tidied up his desk and clothes. Then, he left the office. When he was on his way back, he looked at the time and realized that it was already 10 o'clock at night. He was wondering if Chen Xinjie was already asleep.

However, since they had promised each other to go on a date, he should not have left like this even though the date was, in a way, forced upon her by him.

Luo Yuan smiled as he thought and walked quickly toward Chen Xinjie's house. In just a short while, she came out of her house.

He could sense that someone was walking near to the door. The very next second, the door was opened and Chen Xinjie appeared in front of him. Her pajamas were dust-gray in color and its material was rough. However, her beauty was not covered and it made her smooth, fair skin stand out. Her boobs appeared fuller, making Luo Yuan have to consciously stop the impulse he had to "explore" her right there.

He did not want to seem ungracious to her, so he had to suppress his desire. He then shifted his gaze and made a move to go into her house.

However, Chen Xinjie blocked the door. She looked cold and kept quiet.

Luo Yuan then said, "Once a lover, always a lover. Even if I'm not welcomed, you shouldn't have been so harsh to me."

Chen Xinjie got disgusted by him and her face flushed red. Soon, she had the cold, stony expression on her face again. She lowered her voice and said, "Today is not an ideal time for intimacy. My friend is here. Go home now!"

Luo Yuan looked shocked listening to such nonsense. He immediately tried sensing the situation from her body language and he found her statement to be false. He felt a little disappointed that she had insulted his intelligence.

She might be able to trick normal people with lies like this but not Luo Yuan. Nothing could be hidden from his abilities.

Luo Yuan did not expose her lies but he asked, "Shouldn't you invite me in for a drink? I came all this way just to meet you."

After getting along with her for so long before, he had quite a good understanding of Chen Xinjie's personality.

She was a person of principles.

As the intelligent person she was, she had a strong sense of justice and a self-sacrificing spirit. She had never rejected the duties assigned to her even if the tasks were extremely humiliating.

However, this was just part of her personality but not entirely how she behaved.

She looked like an arrogant dignified woman which meant she would never lower herself to a man.

To her, a mission was a mission. Love was something else entirely.

When love existed in a mission, she felt like she was being splashed with a bucket of ice water and it was so humiliating. Soon, she regained her consciousness and was desperate to distance herself from him.

He wondered if she had no feelings for him at all. But that was not true. Be it the little things they do together or the struggles she was experiencing now, it was proof that she could not let go of him!

If Luo Yuan respected her decision. The way things were going, they would end up becoming strangers.

This was not the ending Luo Yuan wanted. He bore no grudge against her after the destruction of the Reconstruction Area. He did not want to lose the woman he loved.

But, he did not want to be cuckolded either!

.....

Luo Yuan pushed against the door. Chen Xinjie could not resist the force at all and the door flew open. Chen Xinjie retreated a few steps and she felt embarrassed. She ground her teeth and said softly, "I said it's not the right time for us today. How could you do this to me?"

Luo Yuan closed the door. He felt amused as he looked at her feeling pissed and said, "Why are you saying that so softly? Afraid of the noise? It must be soundproofed here. It's not a big deal if I heard it though."

He looked around as it was actually his first time in her house.

The living room of her house was not big or well furnished. However, it was artistically decorated. There were many DIY decorations hanging on the corner of the wall.

There were leathers and ores attached to the fabric paintings, bonsai trees decorated with dried tree branches and jade cobbles were all around, and abstract murals were on the walls.

It was a room full of art.

"You did all these by yourself?" Luo Yuan asked.

"I do it occasionally when I'm free. Minister Luo, have you seen enough? If you have, then you may leave now!"

Luo Yuan was curious as Chen Xinjie looked nervous. However, Luo Yuan did not think any further of it as he thought that she was intentionally trying to make him feel sympathy for her.

"I did not know that you're so good at this. I don't know you as well as I thought. But it's not too late," he said.

He had suppressed himself for so long and finally unmasked himself as a gentleman. He moved closer to Chen Xinjie.

Chen Xinjie seemed a little flustered and retreated. "What are you trying to do to me? I told you that my friend is here today!"

"What do you think?" Luo Yuan asked in a low voice.

Soon, he forced Chen Xinjie against the wall and wrapped his arms around her waist.

Chen Xinjie was nervous and she begged Luo Yuan, "Luo Yuan, please don't do it to me. Please don't! Don't do it here. Tomorrow,

come again tomorrow. It's really not the right time to do it today!"

Luo Yuan wanted to kiss her as he looked at her moist lips. Out of a sudden, he heard a tiny squeak coming from the room next door. At the same time, he could feel that someone was walking toward him from the bedroom.

He was shocked. He instantly felt as if he was splashed with cold water from head to toe. His desire had immediately subsided. He looked at Chen Xinjie and asked unbelievably, "You said that your friend came, did you really mean that your friend is here?"

"I've told you from the beginning but you didn't listen to me. Don't talk so loud or you'll wake her up." Chen Xinjie answered. She was angry and pinched Luo Yuan hard. Of course, with her strength, she could not even scrape off a layer of skin.

"I'm afraid that it's too late..." Luo Yuan forced a smile. Before he even finished his sentence, the door of the bedroom was opened.

"Xinxin, haven't you slept yet?" A young woman walked out in her pajamas. Her eyes were half opened as she just woke up from her slumber. Suddenly, she saw Luo Yuan. They exchanged glances and her eyes popped open in shock. She rubbed her face. Her body trembled as she recognized Luo Yuan and she was stunned and struck mute.

"Ma...Mayor... Why are you here?" She stuttered as her mind went blank.

After a long while, she slowly recovered from her thoughts. She cried and her whole body shivered.

"I... I didn't do it on purpose... I didn't see anything!"

She slammed the door and realized that she had locked herself out. Her face turned pale and extended her hands that were still trembling. She then opened the door and headed back into the bedroom.

She walked for just a few steps and she walked back to close the door of the bedroom as if the door could directly isolate her from the world outside. She was slightly relieved. She groaned as she tried to suppress her heart that was pounding.

"I've never expected to see Mayor Luo here. Xinxin and Mayor Luo... Damn!" She sighed and lay in bed.

Chen Xinjie's body was also stiff and she walked to her bedroom. She regained her consciousness after she closed the door.

"It's your fault! I told you that my friend is here. How am I going to work tomorrow? What will people say?" She said, embarrassed. She had no idea how to face this.

Luo Yuan knew that she was Chen Xinjie's colleague. However, he did not feel bad at all. He then said, "How could you blame it on me? You knew that I'll come tonight but still, you asked your friend to come over. You should have expected this to happen."

"I didn't know that you could be so shameless and insist on coming in." Chen Xinjie said. She had never expected this to happen. She asked one of her colleagues over so that Luo Yuan would leave when he came.

After a short while, she asked, "What should I do now?"

"Should I just kill her?" Luo Yuan said coldly.

"Don't make such a joke!" Chen Xinjie stared at him. Just as how well Luo Yuan could understand her, she could understand Luo Yuan as well and knew that he was not a cold-blooded person.

"You don't have to worry. I believe that your friend will not spread rumors about you and your job will not be affected." Luo Yuan became serious as he saw Chen Xinjie get so mad.

As a government staff, she knew the do's and don'ts.

"But..." Chen Xinjie hesitated.

"There's no but. You're not married. This is just something normal." Luo Yuan said as he tried to comfort her.

If Luo Yuan was an ordinary person, she would not be so worried about it. However, Luo Yuan's identity was so well known. Saying that he was the big boss of Hope City was beyond dispute. It was

not convincing to say they were having a normal relationship.

Just like a beautiful young woman marrying a middle-aged rich man, it gave off a negative first impression that they might have married for money, not love and affection. A woman who got along with Luo Yuan would certainly give people a bad impression.

As an arrogant and confident woman, there was a huge gap between their status and identity. This was one of the reasons that caused her to hesitate.

Chen Xinjie felt helpless and said, "This is too annoying. Please leave my house now."

Luo Yuan clearly knew that nothing would happen tonight as she needed some privacy. He bid her goodnight and left Chen Xinjie's house.

Chapter 482: Interests And Hobbies

The next day before dawn, Luo Yuan was wide awake. It was not even three o'clock in the morning yet. He went to the wilderness and tried to search for the clones again.

Unfortunately, he again discovered nothing. Perhaps the clones that he found yesterday were the only survivors.

After returning to the Hope City, the first thing that Luo Yuan did was adopt the female clone who was with Lin Feiyan and Wu Qianru. Regardless of how reluctant they were to let her go, it was useless as they were threatened by Luo Yuan's power and status.

He asked for the clone's identity and he was shocked to know that she was a rare and special clone with three abilities.

Besides having the Body Fusion ability, she had the matter disassociation ability and a plasma defense system. She survived the disaster with these two abilities.

In order to examine their abilities, Luo Yuan took a half a day off his duties in the office and brought the clones to the wilderness.

The kids stood together, fidgeting nervously. The female clone whose name was Luo Yu was obviously taller than the five of them. There was not much difference between each clone and a normal kid would have only been slightly thinner in comparison to them.

This was normal since Luo Yu could get some food for herself these few months. She could survive even by only drinking water. Unlike the other five clones, they struggled to survive without a supply of water.

Thanks to the strong recovery ability that came with their fusion bodies, they were able to recover from the extreme dehydration without any side effects.

By taking a good rest and having a sufficient supply of food, five of them look much healthier in just a day. Although they were still as thin as the refugees, they looked more like living people now instead of a group of mummified bodies.

Perhaps after 10 days, they would be fully recovered.

.....

Luo Yuan wanted to test their speeds. After announcing the start of the race, he saw the clones hesitate and felt worried. He encouraged them several times and only then did they dare to begin running.

Their performance was terrible. Other than Luo Yu who was slightly better than the rest, they did not know how to run at all. Three of them fell down at the beginning of the race. They were like children that were just learning how to run for the first time.

Looking at their terrible athletic performance, Luo Yuan frowned

a little and a sudden thought popped into his mind.

Theoretically, they were indeed children that were not even a year old. However, they were not ordinary human beings. They were born with astonishing powers and balancing abilities. When they were in their cribs, they could break the bed rails. They learned to walk only a few days after they were born.

He believed that they would know how to run very soon.

Looking at the way the clones were running and how hesitant they were just now, Luo Yuan guessed that the lab was restricting their movements. He then found out that this was indeed the fact.

The lab was restricting their movements and activities to train their sense of discipline.

For instance, they had to walk properly, were strictly prohibited from fighting, crying, running, and forbidden from using their power. At the same time, many punishments were implemented to enforce the rules.

The punishments were either criticism or confinement. Despite there being no physical punishments, this was more than enough to terrify the children. In addition, these kids were raised in the lab and they actually resembled a piece of white paper, untouched by civilization as a whole. Regardless of how strong they were, being brought up in such an environment, they were trained to be obedient, with tame personalities.

It was understandable why their activities were being restricted. They had limited space as the lab was small. If they were allowed to run recklessly, even if the lab were made of gold, it would be in ruins if they were unleashed. Furthermore, most of the people in the lab were researchers and normal human beings. If they happened to run into the clones, they would be severely injured or suffer a broken bone or two.

The race seemed to be a breakthrough for the clones. Although they were frightened at first, they got used to it very quickly. Their movements were haphazard and they fell down occasionally but they were still happy though.

Their ability to learn was as impressive as their balancing skills. It was apparent that they were improving very rapidly.

The children that were learning to run a few minutes ago were now running a lot better. Their speeds increased gradually. The moment Luo Yuan shouted for them to stop, Luo Yu's speed had exceeded 80 meters per second and she was the fastest of them all.

But, he believed that this was not her maximum speed yet. Under heavy resistance, more advanced and complicated skills were needed when running. They were unable to adapt to it in a short period of time. At the same time, their bodies were lighter. When they encountered buoyant forces, it should result in an increase of speed when they ran. Although, the same force could hinder them from reaching faster speeds if not recognized and utilized properly.

The speed test was then followed by a strength test. This was much easier than running.

Without a doubt, Luo Yu was the strongest among them again. She could generate around 11 tons of force!

While the rest of them had not completely recovered yet, there were huge gaps in their performances. However, the weakest clone could lift objects that weighed up to three tons and the strongest could lift around four tons. Perhaps they were still young and had not undergone any specific training to further hone their abilities and evenly distribute them. None of them had any outstanding abilities, and none of them were weaker than the others.

However, during the ability test, the gaps were prominent.

Some of them had no idea they had the ability to evolve. The small group of them did not know that their names represented their powers, like Luo Lie (flame), Luo Guang (Laser), and Luo Yan (Laser). They did not know the other abilities that they possessed too.

Of course, some of them were getting used to their abilities. Luo Kong had accidentally realized his ability to teleport when he was just born.

For Luo Yu, during the disaster, she was able to use her skills and abilities when she felt threatened. However, she did not attempt to use her abilities after that.

Luo Yuan noticed that the clones were not interested in their evolved abilities but they looked confused and were feeling lost

with all that was happening around them.

Perhaps their strength had been with them since they were born, and they had little to no knowledge of themselves. It was as normal as drinking and breathing. In addition to that, they were living in a peaceful environment and were only guided by the lab's rules and regulations. Therefore, they did not have a strong desire to be powerful.

Being more powerful or less powerful, meant nothing to them.

Luo Yuan wanted to instill the importance of strength into the clones. However, eventually, he would not say anything.

Times were different now!

The threats resulting from the mutated beasts had gradually disappeared and the humans were migrating to space. Unless the general population was as strong as Luo Yuan, the effect of personal forces would become weaker and weaker.

It was not easy to be like Luo Yuan. It was all about hard work, talent, and lots of luck. Not a single one could be omitted as they complemented each other. Be it even his clones, they had a low probability of being just like him anyway.

His abilities were no longer measurable by attributes or his ability to evolve. Without the concentration of Will and his four-dimensional vision, he would not be able to launch his space-time

bubble. Without his prediction ability, he would have become ash during the space battles. He could not bear to lose any of his abilities since the lack of either would cause his power to be drastically reduced.

The probability for the clones to achieve his standard was extremely low, for now.

Therefore, it would be better for them to develop their own interests rather than train them to become useless soldiers.

Luo Yuan then enjoyed outdoor activities together with them until the afternoon. The kids then left reluctantly and returned to Hope City.

"I'm off to work now. I'll be coming home tonight. What presents do you want? I'll buy them on my way home later," Luo Yuan asked before he left.

"Father, can you bring us some books? There aren't any books in our rooms," Luo Yan replied. The children looked at each other. Luo Yan then repeated herself bravely, her woman's intuition telling her that her father was treating her and Luo Yu better than their brothers.

"Books?" Luo Yuan asked as he hesitated. "What kind of books do you prefer?"

"Any books will do. It would be best if they were high school

textbooks," Luo Yan said. She looked like an alien with her large pleading eyes on an incredibly skinny face.

Compared to the male clones that were crudely made, a minority of the female clones had their genes that determined physical features or traits intentionally modified. Although Luo Yan was skinny, she was actually a beautiful lady.

Luo Yuan was shocked as they were still kids and he asked, "Are you studying the high school syllabus? You are still very young."

"The professor in the labs said we are geniuses. I'm studying the courses of high school grade two at the moment," Luo Yu said.

"Hmph, I'm taking the grade three courses. Professor said I'm the smartest," Luo Kong said.

He had not done anything close to that when he was a one-year-old, Luo Yuan thought in his heart. Thanks to his amazing memory, he remembered that he was still drinking milk and could not even speak. He then looked at his 'children'.

They were unbelievable!

Chapter 483: The Second Interstellar Creature

Upon returning to the municipal government, Luo Yuan instructed Cheng Guanghui to buy them some books and made arrangements for two private teachers to teach the kids. Of course, it would be less effective if they taught themselves as compared to when two teachers were teaching them. Since they were interested and talented, the only thing he could do was to encourage them.

After sitting down for a moment, the officers of the communication room who was on duty reported that there was an urgent message from the spaceship and requested to talk with Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan's expression turned deadly serious as he heard this, rushing towards the communication room.

It was heavily guarded, security guards were stationed outside the communication room.

"Please show us your identification!" The guard immediately saluted and said loudly as he saw Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan nodded his head and took out his ID. It was a system he established. There would be no exceptions, he even had to show his ID for verification as this place was of the utmost importance.

Most of the Earth's satellites and communication servers had

been destroyed by the disaster. It was impossible to contact the spaceship via the regular communication channels. The only possible way to connect the Earth and the spaceship was to use an interstellar quantum communication device which had been disassembled from an aircraft which was placed here.

Compared to the interstellar quantum communication device that was destroyed by Luo Yuan, this was undoubtedly a lot smaller. It was the size of a notebook. It could support holographic three-dimensional images and could be used in an area of approximately three astronomical units (An astronomical unit was equivalent to the average distance between Earth and the Sun).

It was indeed a waste to use it to connect with a spaceship that was close to Earth.

The Glassians did not have portable personal communication devices. It was because their technology was too advanced and they had eliminated simple devices such as mobile phones.

Communication could be done through a sponge-like personal communication terminal that was attached to their cerebral cortex. That aside, the personal communication terminal allowed them to be directly connected to the Glassians' database that was somewhat similar to an intranet. Therefore, it allowed them to have direct control over various robots. The sponge-like terminal also mimicked bio-genetic textures and because it was connected to the cerebral cortex and nerves, they could enter virtual worlds to learn and live.

Unfortunately, the technological gap was too big. The Glassians'

advanced industrial foundation had contributed to the development of technology. With the current standard of human technology , they would not be able to break through to that within 10 to 20 years.

Fortunately, it was still a must for the Glassians to have a high-power, long-distance communication device. Otherwise, it would be troublesome for them to contact the spaceship.

Luo Yuan quickly entered the communications room and answered the call.

"What's happening?" He asked in a deep voice.

"Mayor, there's something urgent that I have to report to you..." The caller was Bi Jianping who was in charge of the spaceship. His face took on a ghastly expression as he said those words.

Luo Yuan's expression changed as he heard what he had to say.

It was not the spaceship that was getting into trouble, it was the earth. By looking at the spaceship's monitor, there seemed to be an interstellar creature that was attempting to invade the earth. It had now entered the atmospheric layer and it was estimated that it would land on earth within half an hour.

Under normal circumstances, it was not a big deal. However, it might be landing in southeast Asia. His face turned grave and soon, he became angry.

This was a dereliction of duty!

The consequences of allowing an interstellar creature to enter earth was seen clearly back when they were on the moon.

Luo Yuan could still remember that day clearly, it would be similar to the incident when the hydrogen bomb exploded. Even with his abilities, when faced with creatures like this, there would be nothing he could do about it.

If the interstellar creature landed somewhere close to Hope City, it could be a fatal disaster. The surviving humans might die.

"Why didn't you monitor the situation earlier on?" Luo Yuan asked in a low voice, getting angrier the more he thought of it. It was probably the carelessness of the people manning the spaceship that had caused this incident to happen.

The spaceship was no longer manned by professionals. It was either manned by government officers or researchers. Their main focus was to investigate Glassian technology as well as the construction of residential areas. With the high degree of intelligence of the spaceship and its automatic defense system, they neglected keeping a close eye on the surveillance of the situation close to earth.

Luo Yuan had made up his mind as it seemed that setting up a team of professionals as the crew that would man the ship was urgently needed. The situation was getting worse and he was

afraid that more problems would occur during the interstellar flight where the situation and environment were uncertain.

Bi Jianping's face turned pale as he could feel Luo Yuan's suppressed anger.

"It's my fault. I neglected this matter. As a leader, the mistake that I've made is inexcusable."

"Your responsibility now is to set up a team of professionals to monitor the earth at every single moment. If there's any problem, report to me immediately!" Luo Yuan said coldly.

"Yes, mayor!" Bi Jianping said in relief.

Luo Yuan did not bother himself with Bi Jianping as soon as he finished his sentence. He disconnected the call and walked out of the communications room.

He was the only one on the spaceship who had the authorization to engage in battle. However, it was quite difficult to verify any sort of authorization remotely as there were plenty of ways people could impersonate one's identity in an attempt to take over the spaceship. That being said, a spacecraft like this probably would not have such a loophole in its systems.

Although the artificial intelligence system on the ship seemed to be sentient and could seemingly make decisions, it had learned through trial and error and would choose situations that would

give it an advantage, avoiding those which put it at a disadvantage. Under those rules, it was almost flawless.

However, it would seem that it was now too late for him to rush over to the spaceship in an attempt to hunt the interstellar creature down. It was about to land on earth.

.....

After a short while, he left Underground City.

The sky was still gray, shrouded by the dark clouds. Looking up from the ground, there was no sign of the invasion by the interstellar creature.

Luo Yuan stomped the ground hard and his body shot up into the sky like an arrow, as the ice miners would describe him.

Before arriving at the layer of clouds, Luo Yuan could vaguely feel a weak power coming from the clouds. By sensing the direction of this power, he immediately shifted his direction and flew towards the target.

In 10 seconds, he sneaked into the dark clouds.

It was a floating dust layer formed by volcanic ash and tiny ice crystals. The thickness of the dust layer was around 5,000 meters, not unlike a thick curtain that prevented sunlight from reaching the earth.

The layers of the clouds below were relatively thinner, so they had only a small amount of electric charge. However, the static electricity grew stronger as he went further up and at an altitude of around 600 meters, he began seeing lightning shooting out of the layer of clouds.

It seemed like an electric snake was moving about in the dark cloud, causing them to glow eerily in the dark.

There were also electrical arcs that were attracted to Luo Yuan's body on some occasions. Lightning would strike his head and cause countless tendrils of electricity to shoot out of his body. However, the damage done to him was relatively minor and aside from feeling a slight burn on his skin, no harm came to him.

This was just the beginning. After reaching an altitude of 2000 meters, dense, dark clouds appeared with fearsome bolts of thunder shooting out from within. The true form of the lightning had appeared.

Against such a threat, even Luo Yuan had to watch his step. However, thanks to his Physique, such attacks would not be fatal but he was not immune to the effects of lightning on living beings - he still felt numbness to a certain degree when he was struck by lightning.

Soon, a membrane layer of light appeared on his skin as he gathered his Will. Though the light membrane was lacking in the defense department, it was sufficient enough to protect him from

the harm that the lightning would cause him.

The theory behind the light membrane was fairly simple. It turned his body which initially acted as a conductor into an insulator, preventing his body from attracting the lightning. If he was still somehow struck by lightning, the current in the lightning strike would be significantly reduced and the would have no effect on him.

Luo Yuan was struck by lightning five times as he moved through the clouds. Within 30 seconds, he successfully got out of the dark clouds.

.....

The sunlight that he had not seen for ages was warm and radiant, shining brightly on his body. It resembled a golden beam of light. Even the dark clouds appeared to be semi transparent, forming what looked like a black colored crystal.

However, the beautiful scenery did not attract Luo Yuan's attention at all.

He raised his head and looked at the sky. A tiny meteor streaked across the blue sky, falling towards his direction.

Since it was engulfed in fire and smoke, even with Luo Yuan's eyesight, there was no way of telling what it was. However, based on the aura coming off its body that he could feel deep in his heart,

he was sure that this was the interstellar creature he had been waiting for.

Ever since he was granted with the prediction ability and the upgrade in his four-dimensional vision, his ability to sense grew stronger - he predicted something was going to happen before the destruction of the Glassians happened. He could vaguely sense it before things happened.

.....

At that very moment, it was approximately 700 kilometers away from him. Based on the direction it was heading towards, it was estimated that the interstellar creature was around 1000 kilometers away from Hope City.

Luo Yuan was slightly relieved. Hope City was safe at the moment.

However, his anxiety did not go away completely. Based on the interstellar creature's abilities, it would not be absolutely safe since the distance between the Hope City and the interstellar creature was quite close.

"I think we'll have to speed up the migrations." Luo Yuan sighed.

A task notification finally came from the system that had been inactive for a long time.

"Level C task: Kill the interstellar creature - gold-eating beast. Period: None. Accept / Cancel."

Luo Yuan glanced at the system task and shifted his gaze towards the meteor.

It would not be easy to kill the interstellar creature. Just by looking at its size, he was plunged into despair. It was like a mountain that would not collapse. He had no idea how he could defeat it when he was facing a beast that looked like an asteroid.

He had made an attempt to defeat the beast, but he failed.

Though he was stronger now, he did not have any significant transformations. The only change was that his energy output had increased from 0.5 tons to 3 tons which meant that it was only a six-fold increase.

It was deadly obvious that these increments would have little to no impact on these gargantuan creatures. Even if a huge hole was formed within its body, it would feel like a mosquito bite to these creatures.

Furthermore, he would have to gain a lot of experience in order to level up. The experience gained from killing the interstellar creatures was no longer significant. If he had a choice, he would not want to encounter such a terrifying creature.

On the top of the clouds, Luo Yuan was waiting for its arrival

patiently. As time passed, the fireball grew bigger. Initially, it was the size of a ping pong ball. Soon, it grew to the size of a football and eventually, it had grown into the size of a large wicker basket.

The giant beast began to curl itself into a ball and a hot, burning flame formed from the friction with the air.

However, it did not seem to be affected by the high temperature that would turn most of the meteorites into ashes.

The air surrounding its body seemed to become distorted, causing an odd phenomenon. Countless tendrils of light along with lightning surrounded its massive body. They were similar to ribbons, coquettish yet colorful, beautiful yet dangerous.

Strong magnetic fields were scattered around the planet. Compared to the lonely outer space, the power of the interstellar creature was easily visible here, causing people to feel a deep terror when they witnessed its power.

As the gigantic beast grew closer, Luo Yuan began to move. He gathered his Will and flew towards its direction. After a few seconds, he had broken through the sound barrier, flashing through the sky, leaving only vapor cones in his trail.

Within a few minutes, he was already close to the beast. He dared not approach it and stopped just 10 kilometers away from it. Although the distance between them was not close, he was still within range of the gigantic beast's vision.

As a matter of fact, the field of vision of the beast spanned 30 kilometers across, which was massive.

The entire region fell into chaos as the light it gave off was magnificent and dazzling, there was a violent turbulence in the air as countless bolts of lightning streaked across the sky.

Ordinary people would probably be killed under such circumstances. However, these phenomena meant nothing to Luo Yuan as they were the effects of an energy leak. It would not even threaten or cause harm to him. Comparing the sheer force and power of it all, the lightning in the clouds was way more dangerous.

He could cause something similar to happen if he wanted to. However, compared to the one that was currently before him, it would cover a smaller region if he were to do it.

The only thing that troubled him was the turbulent airflow surrounding him. Fortunately, he had the belt synthesized from the Demonic Horse's mane with him that enabled him to balance himself during his flight.

...

For gargantuan creatures such as these, one could only feel a thrill, an unexplainable terror when they were so close to it.

Compared to the 600-meter long interstellar creature he first met

on the moon, it looked slightly smaller with a diameter of around 300 meters. It was partly because it was curled up into a ball and there were all sorts of disruptions that was caused by the phenomenon. Luo Yuan could hardly see how the creature looked like clearly. He could only identify that it was a four-limbed vertebrate by using his blurred vision and four-dimensional vision.

If it extended its body, it might even be 500-meters long or probably even longer, with a height of around 200 meters.

Facing a gigantic beast that was 200 meters tall was like facing a mountain, Luo Yuan felt a deep helplessness rise within him.

...

At that moment, its body got closer to the bottom of the clouds.

When it was only a few kilometers away from the bottom of the clouds, the clouds began to vibrate and soon, it felt like there was an invisible pressure pushing them down, creating a hollow entrance through the clouds.

Then, a shock wave spread out quickly as the interstellar creature burst out of the clouds and a big hole was formed in the clouds.

After 10 seconds, Luo Yuan flew towards the hole and glanced at it. He was shocked at the big hole had a diameter of around six kilometers. The interstellar creature had penetrated through clouds that were over thousands of meters thick.

The sunlight was shining through the big hole in the ground like a big pillar of light. It was a miracle!

Before Luo Yuan could return to his senses, a loud thud was heard!

Chapter 484: The Effects Of Gravity

At that moment, Luo Yuan was floating mid-air at the height of tens of thousands of meters. Despite the height, the loud thud was still clearly audible.

He was worried that a huge impact like that would affect the stability of the Earth's crust, causing an earthquake. He quickly plunged down through the air to check out what was happening.

As soon as he passed through the cloud layers, Luo Yuan saw a mushroom-shaped cloud rising into the sky.

Unlike a nuclear bomb that gave off heat and light, it was a snowy-white cloud that was completely made of water vapor.

The cracks on the layer of ice on the ground spread out like a spider web. It had been broken into pieces, causing countless cracks that made it look like a long, twisted dragon. Even the icebergs collapsed, crushed into smaller chunks of ice.

As soon as Luo Yuan landed, he felt the rain falling onto his skins - it was warm.

The region of impact was 15 kilometers wide while the radiation had spread out and affected the surrounding area of more than 50 kilometers away.

However, the gigantic beast seemed to have disappeared. Its body

was completely covered by the high-temperature vapor but Luo Yuan could feel its presence when it moved as it would cause the ground to tremble with every step it took.

To avoid danger, Luo Yuan did not walk hastily towards its direction.

Fortunately, the vapor did not last long and in addition to the turbulent air caused by the impact, the vapor was cleared and turned into ice crystals, falling down gradually.

After a few minutes, he could vaguely see the figure of the gigantic beast.

It seemed to have gotten out from the hole that looked like a crater, struggling to move on the layer of ice.

Its movement was slow and cumbersome. However, its body gave off a terrifying aura on the layer of ice with each step it took, Luo Yuan could feel it. Against creatures that weighed at least ten million tons in weight, the solid layer of ice was as soft as a muddy ground.

Luo Yuan noticed that its limbs sunk into the ice. It caused the ice to crack into big pieces with each step it took. Compared to the gigantic beast, the ice miners were nothing.

The strength of the planet's gravity was apparent. The movement of this ten million ton beast was greatly affected by

gravity. Most of its strength was used to overcome the pull of gravity, causing its movement to be rather clumsy.

Luo Yuan smiled coldly.

He realized that he was affected by his initial thoughts. The interstellar creature was indeed strong and its movement caused damage that was on par with the force of a nuclear bomb. However, this did not mean that it had no weakness.

In fact, it was a fatal weakness.

Its mass was as heavy as a mountain. The gravitational pull in outer space was relatively weak. Therefore with its hulking mass, it could still overcome the pull on its weight. However, when it entered a planet with strong gravitational pull, it would find great difficulty in every step it took forward.

The gravitational pull on Earth had affected its innate ability to fly as it could not fly even when it was stuck in the ice. It seemed totally helpless.

However, with its abilities, it was still a threat to creatures under level nine. It seemed like there was a big gap between Level eight and Level nine creatures. When quantity surpassed quality, it would have no natural enemy on Earth. Perhaps this was the reason that it attempted to invade Earth.

He remained calm and did not launch an attack.

However, he had no confidence in his ability to defeat it. The difference between their body sizes would reduce the effectiveness of his attack. Once his opponent realized it, the rate of success would decrease drastically.

The gravitational force could only restrict its mobility but its abilities were not restricted.

As an interstellar creature, it had an innate ability to manipulate energy. By looking at its glowing body in the mist and the turbulent air surrounding its body, one could tell that this was a creature not to be trifled with.

In addition to his prediction ability, he could sense that the battle was a dangerous one. Despite having a strong defense system, he did not want to have a tough fight against such a powerful gigantic beast.

...

Looking at the gigantic beast that was about to get out of the mist, Luo Yuan immediately flew towards its direction. He observed it for a moment more to gather more information.

The gigantic beast landed on a region of Chuan Shu and within a few moments, Luo Yuan landed on the top of a mountain nearby. The reason he chose this mountain was so he could observe the beast and use it as a hiding spot because it was just in front of him.

There were some huge trees atop the mountain, each with tangled roots and obviously they had been ancient trees before the apocalypse hit. Nevertheless, these trees went dormant in response to the extreme cold brought by the nuclear winter.

Luo Yuan jumped to one of the tree branches, squatted down and looked towards the direction of the gigantic beast and at that moment, it lumbered out of the mist.

Although it was clumsy, its walking speed was not slow. Every step it took took it a distance of 200 meters. Regardless of how clumsy it was, it was not slow at all. In fact, if it continued walking faster and faster, it might reach supersonic speeds.

The layer of ice exploded, causing a stir in the atmosphere when it passed by. There was an ice storm from the chunks of crushed ice that gushed out from underneath its legs, exuding a terrifying aura.

Despite being on earth, it still possessed such immense power. Chuan Shu was located near the Reconstruction Area. It would be dangerous to allow the gigantic to move freely there. That was the main reason why Luo Yuan attempted to kill this beast.

Of course, it was also because the battle would be less risky with his prediction ability. His ability to teleport would also allow him to escape immediately when the opponent launched an attack.

...

The gigantic beast had the size of a diplodocus [1]. It had a long neck, strong limbs and a tail that weighed at least a few million tons in weight. Gravity had caused its tail to drag when it moved, leaving a long gully on the ice.

Of course, aside from its almost similar appearance, it was not comparable to a diplodocus. Compared to its tame personality, the gigantic beast was ferocious. Its body was a silverish-white in color and the prismatic-shaped scales on its body was glowing. The glowing lights were still visible even under such circumstances.

Its legs were sturdy and powerful and were covered in fully grown dark purple thorns. These thorns continuously glimmered, creating a mysterious yet terrifying atmosphere.

Luo Yuan noticed its neck for the first time. Compared to its body, without a doubt, its neck was slim. It was a fatal weakness for creatures like these to have such a slim and thin neck.

However, he took a glance at it and shifted his gaze. Its neck was truly slim compared to gigantic beasts of a similar level. On the other hand, if it was compared to Luo Yuan, the size of its neck would still be horrifying.

Moreover, its neck was fully grown with scales that released beams of light at the tips. It obviously had a strengthened defense. where it was releasing beams of lights there. Obviously, its defense system had been strengthened.

Despite the Zhanmadao ability to slash through most things, it was not almighty.

Luo Yuan had found out that its energy could defend against the slashes by the Zhanmadao to some extent. Accounting for the relationship between matter and energy, perhaps he had to look for high-density matter. High-density matter could not be found on earth as they were beyond the density of regular substances. In fact, it is so far from the density of conventional substances that it was denser than atoms that were compressed until it was as dense as a white dwarf or neutron star. Materials like these have already blurred the boundaries between energy and matter and should the process be reversed, it would release a great amount of energy.

As the gigantic beast got closer to the top of the mountain, Luo Yuan could feel that a horrifying aura approaching him and there the atmosphere changed to an oppressive one.

Sensing tremors in the ground, he controlled his aura, bringing it to a minimum and remained calm.

The mountain where Luo Yuan was hiding at was not too high - about 300 meters in diameter. Its height was almost the same as the gigantic beast. Encountering such a small obstacle, it was apparent that it had no intention to change its direction.

When it was walking towards Luo Yuan, it looked like a moving mountain.

By looking at its body language, it seemed that it was going to

crash into the mountain directly. To interstellar creatures, matter on earth was probably too fragile and it could do no harm to them. It was lazy to lift its legs to skip this 'small slope'.

Soon, both of them got closer to one another. The next moment, the mountain had split into half and it sounded like an explosion. A flame was vaguely visible at the area of impact. Millions of tons of sand and thousands of tons of giant rocks flew through the sky as if they were light as a feather.

Luo Yuan's body seemed to be affected by it, being blown away like the crushed rocks. However, the speed at which he was being blown away was obviously slower than the crushed rocks.

He activated his prediction ability and countless scenes flashed through his mind, showing all possible outcomes of the attacks.

His 17-point Intelligence allowed him to visualize the outcomes of the fight at a rate of 10 times per second.

After foreseeing the possible failures, his eyes eventually lit up.

He slightly moved his body to the left by one meter. He was then struck by a giant rock. His body resembled a golf ball and he quickly shifted his direction towards the head of the gigantic beast.

It seemed like the interstellar creature had sensed something. It tilted its head slightly and looked around in a moment of doubt. However, it did not notice Luo Yuan who was getting closer to it.

It was not strange though since both of them had a huge difference in size. It was similar to how humans could hardly notice a mosquito that was flying about silently. To the gigantic beast, Luo Yuan existence was negligible.

There were times when he was noticed but those were in the outcomes where he failed.

After a few seconds, Luo Yuan landed an attack on the gigantic beast's nostrils.

With just one touch, Luo Yuan could feel that there was a destructive power that attempted to penetrate his bare hands, causing him to feel a strong sense of pain in his skin. Fortunately, both of them were separated as soon as they came into contact with one another. He avoided the attack and went into its nostrils.

Its nostrils resembled a double-laned tunnel and it was spacious. Even its nose hairs were five centimeters thick and they were as messy as weeds.

It was so dirty inside its nose and he could no longer see its original skin tone. It was so dark inside, seeing layers of dirt accumulated on its surface. However, these were not the usual excretions one would see as most of the dirt were dust and crushed rocks. It was not as disgusting as he had imagined it to be.

He could still feel the pain in his palm. Luo Yuan looked at it, and the surface of his skin was swollen. He was thrilled. Fortunately,

the contact period was not too long. If it was, he might have lost his hand. The gigantic beast was indeed more fearsome than he had expected.

Luo Yuan dared not stay there any longer and quickly exited its nostril. Probably due to the fact that the interstellar creature had been living in outer space for a long time, it did not have the habit of breathing. Luo Yuan felt fortunate as his movement within its nostrils were not affected at all. Otherwise, its breathing would have caused a storm and be of trouble to Luo Yuan.

After walking for a distance of around 30 meters, Luo Yuan stopped and floated into the sky.

He looked above his head and took a deep breath. He breathed in for exactly three minutes, even his stomach began to bloat.

The next moment, highly pressurized air flowed out from Luo Yuan's mouth.

A large amount of dust from the roof of its nasal cavity was blasted with gusts of wind that was level eight or nine. After the dust was blown away, the structure of the nasal cavity was exposed.

He observed carefully and soon, he could see a triangle-shaped skeleton.

"I guess this is the place. He never knew that creatures like these

would have such a weak skeleton." Luo Yuan was relieved and thought in his heart.

He entered the gigantic beast's nasal cavity as the nasal cavity was connected to the brain. Compared to other parts of the body, the brain was the most important organ. Once the brain was destroyed, it would cause death.

There was only a cartilage separating the nasal cavity and the brain and cartilage was located the peak. It was the weakest point and was also one that he could easily attack.

Fortunately, despite being an interstellar creature, there was no significant difference in their structure.

Luo Yuan wiped away the dust that accumulated on the surface of the triangle-shaped skeleton. His movement was gentle so that the gigantic beast would not be alarmed.

The skeleton was smooth. As he wiped gently, he could see its original color.

Luo Yuan noticed that the skeleton was not fragile. It had a crystal-like surface, smooth and shiny as if it was made completely of crystal. It would seem that the skeleton was actually quite tough. Its thickness was also beyond expectation as it was around 10 meters thick.

It was not easy to completely crack the bones and sneak into its

brain before the gigantic beast had a chance to react.

"It seems that I must use my full strength in my attack." Luo Yuan thought in his heart.

Before the attack, he opened the attributes panel. Fortunately, he did not cancel the mission he got previously and it was still there. He immediately chose to accept it.

Then, he closed his eyes in an attempt to focus his mind. His muscles started bulging and goosebumps were visible to the naked eyes. The fluctuations in his energy could not be suppressed and were triggered by his powerful strength.

...

Breaking through the mountain, the interstellar creature that was still moving forward was slightly agitated. It felt insecure and stopped moving.

It looked anxious and doubtful. Its power became inconsistent, causing a flicker in its movement.

The electromagnetic fields in the air was distorted. They were moving against the gravitational force as countless auroras that were dancing in the air, even the crushed ice was floating in the air.

The next moment, its brain vibrated momentarily. Two roaring

flames, along with a large amount of blood and crushed bones oozed out of its nostril. All of the odd phenomena stopped instantly as the flames got hotter.

"Roarrrr!" The gigantic beast howled in pain and it was akin to the sound of a siren.

It was against the mother nature, having a giant creature like this roaring into the atmosphere. One would now know how threatening it was.

The sound waves formed a milky-white substance in the air. It seemed like the ice layer was being scraped off and even the mountain that was 100 meters away from it was affected. The ice on the surface was seemingly blown off and soon, the same thing happened to the frozen ground as well as the rocks beneath the layer of ice. After two seconds, the entire mountain disappeared as though it had never existed.

Similarly, Luo Yuan who was so close to the gigantic beast's vocal cord could not avoid it.

Facing such a horrifying sound wave, even Luo Yuan had a terrible headache and his brain went blank. Thanks to his strong Physique which was even stronger than steel, he regained his consciousness in just a blink of an eye.

Looking at the cartilage that had split into half, without a moment of delay, he struck a blow with all the remaining strength he had in his body.

The blow turned red instantly and became white as it hit the target. The temperature had reached around 3000 degree Celsius. The next moment, a strong explosion took place at the point of impact, filling the entire nasal cavity with burning flames.

Feeling the resistance of the blow disappear when the cartilage was crushed, Luo Yuan was happy. Before the gigantic beast even managed to react, Luo Yuan, who thrown back by the recoil dug his heels into its skin. At that moment, his body was like a flash of lightning, penetrating into the gigantic beast's brain.

Translator Notes:

[1] The diplodocus was a 30 meter long, 10-20 tonne sauropod dinosaur from the late Jurassic time period (165 - 145 MYA) that lived on the territory of the modern Western United States.

Chapter 485: Undead

As compared to the brain of an ordinary creature, the brain of this gigantic beast was beyond comprehension. Its brain was tough, it was more than 10 times tougher than rubber and its hardness was almost similar to a rock. It finally made sense that a brain weighing up to a million tons remained unaffected by the gravity of earth.

However, the brain was still the weakest part of a creature. Luo Yuan broke into its body and gave it an intense punch. The damage of the punch was indescribable, a huge white flame was created at the point of impact. Aside from shaking its entire brain, the punch destroyed the gigantic beast's brain structure completely.

Luo Yuan did not want to risk anything so he gave it another punch. Within seconds, the gigantic beast's brain broke down into piles of brain matter. Its massive body shook and the surrounding air became turbulent. It seemed like it was its last struggle as a hot glow began spreading out of its body like a mini sun. The intense energy radiation melted the snow around it. Under an invisible force, its massive body floated into the air.

Now that its brain was destroyed, the only thing that was supporting its movement was its instincts. Its eyes were wide open staring into space, its mouth and nose were bleeding. There was blood coming out of its eyes too, it was devastating. A light blue high-temperature steam came out of its wide opened mouth, it did not make a sound.

After floating in the air for a couple of seconds, its body flew

more than 10 meters high and fell hard on the ground. A loud thud was heard and the ground shook. It did not stop struggling but attempted to stand but since its brain was destroyed, it had lost the ability to balance its body. Its attempts to stand were redundant.

Luo Yuan flew out of the gigantic beast's brain and looked at it without expression. Since the apocalypse, there were probably less than 10 creatures like these who were born on earth. From an ordinary life-form before its evolution to an interstellar creature that could travel in space, each and every one of them was a champion of the universe. They did not only possess a powerful body, but also superior intelligence that was different from an ordinary mutated beast. The miracle of their evolution was a fate. However, the more powerful a mutated beast was, the more difficult survival was for humans.

Luo Yuan had zero sympathies! Since the disaster, there was no source of meat in Hope City. Their daily three meals, including Luo Yuan's, were vegetarian. The quality of life had dropped tremendously and if it was not for the fact that this mutated beast was inedible, Luo Yuan would have sliced its dead body and sent it to Hope City by spaceship after the beast was completely dead. The massive piles of meat would feed the five million population of Hope City, giving everyone two tons each - enough food for a year.

However, even without its meat, the interstellar creature had something more valuable. Precious materials aside, the energy crystals it had within its body was well worth it. As a matter of fact, Luo Yuan was curious about the source of energy that powered these interstellar creatures. What kind of energy must be present in order for it to be able to move such a massive body to carry out so many activities in life? Since his last encounter with

Gerard on the moon where he obtained its skin, Luo Yuan knew well that every creature was like him, having possession of nuclear fusion energy. They must have possessed a terrifying amount of energy to survive in space.

For instance, their skin cells were tough, dense and vast - each cell was five times bigger than human cells. Their mitochondria were different and contained unique structures whose purpose was to release energy. However, Luo Yuan realized that from the energy released from these cells alone did not contain enough power to create such a driving force. Perhaps the toughness of these cells were the sufficient to support its terrifying weight but they were definitely not enough to power its terrifying destructive force.

That said, such creatures must have an energy center that was different from the mitochondria. The energy center would be different from the ordinary energy crystals that were used solely for energy reserves. It was a true energy core. Luo Yuan could not imagine how powerful the energy core could be but the thought of it being able to power a gigantic object that weighed ten million tons into space, the energy it released might be the equivalent of three hydropower stations.

It was a stunning creature and Luo Yuan could not wait to find out more about this mysterious creature. However, no matter how much the gigantic beast struggled, it did not seem to show any signs of exhaustion. All Luo Yuan could do was to stay calm and wait patiently. However, after waiting for an hour, the gigantic beast was not dead yet. Death aside, it did not seem to be tired from its struggle. The will to live that was contained in its body seemed to keep it up forever. If Luo Yuan did not destroy its brain

but instead, other important parts such as heart, it might not be enough to bring it down.

Luo Yuan waited for another three hours. The sky was getting dark but the gigantic beast was the same as before. The way it struggled did not resemble something that was braindead. The energy that was released from its body from its struggle had melted the snow around it. The melted snow turned into a lake and Luo Yuan was deciding if he should risk his life as it was just a matter of time before the gigantic beast was completely dead since it was impossible for it to live with a dead brain.

Luo Yuan decided to wait.

...

Luo Yuan returned to Hope City to handle the documents that he missed the entire afternoon. He then went home at seven in the evening. There were two strange women when he walked into the living room. "Who are these two?" Luo Yuan questioned. "Aren't they the family teachers that you hired?" Huang Jiahui said in an angry tone. "Oh, the family teachers." Luo Yuan realized that the family teachers that he instructed Cheng Guanghui to hire were these two beautiful ladies. It seemed like Cheng Guanghui had crossed the line.

Since they were hired, it would be bad to ask them to leave. He was a gentleman, he then sat next to them and asked, "You guys must have waited for long, what are your names?"

"No, we haven't. My name is Zhou Xiaoyan!"

"My name is Sun Lifei!"

Facing Luo Yuan, they appeared to be nervous. They answered anxiously.

"The both of you will work in the day and leave at night. Your salary will be 100 yuan per month." Luo Yuan thought and said.

100 yuan per month was good enough as 100 yuan now was different from what it used to be. Yuan was actually referring to food, it was just that people had a habit of using yuan in their conversation. 100 yuan was equivalent to 100 catties of food. The pay he offered was higher than what a normal civil servant got and was sufficient for a family of three. The two ladies were satisfied with Luo Yuan's offer. "The both of you can leave now, you will start officially tomorrow." Luo Yuan did not ask about their ability and education background. Although he was mad at Cheng Guanghui for what he did, he trusted him not to pull a prank on him when it came to this.

Chapter 486: Migrating Into Space

On the next morning, Luo Yuan went to check on the body of the gigantic beast. It was still struggling. As the beast was releasing energy when it struggled, the snow around it had melted and there was a massive lake beside it. The lake water was boiling and the steam rose up into the air. The environment as well as the weather a few kilometers surrounding the lake had changed drastically from the effects of the steam from the lake. Luo Yuan noticed that the plants that were frozen not far away had returned to their usual self. The branches were even budding.

Luo Yuan looked for a while and left with disappointment. Fortunately, he had sufficient time to wait for this gigantic beast to die completely. Almost a month went by and the gigantic beast was still not dead but there was good news about the spaceship in space. The first building had been completed and the migration could now start.

The emergency spacecraft that was docked by the mothership started to get busy. Materials were moved into the spaceship. The migration did not only involve the people but the preparations they had to make to survive for long periods of time on the spaceship. It was crucial to make sure that the people's daily necessities were taken care of. The agricultural area was one of the most important parts of the spaceship, even a portion of factories were included in the list. Not because they were not satisfied with Glassian technology but most of them were not usable by humans. Some of the production machines required humans to operate them so people who migrated had something to keep busy with when they were on board.

That made the entire migration process huge and slow. The number of workers increased day by day to speed up the building of the spaceship's residential area. After a couple days rest since the first group migrated, the group began work immediately. Within the few months, the entire Hope City was busy with the migration. The crowded Hope City was now empty as the industrial area had been completely moved and the warehouses were empty too. Once the last batch of people migrated onto the spaceship, Hope City would be sealed.

Tens of thousands of people in the queue kept turning around to look at Hope City. Their footsteps were heavy and they had mixed feelings. Nobody knew if any of them would be able to come back to earth one day to restart Hope City. Since the beginning of the apocalypse where people struggled to live until the present day when they were forced to leave the earth to the vast, unknown space, the insecurities that these people, who had never left the earth felt, was intense. Human knew far too little about space - it was filled with many unknown factors and was a mystery. Human asides, compared to the mysteries of the endless universe, the earth was like a speck of dust.

...

The residential area in the spaceship was different from what it was. The 12 massive buildings looked like the support pillars of the place and every inch of the residential area was used up in an efficient manner. These buildings did not have any decorations, they were a metallic silverish-white with checkered patterns that were made of prefabricated parts and gave off a cold, sci-fi vibe. Every inch of the space was used and the eyes could see were complicated streets and buildings. To cater to more people as well

as prepare for the future, the interior of the buildings were quite space efficient as well.

At this moment, there were 700,000 people living in each building. There were 300 elevators for the convenience of the people who were going in and out of the buildings. The parks, streets, business districts and other public amenities, each floor of the residential area was packed together. Most people only owned a space that was nine square meters on average. Those with families were better off as they at least had a bathroom in their living space but for those who were single, they would have to settle for public bathrooms.

As compared to earth, the rooms in the spaceship had beds and furniture made of metal which looked the same and they were bolted on the floor. It was hard to not feel suppressed when one was in it. Besides that, there was at least one safety device fixed in every room. It was to prevent people from falling down when the spaceship was accelerating or slowing down.

The migration of the entire population crowded the residential area. The streets were filled with people and it made it hard to hard to walk on the streets. Luo Yuan got the officers to arrange the final batch of people for migration and walked to the central control cabin with his secretary Cheng Guanghui.

"Mayor!"

"Mayor!"

"Please proceed with your work!" Luo Yuan said and nodded. The central control cabin was not empty as it once was. The cabin crews that were re-assigned were on their seats. With the help of the computers, they were familiarizing themselves the flying of Glassian spaceship. As compared to regular soldiers, everyone here was well educated. Most of them were researchers or engineers without military experience and Luo Yuan did not mind that. To operate a technologically superior spaceship, their cognitive abilities were more important than good soldiers. The latter could be trained but the former was not easy to be cultivated.

"How's the training going?" Luo Yuan asked Bi Jianping who was next to him, "When can we commence the interstellar flight?"

"We still need some time. It's fine to do short distance flights but not for long distance ones."

Ever since he was criticized by Luo Yuan, he put most of his focus here, "We are still beginners when it comes to operating the spaceship. If there're any issues with the spaceship, it'll hard for us to operate it."

Luo Yuan nodded. Since he destroyed the quantum communication device in the ship, the spaceship's computer lost contact with the factory area. It was not only the automated factory that had to stop operation but even the engineering and repair robots were disconnected. If the ship's parts or hull was damaged, there was no way humans would be able to repair them as they lacked the expertise. There was nothing they could do - it

would be dangerous.

"Familiarize yourselves with the spaceship as soon as you can. We need to hire more technicians, some of the graduate students can join as well so we can master everything there is to know about this spaceship" Luo Yuan said after some thoughts.

It was time, humans could not stay here any longer, they should leave here as soon as they could.

"Yes, mayor!" Bi Jianping said immediately.

"How are the civilians' emotions lately?" Luo Yuan asked after taking a look in the cockpit.

"They seem stable but there are still some concerns. I have sent out more police to prevent any untoward situations!"

"Great job, we cannot slack off on safety!"

It was understandable that people felt frustrated since they were stepping into outer space from earth. In the past, they had different forms of entertainment to distract themselves or psychologists to calm their frustration. However, now that manpower was in high demand, they lacked resources for something so luxurious. Their priority was to master everything there was to know about this spaceship and focus on decoding the Glassian technology. Everything else had to wait.

Luo Yuan left the control cabin after a while and went into the genetics lab. There were thousands of Wisdom Tree clone bulbs in them, making it seem like a mini botanical garden. However, all of the saplings seemed to be lifeless as the leaves were droopy. There was no sign of life. "Mayor, these Wisdom Tree saplings are growing at an unusually slow rate. They basically stopped growing when they were half a meter tall. We have tried everything including adjusting the amount of light and ratio of nutrients in the ground but they were ineffective..." Noticing Luo Yuan's gloomy expression as he observed the pods, the institute director explained carefully.

Luo Yuan was not surprised at all. If the Wisdom Tree could grow like usual trees, there would not be so many bones around it when he saw it in the past. "At the same time, we have also done some research on the contents of Wisdom Tree as well as some experiments. It doesn't seem to have any unique effects but we have discovered a unique molecule in the sample that you gave us. We have extracted it and conducted an experiment."

"What's the result?" Luo Yuan asked curiously.

"It's stunning!" The institute director exclaimed, "After a mutated rat was injected with the molecule, its intelligence grew at a stunning pace. The rat knew that it was in a harsh environment and was scared. It even started to please the researcher."

Luo Yuan did not care much about the poor mutated rat, he asked what he wanted to know, "Can this molecule be synthesized into the Wisdom Tree?" The institute director shook his head with regret, "This molecule is extremely unstable, and the existence of

such an element would be impossible under regular conditions. It exists under force within extremely energy-rich environments. Even then, it requires the decomposition and synthesis of certain elements. For the active energy, we used to extract it from the bodily fluid of advanced mutated creatures and it is impossible to synthesize. Now that we've lost the source of mutated beasts, our experiment is stagnant.

"So you need active energy, I'll figure that out and get someone to send it here." Luo Yuan thought and said to the director. Dissolving the energy core in water will create a concentrate of active energy and he had plenty of those. Although precious, if it could be used to produce medicine from the wisdom tree, it would be worth it.

"Our priority now would be to accelerate production of the wisdom elixir as soon as possible. I'm planning to combine your lab with the genetics lab temporarily. We have figured out how some of the Glassian lab equipment work and we believe that it could accelerate the progress of your research."

"We'll give our full cooperation!" The institute director then asked, "Who would be responsible for this project?" Luo Yuan looked at him, it seemed like the researchers were not excluded in the power struggle. Luo Yuan then replied, "Since you were the one who has the result, you'll be taking care of this project. I hope that you'll all work with each other. I hope to hear good news soon!"

...

Luo Yuan then inspected the factory area. He left the lab with an indifferent mood. Compared to the previous inspection, there were 13 additional Glassian factories that were up and running. Apart from the nine original factories that produced parts for the ship, there were nanochip factories, nanomaterial factories, polymer synthesis factories, centrifugal extraction factories and more. Those were the core factories in the ship. From these factories, humans could improve and upgrade their skills. Take the nanochips for example, these Glassian nanochips were different from the LightScribe technology used by humans. Rather, it was created through a controlled atomic process which arranged these chips at an atomic level. The Glassian chips which had the same capacity as human chips were a fraction of the size.

Through these core factories, the humans had resumed production of electrical products. Although the latest computers were not quantum computer technology, it functioned a hundred times better than before. At the same time, it was only the size of a thumb. Within half a year, humans had achieved what they would have taken them 20 to 50 years prior to the apocalypse. However, they had only figured out 10% of the factories that the Glassian's had. Far from it, they still had plenty to master in the operations of the spaceship. Aside from being short of time, they lacked the talents to do it. That was one of the reason why Luo Yuan was so eager to produce the wisdom elixir.

Chapter 487: Re-Entering The Gigantic Beast

After the inspection, Luo Yuan went back to his residence in Building A that was located on the top floor of the central building. Of course, his room was unlike the regular rooms that every other person had - nine square meters. It was a private residence that spanned more than 10,000 square meters, covering the entire floor. The ceiling was more than 10 meters taller than the regular ones and compared to the regular floors, there were metal pillars around which was purely for aesthetics.

The pillars had complex patterns and every one of them were carved in intricate detail - they looked beautiful. To make the place look less empty, there were a miniature botanical garden, training court, a man-made lake, a library and even a theatre. His actual residence was located at the three-story villa next to the lake.

Before the apocalypse, all those meant nothing but now that most people had limited space to live in, this was the pinnacle of luxury. Truth be told, this was not what Luo Yuan wanted. Based on his character, it was impossible that he requested for things like these. It was all the doing of his staff, planning these things for him. Luo Yuan was shocked when he moved in a day earlier. According to the status quo, Luo Yuan was like an emperor to the people. Even if he was unwilling, there would be plenty of people who would want to please him so they did not leave a bad impression.

Luo Yuan did not have any comments and neither praised nor criticized the people who came up with this. He was no saint and it

was absolutely fine for him to indulge in certain vices. To top it off, the entire spaceship belonged to him. To have a 'small' space for himself was nothing over the top.

Since there were many women at home, it made it inconvenient for Luo Yuan so he asked his secretary, Cheng Guanghui to sit on the bench next to the lake as he walked into the villa hastily.

"Brother Luo, you're back?" Chen Jiayi who was cleaning the floor greeted Luo Yuan shyly when she saw him walking in.

"You're the only one here? Where are the rest?" Luo Yuan stopped and asked.

"They're taking a walk around." Chen Jiayi said shyly, holding the cloth tightly in her hand. Although Luo Yuan followed the last batch of people who moved onto the spaceship, the girls had moved in after that so they still knew little about the spaceship. However, Chen Jiayi was absolutely uninterested. Her body had returned to normal but since she was affected by the parasitic moss for a long period of time, she had become an introvert. She hardly spoke with others and was always home.

"Did the mutated woman follow them as well?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Yes, she wore a face mask. She insisted on following them." Chen Jiayi said.

Luo Yuan frowned but soon became relaxed once more. The

mutated woman looked more and more human these days, making it was hard to tell the difference if one did not look closely. She would not cause a ruckus if she was careful.

Luo Yuan stopped talking and walked into his room, he took out the steel ball that stored the energy crystal and opened it. Since the ladies had been consuming the level eight energy crystal, only one and a half piece was left. He then made a small bottle using half of the steel ball and carved threads in a screw using his fingernails. The control he had over his power was so accurate that something like this was nothing to him. Soon he made a metal bottle. He hesitated and took out the complete piece of crystal, placed in the bottle and closed it. He then kept the other half of the energy crystal using the cap of the steel ball.

After a few moments, Luo Yuan walked out of the villa and explained to Cheng Guanghui on the ways the energy crystal could be used as well as its functions. He passed him the bottle and ordered, "Pass this to Director Zhao."

"Yes, mayor!" Cheng Guanghui dared not hesitate and said immediately. Just as he was leaving, Luo Yuan called for him again, "Tell him to be careful in his experiments, I only have one of these remaining. Get him to record every single detail of the amounts he'll use during the experiments." Curiously had always been the bane of most researchers. Although Luo Yuan still had half of the crystal, he was concerned that if he did not warn Director Zhao, the energy crystal would be wasted pointlessly on experiments."

"Yes, mayor, I will definitely tell him that."

Cheng Guanghui left the top floor of the central building immediately and took the elevator that was one floor below. There was an elevator on the top floor but it was exclusively for the mayor's use. Cheng Guanghui was cautious and careful, he would not make that mistake.

After he entered the elevator, he looked closely at the metal bottle and his heart skipped a beat.

If not for what the mayor said, nobody would have guessed that there was a level eight energy crystal in this insignificant metal bottle. He recalled the time when two gigantic beasts invaded Hope City. Their strength was beyond human comprehension. The weapons used by humans were absolutely powerless in the face of such gigantic beasts. What was more magical was that the energy crystal within their bodies could upgrade and improve many qualities in the human body. It could turn an ordinary human into an evolved human, making one more powerful and perhaps even lengthen their lives. Compared to the other qualities, the latter was more crucial and the key to a long life was within his grasp.

Greed began taking hold of him. He did not want much of it as it would be too obvious and his actions would be easily exposed. He only wanted half. No... One-third would be enough. His breath grew heavy and his expression unreadable. He struggled internally and as that happened, he held the metal bottle tighter and tighter until eventually, he felt a heat emanating from the bottle. Curious, he looked at the bottle and was shocked to find out that there were clear fingerprints on the bottle that looked like stamps.

He was shocked and his hands began shaking. Since he spent most of his time with Luo Yuan, he had slowly forgotten how terrifying the mayor was. How could he hide from Luo Yuan both physically and mentally if he stole part of the energy crystal for himself? After all, Luo Yuan was the man who destroyed the aliens and captured their spaceship. He was like a god to many! He snapped out of the greed in his thoughts and realized that his undergarments were soaking wet. "I almost gave in to temptation!" Cheng Guanghui smiled awkwardly. He had finally returned to his senses, "The mayor may be a little careless. With his abilities, this energy crystal may not seem valuable to him but to ordinary people, it is priceless and the temptation, overwhelming. It's hard to tell if the researchers would steal it. It should be protected by a team of professionals"

...

The next morning, Luo Yuan returned to earth from the spaceship to take a look at the interstellar creature that was still alive the last time he was there. It has been two months since he last visited and no matter how strong its will to live was, it should be completely dead by now. However, Luo Yuan was not prepared and was shocked by what he saw when he arrived. The place was now an oasis with countless plants, growing lush and full of life. The lake in the middle had grown several times over and now, it looked more like an ocean surrounded by mist - it looked like a fairytale.

The gigantic beast was still struggling in the middle of the lake and it looked like an island. As time passed, its movements grew less obvious and its struggle only happened occasionally. Most of the time it would just move bit by bit but Luo Yuan could see that

its vitals were the same as before. Its struggle grew weaker because the reflexes from its spinal nerves were now less intense now that the brain had been destroyed. Put another way, its spinal nerves had gotten used to functioning without a brain but as soon as the body was attacked or if it got a pain signal, it might 'resurrect' and begin struggling again.

One could say it was dead or that it was born again. At some point, it was an immensely powerful lifeform that was now only as strong as the weakest lifeform on earth. It would take ages for it to completely die. Perhaps even when the human race was prepared to leave earth, they would still not see the beast die.

Luo Yuan could not wait any longer. Ever since he found out that the energy crystals were useful in the synthesis of wisdom elixir, he grew eager to obtain the energy crystal within this giant of a beast. Compared to a level eight energy crystal, the energy crystal of this interstellar gigantic beast might surprise him even more.

He ascended into the air and flew to the 'island' in a flash. The forcefield that was on the gigantic beast's body had grown weaker and what was left was only a dim glow. However, Luo Yuan did not dare to step on its body. He knew from the beginning about the forcefield of this interstellar creature. Aside from the high temperature it gave off, it also gave off powerful radiation that even he could not defend against. As expected, after seconds of standing next to it, Luo Yuan's skin started to itch. Although the itch could not harm him, but for safety purposes, Luo Yuan covered his body in a layer of Will.

He then leaped and jumped into the boiling lake. The gigantic

beast's neck was buried under the lake. To be able to go into its body to obtain the energy crystal, the easiest way which also happened to be the way he entered was through its nose. If he entered its body by cutting it up, it would take forever no matter how strong he was.

Soon, Luo Yuan found its head after moving along its long neck. Half of its head was stuck in a rock but fortunately, its nostrils were still visible or it would be quite the inconvenience for Luo Yuan. He then went into its nostrils and after passing through the long chambers within, Luo Yuan found the portion of bone he destroyed. However, it has completely healed now and not a single trace of an injury could be seen. Even the soft, triangular bone had regrown. This interstellar creature had terrifying self-healing abilities. If he did not turn its brain into a pile of mush, it could possibly heal itself completely even if it only had half a brain.

He passed through its nasal cavity into its esophagus. As its neck was long, its trachea was scarily long as well. Luo Yuan walked about 100 meters to arrive at its lungs. He noticed that its lungs have degenerated. As compared to its massive size, its air passages seemed to be quite narrow. Luo Yuan had to bend down in order to enter. Besides, most of its alveolars were closed and had lost their function. It had almost lost its ability to breathe. Just when Luo Yuan planned to walk further, he heard the sound of footsteps approaching him. From the sound of it, there seemed to be quite a few of them.

Chapter 488: Heart

Since there was an unusual amount of interference in the interstellar creature's body, his Sense was rendered useless. He could only depend on his ears as well as his four-dimensional vision as he passed through the twisted, narrow passageways within its body. Before long, Luo Yuan could hear where the sounds came from.

He was in shock as he had never expected to see another creature in the interstellar creature's body. It was a species of mutated worms with eight legs. Its abdomen was swollen and round with golden patterns on its body. It was eye-catching.

Compared to mutated beasts that usually weighed a few tons, they were undoubtedly small as each of them was only half a meter long. However, they were incredibly fast. They moved forward at lightning speed with eight slim legs and to them, the twisting passageways seemed to be a flatland.

After a short while, a few parasitic worms appeared after passing through a curve. Luo Yuan leapt about 10 meters forward and a flash was seen as he slashed the parasitic worms in half using his saber.

"They had such strong defense. It was almost the same as the interstellar creature's ability to defend itself." Luo Yuan thought in his heart.

Initially, he had wanted to slash it like he usually did but the

moment his saber touched its skin, he changed his mind and slashed with all his might to avoid any damage on his Zhanmadao.

"I guess these creatures were the parasites living in the gigantic beast!" Luo Yuan kicked the corpse that was still struggling to survive away. Its abdomen was covered in blood. However, it dried up quickly as the body had been split in half.

It was not that peculiar at all. Perhaps the parasitic worms became mutated from living in such conditions. When the interstellar beast mutated from its original form, it turned the parasitic worms into mutants as well because they absorbed nutrients from the interstellar creature's body.

It was not just any creature who could have such a focused amount of Will like Luo Yuan where he could actually eliminate the parasitic worms. In fact, most of these mutated beasts had no idea how they could get rid of the parasites in their bodies. However, Luo Yuan discovered that the death of that one worm was not the end of it.

The hornet's nest had been startled by his previous attack. As time passed, the surrounding area grew noisier from the sound of footsteps approaching him, hustling and bustling towards his direction. It seemed like there were countless parasitic worms gushing out from its bodily cavities like a stream of water.

The appearance of the parasite worms was abrupt. Perhaps he had caught their attention the moment he stepped into the gigantic beast's lungs. He was very careful when he entered the gigantic beast's body. Until this moment, he did not a single noise.

However, the parasite worms seemed to have the ability to predict his actions and they even took the initiative to look for him. Obviously, the interstellar beast must have had a certain degree of control over these worms.

Common sense could no longer be applied to predict actions of these lifeforms. Every single cell in their body was imprinted with their Will and even when their brain had died, their cells still held shreds of its consciousness within them. Without interference from the brain, they actually grew stronger.

Perhaps one day, when all these cells unite, a new form of life would be born within the interstellar creature's body. The flesh-eating parasitic worms, on the other hand, would have been influenced by the Will imprinted on their bodies, making them a part of the interstellar beast's body.

To lifeforms like these, parasitic worms were not considered harmful creatures as they were formed from the defenses within its body. However, Luo Yuan had now become the foreign body within the interstellar creature's body.

Luo Yuan was looking for the arteries inside its lungs. Subsequently, he would move along the arteries and try to look for the position of the heart. However, upon encountering the parasitic worms, he had to change his plan.

He decided to avoid these troublesome worms!

The parasitic worms were not interesting and they looked weak. However, that being said, it was still a level nine creature with a good amount of defense and attack. Even Luo Yuan could not resist their bites. It would be fine if there was only a few of them. However, if they came in a group, things could get quite nasty for Luo Yuan.

Furthermore, the narrow passageway was not a good place for a fight. It was difficult for him to stand, let alone teleport. This was especially so since he was trapped in the interstellar creature's body where his Sense had been rendered useless, in a place where he could hardly teleport. His abilities were greatly hampered.

Luo Yuan immediately looked for another way out. With his Zhanmadao, he thrust it through the flesh to see thick the walls of the passageway was. The interstellar creature seemed slightly uncomfortable as its flesh wriggled while Luo Yuan cut through it.

He tried thrusting his saber into a few spots and soon, he found a thin, weak spot.

Sensing that the parasitic worms were growing closer to him, Luo Yuan did not waste any more time and stuck a blow with the full power of his strength on the weak spot.

A loud thud, not unlike the sound of an explosion was heard. However, the damage the attack caused was not proportional to the sound it made - it only managed to create a hole the size of a basketball. Luo Yuan was prepared for this as the lungs would not be as fragile as the brain. He then proceeded to make 10 consecutive attacks and within a few moments, a hole that was a

few meters wide was made in its flesh.

However, before Luo Yuan managed to reach the passageway opposite him, the ground began shaking. If what he initially did could only cause a slight discomfort, the interstellar beast was definitely feeling pain now as its flesh began to tremble and cramped following his attack.

Luo Yuan destroyed the passageway, avoided the parasites and at the same time, he was looking for the position of its arteries. There were countless passageways and branches within its lungs that made it resemble a maze. Luo Yuan seemed to have lost his eyes without his Sense.

There were several times when he could not avoid the parasitic worms. Thanks to his prediction ability, he was able to defeat them at a lightning fast speed. While he rampaged around its body, he heard the sound of water flowing.

"Water? Could it be?" He thought for awhile, looking happy.

Indeed, he finally found the blood vessel after passing through three passageways. It was huge, approximately two meters thick but for the interstellar beast, it was considered small. Luo Yuan looked at the color of the blood vessel and guessed that it should be an artery.

He moved forward along the capillaries and they grew in thickness. Eventually, he found the artery. Along the way, there were quite a few blood vessels that was covered in a white film

which slowed him down considerably because he had to destroy them.

After walking for about an hour, he had finally left the interstellar creature's lungs. He walked another 100 meters along the artery and the very next moment, a huge heart appeared before him. Luo Yuan was startled, stunned by the sight of the heart.

The heart was approximately 30 meters in diameter, beating slowly. Each beat caused a stir in the air around it but Luo Yuan was unaffected.

What truly terrified Luo Yuan was the fact that the heart was now mutated into another version of its original form. Countless tendons from around the body were closely connected to the heart and the terrifying part was, the heart was glowing slightly, seemingly the source of light that illuminated the chamber he was in.

Luo Yuan could clearly feel the immense power that its heart gave off which worried Luo Yuan. However, he was not going to leave. After a few moments, he returned to his senses and tried to remain calm. Using his prediction, he found out that the surroundings were not dangerous so he waited for the next beat.

Once the heart beat, Luo Yuan immediately slid towards the heart using the bodily fluids within the interstellar beast. When he reached a tendon, he grabbed it and his body fell onto the surface of the heart. Pulling out his Zhanmadao, he slashed through a layer of the heart and the immense pain caused its body to twitch. Aside

from being hardly able to stabilize himself, the slash he made on the Zhanmadao on its heart had gone according to his plan.

The next moment, a wound appeared on its heart and blood began shooting out of the wound like a high-pressured hose. Fortunately, Luo Yuan gathered his Will and managed to avoid the blood from splashing onto him.

As the blood gushed out, the small wound expanded gradually and once it got big enough for him to enter, he ducked and dived into the wound without a moment of hesitation.

Chapter 489: Energy Crystal

He felt dizzy the moment he entered its wound, losing his direction as he was swept away by the flow of the blood but was later able to regain control of his body.

Luo Yuan felt that he had fallen into a pool of sticky mud. The blood of the gigantic beast was a semisolid, constantly flowing at a very fast speed. The violently flowing blood caused whirlpools to appear everywhere. He did not stop his movements as he tried his best to regain his balance. Otherwise, he would have been swept away by such a strong current.

Luo Yuan's face was serious. He could vaguely hear the roar of the interstellar creature. It was definitely not an illusion as he could sense that it was real and his Will was depleting rapidly. Without a doubt, the reason for that was because the Will of Luo Yuan and the interstellar creature's blood were consumed when they came into contact. Against such attacks, ordinary people would have collapsed within a few moments, their bodies full of blood and pus.

Luo Yuan had no idea if his body could overcome such an attack. However, he did not want to risk anything, avoiding any contact with the interstellar creature as much as possible. He would rather deplete his Will.

Surrounded by a dim light emanating from the blood and the roars from the interstellar creature, he could not help but feel a little annoyed. He felt uncomfortable as everything within the interstellar creature's body seemed to be against him or at the very

least, tried to assimilate him into its body.

He dared not stay any longer and shifted his gaze towards the brightest point in his field of vision. He took a guess that his target should be there and swam quickly towards the direction.

His surroundings grew brighter as he began moving towards it, to a point that it reached the level of a hundred-watt energy saving lamp. Despite the brightness being not too bright, it still had an extremely strong level of penetration and gave off an immense power as it shone, frightening Luo Yuan.

He held his breath when he was one meter away from it, moving slowly and gently. Despite being able to predict his safety, he was still afraid of changes that may happen.

Luo Yuan estimated the energy that the energy crystal held within it and if an explosion were to happen, the damage would be comparable to a small-sized nuclear bomb. At such a distance, even Luo Yuan would die.

Right this moment, he could clearly see the source of light. The energy crystal was round, flawless and was the size of a ping-pong ball with mist coming off its surface, giving it a mysterious look.

It floated in mid-air and was not in contact with the heart. Regardless of how violently the blood around it was gushing about, it did not move at all. There seemed to be a mysterious power that supported it.

Luo Yuan used his prediction ability to peer into the various scenarios in his head and did not discover any form of danger. His heart was still beating fast and after a few seconds, he gritted his teeth and grabbed the crystal body.

The very next moment, he could successfully grab the body of the crystal with his hand. With just a single touch, a terrifying roar was heard. Luo Yuan was frightened as the image of the interstellar creature appeared clearly in his mind.

He bit his tongue hard and attempted to stay awake, feeling the pain through the barrier of Will he had around his body. Soon, he realized that his Will had been used up within a few seconds.

He grabbed the crystal and pulled his hand quickly. He could feel some resistance during the entire process. However, the resistance he could feel was less than five tons and it could hardly hinder Luo Yuan's powerful strength.

It was peculiar though, that the body of the energy crystal was not as hot as he thought it would be. Its temperature was somewhat lower than the blood that surrounded it and felt a little cold to the touch.

At that moment, the blood began to flow violently again. The movement of the energy crystal had obviously caused the gigantic beast to sense danger and it began to struggle.

Luo Yuan tried his best to stabilize himself, looking for the exit of the wound. Nevertheless, being in the opaque blood, even his four-

dimensional vision was rendered useless. He immediately shook off his thoughts and swam towards the wall of the heart, preparing to create a new passageway.

He pulled out his Zhanmadao and made a cut on its cardiac muscles. He could feel that the motions of the Zhanmadao seemed somewhat jerky as compared to the past.

"Damn!" His facial expression changed. He immediately checked on his Zhanmadao. Fortunately, the period of contact was short and the Zhanmadao was not corroded. However, part of the imprinted Will had disappeared.

Looking at the undamaged Zhanmadao, Luo Yuan was relieved but began thinking that bringing the Zhanmadao here in the first place was not such a good idea. His Zhanmadao had been constantly upgraded and it was no longer made of metal, but resembled a mutated beast.

It was alright to use the Zhanmadao under normal circumstances since it was made of a material that was superior to regular metal and was many times sharper than an ordinary weapon. At the same time, it was also highly resistant to high temperatures and corrosive substances. It was the perfect weapon.

However, when it was within the body of a high-level mutant such as the interstellar beast, its defenses were severely affected. Such a phenomena had happened once where the Zhanmadao penetrated the head of the mutated snake once for an extended period of time. The synthesized essence was absorbed by the mutated snake, causing the Zhanmadao to be downgraded.

To avoid the Zhanmadao from being corroded by the blood, Luo Yuan immediately immersed the Zhanmadao in his Will. A glow appeared on the Zhanmadao in an instant and its motions became less jerky. In order to restore it to its original state, it had to go through training again.

Luo Yuan did not want to waste any more time and started to cut through its heart. After 10 seconds, he finally left the damn place.

The ground was violently shaking and the entire world seemed to be turning around as he left but that was only a minor inconvenience to Luo Yuan. Following his initial path, he moved along the blood vessel, got into its lungs and left the body of the interstellar creature through its nostrils.

After 10 minutes, he finally managed to rush out from the lake and floated in the sky. He exhaled and took a look at the glowing energy crystal in his open palm. Then, he used his identification technique on it.

"Interstellar Creature's Energy Crystal"

"Rarity: Purple"

"Weight: 100 grams"

"Additional Abilities: None"

"Remarks: It is an energy core that can generate energy on its own. It can absorb higher-dimensional energy and also release active energy that can be absorbed by other lifeforms. It is the energy crystal of the interstellar creature which supports all vital activities of the interstellar creature."

As he saw the identification message, his hand shook and the energy crystal almost fell from his hand. Immediately, he took a deep breath and read the remarks once again.

It was true.

His heart was pounding and he could hardly suppress his excitement. His reaction indicated that this object an amazing find.

The system's remarks mentioned that it was an energy core that could generate energy on its own. This meant that it would be able to supply a constant supply of energy.

"It could be used for an entire lifetime if it were used to power light bulbs." Luo Yuan thought in his heart.

Of course, it would be a waste to use it for that purpose. The greatest effect of the energy crystal was not to use it as an ordinary energy source. Humans could hardly utilize the active energy given off by the energy crystal for industrial purposes. Even if they could use it, it was more feasible to replace it with a nuclear fusion furnace in the spaceship.

Without a doubt, the greatest effect it had was the production of active energy.

During the time of the Reconstruction Area, active energy was rarely used. By utilizing the blood of mutated beasts, humans managed to obtain a pure nutrient solution from the blood through purification, filtration, and other methods. It was then able to be used as a source of energy in many fields.

However, due to production constraints, this precious nutrient was mostly used by the clones. There was a ten-fold difference in the efficiency of raising a clone if you compared the use of regular solutions and a nutrient-rich solution in their cultivation. The clone's embryo would be significantly weaker if they were not cultivated using a nutrient-rich solution.

In the current era, the supply of such a nutrient solution had completely dried up. Despite the plans in the agricultural area which could also be used as a source of energy, the energy concentration generated by such activities was relatively lower, making it useless.

With the energy crystal, the pure nutrient solution can be produced at a larger scale. Moreover, the level of the active energy given off by this energy crystal was a lot higher. Luo Yuan had no idea what effects would come to humans if they were to consume it. However, it would definitely be relatively more effective than the current level-eight energy crystal they were consuming. Perhaps, the era of super-evolved humans was near.

The more he thought about it, the more excited he got. After

some time, he returned to his senses and calmed down. He then looked at the ground and saw the 'brainless' interstellar creature, roaring in the lake. Its power had created a strong wind that caused a stir in the atmosphere.

This was the final time it could go on such a rampage. Since losing its energy core, it had been significantly weakened and the energy its body gave off continued to weaken at a significant rate, that even the naked eye could see it dissipate.

The struggle it had, only hastened its death.

Within a few moments, its movements turned sluggish. The energy it gave off weakened and eventually, completely disappeared. Its body had used up whatever remaining energy it had left and fell weakly to the ground. It attempted a final stand but no matter how it tried, its body only managed to twitch slightly.

Interstellar creatures no longer needed food for sustenance, as its main source of energy. On top of that, ordinary food could not support a body that weighed millions of tons in weight. Without an energy crystal, it would signal the end of their life. The amount of energy they needed just to support life on such a scale was tremendous.

After half an hour, it stopped moving and looked like a carcass. The notification for the completion of the task did not show up in the system. Otherwise, Luo Yuan would have thought it had died. The task had no time limit, so it would only notify Luo Yuan when the creature finally died.

Luo Yuan continued looking at the carcass and lost his patience as he looked at it struggle for one last breath.

Since 50% of his Will had recovered, he then flew towards outer space in his space-time bubble. As for the interstellar creature's gigantic body, he would attend to it once it was completely dead.

Despite the level nine creature having little to no effect on him, it would contribute significantly to the research projects his researchers were undertaking. Be it the organic matter its body held within or the way its body utilized energy, it was a treasure trove to humans.

More the latter than the former, even Glassians had limited understanding on this matter. On the spaceship, to the best of his knowledge, Luo Yuan did not see any defensive systems that were designed to defend against such a source of energy. The spaceship only depended on a thick layer of armor to defend against the dangers they met.

If the humans could unravel the secrets of the interstellar creature, they may just be able to fight off the Glassians.

Chapter 490: Experiment

A few moments later, Luo Yuan returned to his spaceship.

Back at his residence, Luo Yuan took out the energy crystal from his pocket. The bright radiance emanating from it lit up the entire floor. Luo Yuan had no plans to hand it over to the genetics lab for immediate research. On one hand, the wisdom elixir was crucial for human progression, a top priority for the genetics lab. On the other hand, witnessing such magical, boundless energy, he was tempted to conduct some experiments himself.

If humans were machines and their data were measured, Luo Yuan's power could reach up to 50,000 kilowatts during intense battles. His power was comparable to a mini, thermal power station and to ordinary people, he was like the god they heard of in legends. However, compared to the real deal - an interstellar creature, he was nothing at all. The gap in their energy levels were different by at least five to six orders of magnitude. The huge difference was mainly due to the difference in size as well as the amount of energy within them.

Luo Yuan was not a true interstellar creature. If he was put on the level-scale, he would be level eight. The reason why he could live in space like the interstellar creatures was because of his fusion body. In other aspects, he was significantly behind the interstellar creatures. Examples of these was the ability to efficiently use energy and the control of various forces in the universe. Without the aid of his Will, he would not be able to do anything. He was a pirated version of an interstellar creature

The main difference between the both of them was the boundless energy. As long as he possessed such a source of energy, he would be able to rely less on other materials used to sustain such levels of energy.

"Perhaps, I could put this inside my heart?" Luo Yuan looked at the energy crystal and was tempted. However, he soon gave up on his plan.

Though his plan initially seemed feasible, the crystal was actually a little too big. His heart now only played a small part in his body, having little to no major effects on him anymore. Even blood clots would not affect him at all. There was also no need to concern himself about rejection since it would mainly be due to a different Will imprint, which would be solved as long as he refined it - it would become part of him.

He thought to himself for a moment but soon, he decided against it. It was not because of the importance of this energy crystal to humans. Though interstellar creatures were far and few in between, this was not the only one in the solar system. He had seen more of them when he was on the moon and as long as he spent a little time to look for them using the spaceship, finding them would be inevitable. Though the interstellar creatures were powerful, against a Glassian spaceship, they had nowhere to run. They could be easily killed for more energy crystals.

The only concern for him was the possibility of the powerful energy overwhelming his body, causing him to explode as soon as he transplanted the energy crystal into his body. After all, it was meant to supply energy to a giant that weighed tens of millions of

tons. If it was transplanted into his body, it would be like fixing an aircraft engine onto a bicycle. The result would be catastrophic.

The safest route was to master its structure and convert it into a miniaturized version. Fortunately, there were no current threats to humans at this moment, allowing him the luxury of having sufficient time to conduct further research on the energy crystal.

He used his Will to peer into the energy crystal and found after his inspection that the interior of the energy crystal was not solid but was hollow. Its structure had intricate patterns with billions of nano-clusters in the shape of diamonds that formed a beautiful, natural, three-dimensional pattern. Just looking at it made him dizzy. His Will was still not at a level where he could see the structure of atoms so he was unable to see what the energy crystal was made of. There was a microscope in the experiment lab but that was the only one the humans had left, making it very precious. Since they had yet to fully figure out the Glassian lab equipment, that single high-end equipment was shared among all the labs. He did not want to borrow it as that would be selfish.

Perhaps, he was not so keen on what it could do for his abilities at his current strength, he was also not disappointed. He focused his Will and did some common tests. The energy crystal was not as soft as ordinary crystals - it was tough. Luo Yuan did not further test its toughness with violence as he was worried that it would get destroyed. Then, as Luo Yuan mixed it with water and discovered that it did not melt like ordinary energy crystals, he noticed the plants in the botanical garden to be lushed than before. He thought there were problems with his eyesight so he went in for a closer look. If memory served him right, the plants they moved in here earlier were lifeless. Now, they were full of life.

Compared to how they looked before, the plants looked as fresh as the grass in summer with morning dew.

He looked at the crystal on his hand and thought to himself. There seemed to be a dense amount of active energy in the air that had seemingly accelerated the growth of the plants. There were footsteps approaching behind him and he knew that it was the mutated woman without even looking. The active energy had attracted her here. She squatted down close to Luo Yuan and looked at the crystal with a menacing look as she licked her lips with her pink tongue.

Luo Yuan looked at her and chased her away.

"It would seem like I need to keep this in a place where the mutated woman can never find or I might just have to bring it along with me at all times." Luo Yuan thought to himself while looking at the mutated woman who was peeking at him in a faraway corner. The energy crystal was not safe, it would be bad if she was to swallow it by accident. Since Luo Yuan could not do anything to the mutated woman who was watching him, he just let her be.

He then called Cheng Guanghui for a meet and asked, "How's the progress in the lab?"

"So far, there's no news yet!" Cheng Guanghui said in an even more respectful tone than before.

Luo Yuan looked at him but he did not ask any further. He

thought for a moment and said, "Get a few Wisdom Trees here from the lab for me, I need them."

"Yes, mayor. Is there anything else?"

"No, get going!" Luo Yuan waved his hand. He then stopped Cheng Guanghui, "Oh yeah, please arrange a radiation insulated warehouse. There will be a batch of goods coming within these few days."

As it was requested by Luo Yuan, the job was naturally done efficiently. Within less than half an hour, a couple of researchers from the lab sent the Wisdom Tree seedlings to the botanical garden in Luo Yuan's residence. After they left, Luo Yuan got a pail of water and placed the energy crystal in the bucket. A few minutes later, he took out the energy crystal and noticed that the transparent water was now fluorescent. Within a couple of minutes, the density of the active energy in the water was visible to the naked eye.

He poured the water onto the five Wisdom Trees to see what the active energy would do to them. If it was effective, it could be used as an alternative if the research on the wisdom elixir failed. Although there were manufacturing restraints so not everybody could enjoy them, at the very least it could guarantee an increase in the intelligence of the main researchers.

One second, two seconds, three seconds, Luo Yuan waited patiently. 10 seconds later, there was something happening to the Wisdom Trees. Countless tiny threads were growing out of the roots and soon, they covered all the parts that were soaked in

water. Luo Yuan was excited, it proved that the active energy was effective. Perhaps the reason why they absorbed the flesh of mutated beast was to obtain more active energy.

The entire process went on for half an hour before it stopped. Not only did some of the yellowish leaves turn a lush green, even the bodies grew in height. If they could be provided with more active energy, these Wisdom Trees would be ready to be harvested in just a fraction of the time.

Chapter 491: The Ice Mining Company's New Project

"First, second, third and fourth batch, please queue to enter landing hatch no.1!"

"Fifth, sixth, seventh and eighth batch, please queue to enter landing hatch no. 2!"

"The ninth, tenth, eleventh and twelfth batch, please queue to enter landing hatch no. 3!"

...

The gentle hum of electronics could be heard all over the huge space on the top floor. Under the shadow of the large emergency spaceship, there was countless support staff who wore biochemical, nano-protective clothes. They were in a neat queue, entering the spaceship in order.

Time passed and soon, it had been more than four months since Luo Yuan last landed on the earth to obtain the gigantic beast's energy crystal. They were ready to enter earth again to collect the gigantic beast's dead body. After the interstellar creature lost its energy crystal, it would have stopped its struggle and died after two days. Luo Yuan did not want to do everything himself to avoid people from getting used to being dependent on him. At the same time, he also wanted to make full use of the unemployed people and thus, collecting the dead body became a new project for the people who lost their job in the ice mining industry.

In order to fully master the logistics of such a huge operation, a large number of factories worked around the clock. At the same time, new results from the research were also applied to the manufacturing of equipment for this particular project. In other words, they were doing a test-run for new technology. However, the production timeline that was originally given by the manufacturers were postponed time after time. It was not a matter of them being unable to manufacture the equipment but was instead due to the changes in technology that happened too fast.

With a complete set of the Glassian industrial system, one could take their time to explore the technology, especially more so now that the nanomaterial factory has been completed. Even if there was a severe lack of technical staff support, humans remained at the top of the chain when it came to expertise in their respective fields. There would be new innovations every other day and technology would become obsolete and get replaced every month. The level of human technology was developing at an alarming speed. This happened to the point where some equipment had to be disposed of because they became obsolete the moment they were manufactured. Obsolete technology had to be gotten rid of as soon as possible.

The original timeline of the project was initially postponed for one month. Then, it was postponed for two, three and now, it had been postponed for four months. If Luo Yuan had not noticed this and had them fix a date, the project may just take a few years to complete.

...

It was crowded outside the spaceship but people were arranged in a neat formation. Cui Weichuan got his teammates to join his formation.

"Start counting off!"

"Reporting, captain! There are 300 people in the first squad. All 300 present!"

"Reporting, captain! There are 301 people in the second squad. All 301 present!"

All the staff members here were on reserve duty. Almost all of them had military training and even the management of the company undertaking this project were from a military background.

After Cui Weichuan performed spectacularly well in the ice mining project, he got promoted and was now the squad leader. The number of people under his management increased from 100 to 300 people. Realizing that it was now his turn, Cui Weichuan reported, "Reporting, team leader! There are 300 people in the second squad but there are only 299 people here. One of them is on leave."

"Why are there people on leave? Did he give a reason?" The team leader frowned and asked.

Since the last project ended, these people have been unemployed for half a year. Even the leader had to send in an application for a leave if he was sick. After all, the project was on earth, now 600,000 kilometers away from their people. The company did not go to all this trouble to enter earth just to have one staff take a leave of absence. If they missed the opportunity, they would be considered AWOL and their absence meant they had resigned from the company - the discipline within the company ranks were very strict.

"There's a general examination for adults a few days later, he's taking the test by himself. Prior to the apocalypse, he was a senior year student that was behind in his education." Cui Weichuan said matter of factly.

"Is that so? All the best to him then. No matter what, he was part of the team." The team leader sighed. The learning environment in Hope City was vibrant as the government had come up with countless, free tuition classes for adults. Many who had been students before the apocalypse and even some of the young men who had been in the workforce for many years joined the crowd, studying hard for the sake of their future.

It was hard to be on the top of society these days as most of the resources they had were put into research. The size of government housing you would receive from the government was also based on your education background. Compared to most people who lived in a residence of nine square meters, a research intern or an assistant engineer lived in an 18 square meter residence. It was twice the size compared to most people. If they had a partner, the size of their residence would be further increased and if they were senior researchers or engineers, their residence would measure up to 100

square meters.

Since the company handling the project was only temporary and had yet to be officially recognized, his residence was the standard size although he was the team leader. The treatment he received was even worse than some of the technical staff who was only there temporarily. Cramped in a room with his family of three, it would be overwhelming if they had to stay there for an extended period.

However, he was not upset with this treatment. He knew that there would never be equality in society - not in the past and most definitely not in the future. Compared to the time before the apocalypse where money was a measure of wealth for most people, knowledge was the currency now. He thought that this was much fairer. If not for being old and incapable of learning, he would have enrolled in a university. Fortunately, he still had his son.

"It's going to be our turn soon! Everybody get ready to board hatch no. 5!" The team leader looked at the progress of the team ahead and commanded loudly. Cui Wenchuan led his team into the residential cabin and realized that it was no longer empty like what it used to be. Due to the mission, there were changes to the cabin. More safety seats were added and the entire residential cabin was like a meeting room, large enough to accommodate more than 100,000 people.

He followed the team and soon arrived at his designated seat. The safety set-up on the seat was exactly the same as the one in his room. He put on the safety harnesses habitually, his chest and belly wrapped in a soft material.

He noticed the staff next to him breathing heavily, so he laughed and said, "Old Lin, you're still nervous? Didn't you experience this before when there were no safety seats yet?"

"I'm a little nervous, squad leader. It's not safe to fly in this spaceship from outer space all the way back to earth, it just doesn't seem safe to me." Old Lin was a construction worker prior to the apocalypse. Although he had boarded the spaceship once during the migration, he was still terrified.

"This spaceship is made by the aliens. There's no need to worry, it can fly through the universe and this is just a short journey. It's even safer than riding in a car."

"I'd rather ride in a car, at least it's more practical." Old Lin thought and said.

Suddenly, the spaceship shook and started to move. Cui Weichuan held his tongue and did not say the things he wanted to say as he turned pale. He did not seem nervous but he was actually scared. Since he had been on the land for quite a while and hardly took the airplane, it was not all enjoyable to fly back to earth. Fortunately, everything went smooth and there were no hiccups during the journey back. He only realized that they had landed on earth when he heard the announcement.

Cui Weichuan followed the rest and exited the spaceship, but the people ahead of them stopped moving.

"Oh my, what's that in front of us?"

"Is that the dead body of the mutated beast that we are supposed to collect!"

"This is a mountain!"

Hearing the exclamations from the crowd, Cui Weichuan held onto his curiosity and waited patiently in the queue. Soon, the team started to move forward and he saw it for himself.

There was a dead body that looked like a small mountain not far away, half buried in the iceberg. Most of its body was covered in thick snow, but its claws were showing and its size was shocking. He took a deep breath and suppressed his urge to shout out loud. He was the squad leader and he had huge responsibilities. He could not help but take a peek at the dead body. Although he had prepared himself mentally when he gathered the 50,000 people for the project, what he saw was beyond his wildest imagination.

The first few days were merely preparations being made for the work to come. Thousands of work vehicles and large-scale cutting vehicles were sent from the spaceship. The construction of mobile nuclear stations had begun on the layer of ice. All the vehicles were now powered by electric as the breakthrough in nanomaterial technology had removed the restrictions obsolete technology had on batteries. Vehicles no longer needed long, twisted wires anymore.

For the next couple of days, workers set up lights, an emergency

hospital, a maintenance factory and steel scaffolding around the interstellar creature. During the operation, everyone had to be tied to a rope as the interstellar creature was too massive. Without such safety precautions, accidents could happen easily. Cui Weichuan woke up each morning and wore a protective vest plated with biochemicals. Standing on the interstellar creature with curiosity, it was a great opportunity he had to train his body. He did not stand out as there were people who always surrounded the carcass at any given time of the day.

Although the biochemical vest seemed like it was only a thin layer, the people wearing it could not feel the cold around them. With a helmet attached, the vest was fully sealed and the cold wind outside was blocked, relying only on the gas tank to breathe. It was an inconvenience but nobody dared to take off the helmet as it was the only thing separating them from the cold. It also worked as a layer of protection to fend off the terrifying energy coming off from the interstellar creature's body. One worker ignored the warnings and took off his helmet, passed out immediately and was in a coma for three days. After he woke up, he became insane but those were, of course, only rumors. From that day onwards, Cui Weichuan had never seen that worker again and on that very night, the team leader warned them again on the severity of the matter.

After preparing for five days, the bomb squad placed the explosives within the interstellar creature's body on the morning of the sixth day. When it exploded, the snow on the dead body slid off, revealing its majestic body. Without the cover of snow, it seemed to be slightly smaller in size but still, it was both stunning and terrifying. Covered in silver scales under the light, it seemed to shine brightly, making them think that this creature were those they once heard in legends. Its body and head were buried under

the ice. Only one-third of its body was above ice but that alone was more than 100 meters high, like a small mountain. Cui Weichuan gulped but nobody noticed his behavior as everyone's attention was on the mysterious, terrifying, interstellar creature.

Once the whistle was blown, they snapped out from their amazement and began work on the body.

Chapter 492: The Wisdom Elixir

It was a complete mess inside the equipment research center. The Glassian equipment was being disassembled, a variety of components and electrical wires could be seen scattered around. It did not seem like a suitable place to stay

The researchers there seemed to have lost their minds. One of the men was staring at a complicated circuit diagram that hung from the wall, standing still as he frowned at it. It was the diagram of the spaceship circuits but they were not complete and only a few of the main circuits were displayed. If the diagram were to show all the circuits, the 3x3 meter diagram had to be magnified a few times larger so the circuits would be visible to the naked eye.

Even then, outsiders would have problems understanding such a complicated circuit diagram.

It was most definitely designed by an amazing brain. Aside from the circuit diagram, humans have also obtained the blueprints of the spaceship which included the blueprints for every component used. Unfortunately, the technological gap was too huge. Even if they had the blueprints provided, nobody could understand it, let alone build it.

Compared to the blueprints, the circuit diagram was infinitely easier to understand.

He had been standing there for hours and only managed to get an inkling of a clue as to what the circuit diagram was about. In fact,

the main circuits shown in the diagram was actually not that difficult for him as an electrical engineer. Regardless of the size of a machine, the main circuit would always be simplest one and the main circuit of the Glassian spaceship was indeed, simpler.

The problem was that it was overly simplified. Glassian technology was not only advanced but was also completely different from human technology - both used vastly different systems. Most of the concepts humans used could not be used here. He was confused about the

mysterious equipment these Glassians' used.

Without a doubt, this was the saddest thing was that he was the leading electronic engineer after the disaster. If he could not understand the circuits and the equipment, how could he repair them when they were damaged? It was wishful thinking to think that an interstellar flight would go without accidents. Even if they were incapable of building a spaceship, they must at least know how to repair it.

He heard a knock on the door and his train of thought was interrupted. He got frustrated and scratched his head, "Xiao Hu, can you please open the door?"

"Yes, master!" Xiao Hu put aside the work he was doing and opened the door.

He was the new intern, one of the 12 other interns who were from the same batch that was assigned to work in the equipment

research lab. There was a limited number of researchers because the lab had been continually expanding, a new laboratory was going to be completed in a few days so the competition for vacancies between graduates was not intense. However, to be promoted to an engineering assistant, they would have to perform well so they could change their fates.

Xiao Hu was shocked as he opened the door, realizing that the people standing before him were not researchers working at the work nearby. They were two public officials.

It was not so difficult to distinguish them from researchers. Researchers usually wore white lab coats while the government officials would be in uniforms. Thanks to the development of artificial, high-quality polymers and high levels of productivity, humans had a wide selection of accessories to choose from. It was no longer the era where an entire nation had to wear battle suits. The officer before them was wearing the uniform that they wore prior to the apocalypse.

"May I ask if Wu Guanping is here?"

The middle-aged man heard it, turned his head with doubt and asked, "Yes, that would be me. Are you looking for me?"

"I'm from the logistic affairs department. Here's a parcel for you, please sign the form to claim the parcel." The officer said with a serious look. He then took out a document from his briefcase.

Wu Guangping was shocked when he heard that he was from the

center of logistic affairs. He was overwhelmed and asked, "What... What's that!"

"Please sign the document first!"

As the research department was the mayor's primary concern, they would occasionally receive welfare aid that the regular people would not have. This was not the first time and they would usually leave after passing them the goods and materials.

Wu Guangping received the document in doubt. He quickly glanced through the document and it was a receipt of goods. There were several rules listed there but it seemed like it was just trying to increase the number of words in the document. The last clause was bold and red in color, he read the document for a little longer.

"Note: The elixir is the country's property. It's only for personal use and family members are not allowed to use it. Whoever violates the above rules shall be prosecuted according to law."

Suddenly, a thought crossed his mind and his heart was beating fast.

Since last week, he had been hearing about this wisdom elixir around in the lab and it sounded iffy. He thought it was just a rumor at first but soon, more details were revealed. The lab and the individual in charge of this elixir had been revealed so he allowed himself to partly trust in the rumor a little bit more.

He only partly believed in the rumor as the research block where all of them were working at was a megastructure. It was as big as a small city. Aside from those from related laboratories or those working on the same floor, they would rarely have any contact with each other.

"However, based on what I see now, the rumor about the wisdom elixir might be true." Wu Guangping thought in his heart and quickly signed the document.

"Could you please lead me to the restroom?" The government officer took the document back and asked.

"Sure!" Wu Guangping answered immediately in a slightly agitated manner. As a researcher, it was common for them to have irregular resting hours. When they had a breakthrough in their research, it was normal if they did not go home for days. Therefore, a restroom was a must-have facility in the lab.

Three of them came to the restroom.

"Excuse me, there were several incidents prior to this where many of the researchers brought the elixir home and gave it to their family members, causing a wastage of the country's resources. Therefore, the newly established rule emphasizes that the elixir must be consumed on the spot." The officer opened up the safety box as he said. It was a purple colored liquid in the sealed test tube.

"It's okay!" Wu Guangping waved his hand, completely

mesmerized by the elixir at the moment and asked, "Is this the wisdom elixir?"

"Yes, you're right. The production of elixir is limited. It is not widespread and only one researcher was chosen to consume this." The officer passed him a test tube and said, "Please lay in bed and drink the elixir. It'll be best if you can remain calm. However, if you can't, it's fine. Don't worry, this is safe!"

The wisdom elixir was definitely not artificially made and was harvested from the Wisdom Tree. It was processed into an elixir as the shape of the Wisdom Heart was too scary. Besides that, the medicinal properties were also too strong and it would be a waste to serve it all in one portion. A mature, level eight Wisdom Heart could not be compared to the half-formed Wisdom Heart obtained by Luo Yuan earlier. After converting the heart into an elixir, there would be two servings for each Wisdom Heart.

Wu Guangping took the test tube and opened the test tube stopper. A bitter smell filled his nose. He hesitated and asked to confirm, "Do I finish it in one gulp?"

Both of the officers kept quiet, nodded their head and smiled.

Wu Guangping believed that they would not harm him as he was a middle-aged man who had not taken a bath for days and he had nothing that would be attractive to them. He hesitated for a while and drank it in a single gulp. Aside from the bitter taste in his mouth, he could feel his stomach begin to bloat.

The next moment he could feel a fire burning inside his stomach. After a few seconds, the burning sensation spread across his body and his skin began to redden.

The Wisdom Heart consisted of the essence of the Wisdom Tree. Not only it could improve the brain, but it also contained an abundance of active energy. The effect of the active energy on Luo Yuan was somewhat limited. However, if it were used by ordinary people, it would cause big changes to them.

Of course, the greatest change would still be his brain. The process was not an enjoyable one, though.

After 10 minutes, when the effect of the elixir had dissipated, he felt like he had just returned from hell. When he opened his eyes, he was stunned.

He suddenly felt like he was able to recall all his memories from the entirety of his life within a short period of time. His thoughts had never been so fast and clear. No... Fast was doing the speed injustice. It was as fast as the speed of light, as quick as a flash of lighting. He felt enlightened as he began getting new insights into the problems that he had all these years in his research. Everything suddenly seemed easy and relaxing as thoughts about problems which had puzzled him for a long time gushed into his head.

At the same time, his face reddened and the wrinkles around his eyes seemed to have gone away. The middle-aged man now looked like a young man.

Wu Guangping turned back and looked at both of the officers. His eyes were glowing and he appeared to be confident, like a god.

In just 10 minutes, he looked like a completely different person, "The elixir was amazing. If there's nothing else, I'll continue with my work."

Chapter 493: Technological Boom (1)

"Mayor, the Wisdom Heart production is almost stable now. We've estimated that the maturity period would take approximately three months and ten days for the seedling to reach a mature state. The recent batch of 53 seedlings will be able to be harvested about 10 days later." Explained the person in charge of the Wisdom Tree cultivation facility who stood next to Luo Yuan solicitously.

"How many seedlings have been planted currently?" Luo Yuan asked.

"267 seedlings. They are already at their peak. If they grow any more rapidly, they mature period will be extended."

Although 267 seedlings were not much, the Wisdom Tree was a level eight plant. Moreover, with how particular they were and their excessive need for active energy which was beyond the regular needs of a level eight creature, being able to make all 267 Wisdom Trees mature within three months was already a stunning feat.

Nodding noncommittally, Luo Yuan walked fast towards the heavily guarded building before him. A group of people quickly caught up with him.

Since the discovery that the active energy produced by the energy crystal was effective in growing the Wisdom Tree, Luo Yuan scaled up the planting of Wisdom Tree saplings immediately. Because of

this, he deliberately used an empty building and had people modify and reinforce it. Compared to other mutated plants, the matured Wisdom Trees were considered small. However, there were some of them which managed to grow tens of meters high. The floor that was three meters high could not support its regular growth cycle at all. Fortunately, these buildings were modular and can be disassembled easily.

The 70-floor mega-structure had four floors left after the reinforcement. Each floor was 50 meters high with metal cylinders acting as support columns. With the Wisdom Tree plantation that was growing thicker and lusher by the day, walking among them was like walking into a forest - it was energizing. Luo Yuan looked at the trees from one floor to another and he arrived at the top floor at a very fast pace. Compared to the three floors below them, there were not many Wisdom Trees here, only a couple of them were scattered around. Most of the space was empty.

There was a team of heavily armed guards that specially guarded the huge metal can which looked similar to a storage tank not far away. It was quite prominent, ten meters high with a diameter of five meters, its surface was attached to a large number of pipes that spread in all directions like a spider web. The energy crystal was placed here, the most crucial part of the cultivation of Wisdom Trees. Without the energy crystal, this production facility would lose its purpose.

"In order to conserve active energy, we've specially designed piping which has direct access to the roots of all the plants. We've also managed to scientifically design a management system which doesn't only utilizes active energy in the most efficient manner, but also reduces the occurrence of accidents. Thus far, the safety

records here state that there hasn't been an accident in 21 days."

"Well done!" Luo Yuan finally praised them for once.

Hearing Luo Yuan's rare praise, the person in charge was finally relieved.

In order to establish this Wisdom Tree production facility, a hefty price was paid. This was especially so in the beginning when many of the staff lost their lives after they triggered the Wisdom Tree out of ignorance. Even more people died during the harvest because of accidents. Within four months, 32 lives were put on the accident list. Fortunately, along with the specifications requested by the management for the custom-made harvesting equipment orders, special laser cutters were now used during harvesting. The death toll had now plummeted and accidents rarely happen now.

...

Before the end of the inspection, Luo Yuan looked back once more. Looking at the Wisdom Tree, he had an adrenaline rush. This Wisdom Tree production facility was a powerful boost for humanity's technological development. The entire production facility could produce about 1,000 Wisdom Hearts per annum. They were manufactured into wisdom elixirs that could be consumed by 2,000 people. However, now that there were 10,000 researchers, the number was pathetic. It would be impossible to let every researcher get a taste of the elixir, let alone provide a portion for everyone.

Still, despite the pathetic number, the fact that it would enable further development and drive forward the progress in humanity's science and technology was beyond imagination.

Although the amount of time since the first batch of researchers consumed the elixir was quite short and it was not even ten days, there was already a breakthrough in human technology. The result almost exceeded all the work they had done in the previous three months.

Within these few days, more than 30 Glassian factories were activated and the first generation of quantum computers was officially launched as the first batch of production began. It was still early to say that this was the limit of human potential since there were only, slightly over 100 people who had consumed the wisdom elixir. In many industries, personal effort and diligence could make up for the lack of talent. However, it was impossible to do so in the field of research. Most researchers would go through their entire lives, experiencing a mediocre existence. The gap between a regular researcher and a senior scientist was like the difference between students in the primary school and a university.

Moreover, along with the improvements in human technology, especially after the 20th century, human knowledge was growing faster and faster, getting deeper as we branched out into different fields. Nobody could master several fields like how they used to before. Many already had their heads in the clouds within the branches of a single field and there were hardly any outstanding researchers anymore.

It was not that they became more professional and focused only on a single field but instead, there was just too much to take in. This was especially so in their attempt to decode Glassian technology where the knowledge they once had was blown away as they learned more about this alien technology. There was a plethora of new information almost every single day and new theories would emerge every other month. The knowledge learned today might become obsolete the following month and one would have to relearn it from scratch.

At such a breakneck speed, the intelligence of researchers needed to increase more and more. Without the ability to learn and comprehend new theories, it was hard to adapt their research to new information. In reality, most researchers could no longer keep up with the pace. If this situation continued, the development of human technology may just have to slow down as there were just too little researchers right now. It was ridiculous to force civilization to continue on this path. After the technological explosion after they managed to decode a part of the Glassian technology, the researchers were already too exhausted to keep up with new findings.

The discovery of the wisdom elixir was perfect timing, boosting human intelligence to a level where the rate of learning was highly efficient, turning their mind so sharp that common researchers would not be so common anymore. In other words, almost all of them had the potential to become a senior scientist. The wisdom elixir gave humans a big boost in their progress.

...

A cold wind blew on the ground as the people of the company handling the harvest of the interstellar creature's body returned to the spaceship in exhaustion. A day of hard work had finally ended. Cui Weichuan got the leader who served under him to clean up the tools and report the damages to him. He then sat on the ground and took off his helmet but he did not have the appetite to eat at all. After a day of work, he was not exactly tired. After all, the conditions were vastly different than the ice mining days since there were now thousands of vehicles and various equipment in the company's arsenal. It was not as tiring like it was during the ice mining days where everything was hard labor.

It was just that... Whenever he was close to the interstellar creature, he would feel a certain sense of suppression that was overwhelming, mentally draining him. Fortunately, he was wearing his protective vest, without which, he would probably pass out like what they heard from the rumors.

"I can't imagine what it would feel like for those who worked on top of the creature." As he thought, Cui Weichuan became more relaxed.

His team got lucky when they drew the ballot to be responsible to cut off the purple thorns on the interstellar creature's legs. Each thorn was seven meters long and four meters thick, filled with tiny scales, they shone in a purple color. It was fearsome. The thorns were ridiculously tough and regular cutting machines could not do the work. Within minutes, the blades would be flattened and even lasers could do no harm to it. The best and only way was to grind at it using high-pressure water.

Since the weather was cold, the usage of high-pressure water to cut through the thorns was not an easy task as the source of water was unavailable. However, since there were mobile nuclear stations in the construction site, energy was endless and getting a source of water was not so difficult after all. With the help of 300 people in the team and 80 pieces of equipment, they only managed to cut through the five thinnest thorns but seeing as most of the thorns were already halfway cut, there should be better results tomorrow.

"Squad leader, you haven't eaten yet. I've got extra." Old Lin said.

"Ahh, thank you so much, Old Hu!" Cui Weichuan was not a fledgling recruit anymore so he did not take extra, only realizing he was hungry when he was passed some food.

"No need for thanks, it's nothing."

The food was good and lunch was the same. There were three dishes and the main dish was a top-of-the-line cactus bun. He was from the south and used to have rice all the time before the apocalypse dawned on humanity but now that he had these for years, he had gotten used to it. It was a luxury that such dishes were served as there was no such treatment for him when he was an unemployed man.

Just as he began eating, Old Lin asked, "Squad leader, can I ask you something?"

"Hmm?" Cui Weichuan replied with a full mouth as he was

eating.

"How long do you think we'll have to work with this company? Would we be dismissed after the project is over?" Old Lin seemed worried.

"Why would you ask me such a thing? The superiors will make the decision." Cui Wenchuan swallowed his food and continued, "However, I don't think they would let the high unemployment rate continue like this. Now that there are more and more factories up and running on the spaceship, even if we were dismissed from this project, most of us would probably get hired in a factory, I guess."

"What about uncivilized and unskilled people like me?" Just as Old Lin began to seem a little relieved, he asked in a concerned tone again.

"You can always learn, nobody was born a skilled person. Besides, you don't look old, you still have many years ahead of you!" Cui Wenchuan said in consolation.

He was optimistic. Now that there were only six million people left, not a single human resource could go to waste. As soon as society returned to normal, everyone could get a job. The only difference was the treatment they would receive.

"I'm 58 already." Old Lin said.

"You don't look that old to me, I thought you're only 40." Cui Weichuan said honestly. Most of the people nowadays did not seem old. Although there were no official studies done, humans now lived longer than they did prior to the apocalypse.

A bunch of kids who were about 12 to 13 years old passed by. Old Lin was stunned and asked, "Do we hire kids here?"

"Nonsense, they are from the escort team." Cui Weichuan attempted to stop him from talking nonsense. As the interim leader of the company, he attended the meeting before departure. He had seen this bunch of kids at the meeting and they were brought there by the mayor's secretary. They were not ordinary kids.

...

Without a doubt, the kids were Luo Yuan's cloned children. Due to their fusion bodies, they had grown into teenagers within a year. They already learned everything that they could from the two family teachers and began teaching themselves. With what they already knew, they were no less intelligent than a common researcher. In some aspects, they were even better than the researchers, they only lacked experience.

As their bodies unique and they were still not mentally matured, Luo Yuan did not want them to enter society just yet. Being here served as training for them as well as protection for the staff. Although the project of harvesting the carcass of the interstellar creature only involved its scales, eyeballs, thorns, and nails which were on the surface. The most they would go to would be cutting

its flesh on the surface without going deeper into its body. However, they could only hope for the best since nobody could guarantee that the parasites in the body would not infect the staff.

Prior to the project, Luo Yuan spent some time to conduct a one-month training with his clones. They were born warriors and within one month, they had mastered their sword training. Even the gathering of Will which was extremely difficult for ordinary people seemed like nothing to them. Luo Yuan was even envious of their talents but unfortunately, they had zero interest in such things.

Chapter 494: Technological Boom (II)

Soon, it was close to 2018 and it had almost been five years since the onset of the apocalypse. The once endangered humans who had left the earth was now full of life, with their negative, suppressed emotions now fading into the past. The residential area within the spaceship was flourishing. Since the people migrated into the spaceship two years ago, the progress in technological development had been flourishing. Many Glassian factories were already up and running. Batches of staff were assigned to work on them after a short period of training and within a period of one year, there were breakthroughs in the field of nanotechnology, electromagnetics, gene modification, quantum technology, artificial intelligence and nuclear fusion technology. Although the knowledge from these fields was based on Glassian technology, being able to do it within such a short period of time without relying on the artificial intelligence system of the spaceship was quite the accomplishment.

With the breakthrough in these fields, people were no longer confused with Glassian technology anymore. Of course, that did not mean human technology was now on par with the Glassians. In fact, it was far from it, only being on par with Glassian technology that was 60 years old. The knowledge humans have obtained from the Glassian artificial intelligence system was fragmented and though there were various applications and theories, most of it was incomplete and would take time to decipher and master.

...

Luo Yuan and a couple of the city hall's top leaders were inspecting the latest results in a Glassian factory within the

industrial area. In the massive test field, a giant that stood almost 20 meters high squat on the ground with more than 10 tools on its robotic hands hanging in the air. The robot seemed overwhelming to ordinary people even when it was stationary.

"So is this the Glassian engineering robot?" Tian Jinping asked in shock.

"That's right. Honorable mayor and leaders, this robot has been in a dormant state ever since it was disconnected from the ship's communication device with humans being unable to operate it at all. Now that we have replaced its brain with one that we've developed, it belongs to us, an engineering robot built by humans - a human engineering robot!" The head engineer of the factory said proudly.

The head engineer was one of the people who was given a chance to consume the wisdom elixir. Aside from the unreal sense of power and the urge to suppress others when it was first consumed, many have gotten over that feeling and had their feet rooted back in reality. However, there were some of them who could not get out of that mentality but as long as they did nothing to break the law, Luo Yuan did nothing to them.

Luo Yuan looked at the massive robot and asked in great interest, "Chief Chen, please tell us more about this robot." Seeing as the question came from Luo Yuan himself, the head engineer was stunned and said in his excitement. "Yes, mayor! This robot is the biggest one in the Glassian arsenal, it is also the one with the most amount of features. It weighs 535 tons and has a miniature nuclear fusion furnace as well as a pulse engine, enabling it to support

activities such as short distance interstellar travel, heavy machinery and spaceship repair, as well as small-scale asteroid mining. It is a multipurpose robot that is a necessary for interstellar flights within such a spaceship."

"How safe is it, would the ship's artificial intelligence system regain control of it again?" Luo Yuan nodded and asked. He was not concerned about the artificial intelligence system betraying it as the entire ship was now under human control. To survive, it would never betray them without a Glassian mastermind behind it, pulling the strings but the artificial intelligence system had no control over this.

Chief Chen thought for a moment and his sharp mind had come up with countless scenarios. He replied, "That's impossible, we've localized the communication devices as well as other functions of the robot into a language suitable for humans. Moreover, now that the factories were under human control and unless the compatibility between the artificial intelligence system and the communication device was improved, both of them would be completely incompatible and would still remain in the control of Hope No. 3, our very own invention."

Hope No. 3 was the third generation of quantum supercomputers that humans invented. Its processing power was 10,000 times more powerful than the ones available before the apocalypse which included mobile phones. Although it was still a far way from catching up to the ship's artificial intelligence system, it was already at 1/10,000 of its processing power. The gap seemed huge but at the rate human technology was progressing, they were inching closer every day. The first quantum supercomputers the humans invented was only 1/100 billionth of the ship's artificial

intelligence system's processing power but it took them only one and a half years to come up with the third generation.

"Let's activate it and see what it can do, shall we?" Luo Yuan nodded and said.

"Sure. For safety purposes, I'd like to ask the mayor and leaders to take a step back." Chief Chen said. As they stepped back, he lifted the portable device with his left hand and tapped on the three-dimensional screen. The once quiet test field was now filled with a buzzing sound that was not that loud but rather, sounded quite intimidating. It was the sound of the robot's engine, a green light lit up on the robot's head, it then stood up slowly.

The robot then lifted its heavy body and walked to the deck of the spaceship while doing a self-test. It did not make a single sound, its massive body giving out the impression that it was light which was quite contradictory. The robot apparently had an anti-gravity chip in its system as well as an outstanding balancing system which allowed it to adapt to any environment. Its systems scanned the environment and found a heavily damaged machine nearby and it walked towards it.

In Luo Yuan's eyes, the machine seemed completely destroyed. Not only were the parts scattered all over the floor, its main systems were totally destroyed. Seeing as the leaders were curious about the robot, Chief Chen said, "There are more than 10,000 blueprints in its central databank. All of them came from the original databank from which we copied the blueprints over when we were rewriting its programme. We've instructed it to fix the machine, let's see how effective it is."

The robot began moving again. Its circular eyes releasing a wide beam that scanned the machine before it and once it finished the scan, it began to retrieve data on the machine. Next, it began to move its metal arms that had more than 10 tools on it. Among the tools was a gigantic heavy hammer than weighed five tons, which were among other old-school tools like a metal plier as well as high-tech tools which had unknown functions. Even Luo Yuan could not figure out what some of the tools did.

The first step in fixing the machine was to disassemble it completely. The process was quite violent as some of the parts were pressed against one another and could not be separated so they were cut open using lasers. 10 seconds later, countless parts were arranged neatly on the side before the robot scanned them once more and picked it up using both its metal arms. The metal parts were completely bent out of shape, one of them cut in half by the robot earlier. The robot then heated the parts to a high temperature and welded the two parts together.

"Is that it?" Luo Yuan thought to himself but just as a tinge of skepticism grew within him, another robot arm joined the party. The tool that arm was holding seemed strange, it was a metal cylinder that was almost one meter thick. There was a concave ball on top of it but nobody knew what it was for. "What's that tool the robot is holding?" Since Luo Yuan did not understand, he asked Chief Chen directly. "It's a miniature, magnetic field shaping device!" Chief Chen said immediately and continued, "It's able to shape metals as if they were liquids within its magnetic field and create parts according to the blueprints. It's the robot's main repair function."

Luo Yuan knew what the device was for once he heard Chief Chen mention its name. He had seen this technique before in other factories before this. Such techniques were used in metal smelting and forging factories but he had never seen such a small version. The robot's engine began buzzing, apparently powering the equipment with a massive amount of energy. Luo Yuan could see the air around the magnetic field shaping device move and distort, causing the metal pieces to shake and they seemed like they were going to be absorbed by the robot. The device, however, seemed to have a strong control over the magnetic field to ensure that its magnetic field could do what it was intended to do.

Under the influence of the magnetic field, the shape of the part began to morph as the distorted metal morphed and the broken parts combined. Ten seconds later, the once useless part was now completely repaired. It looked as good as new and it was incredibly impressive. Apparently, the Glassians had superior technology when it came to magnetic fields to the point where they had full control over magnetic fields. Before the humans discovered Glassian technology, their technology in the field of magnetic fields was primitive.

If the humans possessed such technology during the reconstruction area era, the productivity in the industries they had going on then would have increased several-fold. Mutated beasts would have been less of a threat to humans. However, the application of such technology would require huge amounts of affordable energy which was not available then. If nuclear fusion technology was not developed then as it was now, even if humans were to acquire this technology, it would be redundant. Technology was meant to complement one another to create a ripple effect, it could not stand alone. Even if alien technology existed back then, it would not have made much of a difference if

they could not utilize it.

The flow of each of the robotic limbs was smooth and neat and the repair was done to several other parts. As the operation area was massive, it took some time but the rest were fixed in less than 20 seconds each. Luo Yuan did some calculations and found that a few of the machines that weighed 10 tons were fixed within 15 minutes. He began clapping softly and before long the leaders next to him followed suit, filling the area with the sound of clapping. Chief Chen was blushing. In society these days, there was nothing more important than the recognition from your superior and not awards or glory.

...

Although the Glassian robot was not considered to be a breakthrough under the recent boom in the technological expansion, it was still meaningful progress for humans as it now meant that humans now possessed the basic ability to fix the spaceship. At the same time, they were now able to operate in space, enabling asteroid mining for materials. As more Glassian factories activated and production began on a larger scale, the materials they had in reserve were used up faster. Most of the materials used were only about 10% of the amount they had in inventory. On the other hand, about 30% of their pure iron reserve was used up as the megastructures were made of metal.

Luo Yuan knew the risks of that as the materials were meant for human survival if they ever encountered any danger in space. On the other hand, humans lacked the materials for their daily life as they needed to use it in every part of their lives. It was different

than it used to be, life was hard and materials were limited. The only concern they had used to be food but now that life has taken a turn for the better and technology has progressed, if there were no changes, people would start to complain.

On the other hand, utilizing the materials were also meant to convince people to join the workforce so they would not laze around doing nothing. Though there are better ways to increase employment such as the service industry, this was an easy way to increase the rate of employment and create job opportunities for those who were unemployed. Prior to the apocalypse, the service industry in China surpassed the industrial sector. The scale of this in the United States would be even higher as their economy was booming.

In reality, at the current standard of human technology, it was possible to create entertainment for everyone. Now that the engineering robot had been decoded, building ordinary intelligent robots were a no-brainer. Unmanned factories that were similar to the Glassian factory were now feasible. However, if that happened, it would be like taking away the meaning of life for many people. Humankind still had a long way to go before they are able to enjoy life as they were just in their infancy, on a journey to leave their solar system into a dark universe. With an uncertain future, if they started relaxing now, the most likely outcome would be them being a group of wanderers who had no means of returning to their home planet.

This was not what Luo Yuan wanted to see. In order to support and encourage the people to thrive in their interstellar journey, the service industry was severely restricted. Aside from movies were only made for promotional purposes, the people had almost no

entertainment. However, there were more adult-schools and part-time courses for the workforce that were being developed. Public tuition classes were everywhere and most of them were research-based. Learning had become a trend in society and the only objective was to push their technology as far as it could go.

Chapter 495: Give Birth For Humanity's Future!

Chen Xinjie entered the office gracefully with an enticing fragrance on her body. Placing the cup of tea on her hand before Luo Yuan, she whispered into his ear, "Mayor, 10 more minutes to the meeting." Within two years, technology was not the only thing that changed rapidly, there were some changes in the people in City Hall as well. Some of them were sacked for corruption and some just could not keep up with development while others were promoted.

His former secretary, Cheng Guanghui was assigned to a new location as the director of the Industrial Bureau. He was replaced by Chen Xinjie as Luo Yuan's secretary. To Cheng Guanghui, such a promotion was nothing to be happy about. Aside from having to work independently, it also meant that he would no longer be involved in the research on energy crystals any further.

In all honesty, Luo Yan was quite indifferent about Cheng Guanghui and it was merely an organizational transfer. Usually, secretaries for leaders would not hold their positions for more than three years before they were transferred. It was to prevent staff progress from stagnating and to avoid misuse of management rights.

After all, being his secretary meant that he was Luo Yuan's ambassador. Every move he made represented Luo Yuan's will or at least it did in the eyes of others. More so in an era where power was a priority, the power a secretary held was even more than the other committee members. It was without a doubt, an unusual

phenomenon.

The reason why he chose Chen Xinjie as his secretary was because he knew her very well. She did not have a desire for power and she had a strong level of integrity. Besides, compared to others that Luo Yuan was not so familiar with, he would naturally trust people he had around him.

Luo Yuan looked at the time and said, "It's still early, let me finish looking at these documents."

Chen Xinjie did not disturb him and left soon after he said that. After Luo Yuan finished looking at the documents, he stood up, tidied his clothes and walked out of his office. Chen Xinjie who was at the secretariat followed him with a pile of documents in hand.

While they were on the way, they started chatting, "Is the birth rate that low nowadays?"

"It has been like this since the beginning of the apocalypse. Although the antidote virus did not mutate most of the human, slight changes had taken place. Humans were now vastly different than they were before the apocalypse, which heavily affected the birth rate." Luo Yuan said in a serious tone.

To spread the word on how evil Glassians were, news of the antidote virus which caused the mutation epidemic on earth, as well as countless deaths in the general population, were made known to the public. Chen Xinjie already knew about the news so it was nothing new to her. Soon, they arrived at the meeting room.

The guard who stood in front of the meeting room was stunned to see them both but he got a hold of himself and opened the door.

It was not a meeting with the management but rather, a policy seminar. Aside from the leaders from each management team, most of the people present were popular scientists and professors. Without wasting any more time, Luo Yuan started the meeting right away.

"This is the latest information on all the newborn babies in all the hospitals during the past two years. To date, there have only been 3,320 newborn children within the past two years. The birth rate is terrifyingly low and this cannot go on. If we do not do anything, we'd go extinct within 5,000 years! I have given each of you a copy of the information and all of you should have already read it. If anybody has any proposals, you're welcome to speak up and if you have anything to say about the cloned humans, you can voice your opinions too." Luo Yuan said.

Chen Xinjie was doing her best to write down the minutes of the meetings as fast as she could in a corner, occasionally glancing at Luo Yuan. To her, that was the time he was the most attractive.

"Respectable mayor and leaders, I am against cloning humans. At our current level of technology, it's true that it wouldn't be difficult to clone humans but cloning alone will merely increase the population and will do nothing to increase the birth rate of humans. If humans would give up natural methods of conceiving a child and fully turn to cloning to continue the human race, this may just work. However, this would create a huge impact on human society, causing a collapse in the old social model of a

family and cause an uproar in society as we know it. In my opinion, the best way forward in tackling the low birth rate would be to continue our research in medicine." A social science professor covered with white hair stood up and said in all seriousness.

Luo Yuan frowned, not expecting the first person to speak up to speak against cloning.

"I think this old professor is too conservative. Every stage of progress in society will bring a certain level of impact. The matriarchal period, feudal period and the small family period before the apocalypse impacted society in various ways. The development of clones would naturally impact existing society, it is unavoidable. Now that there were few of us left and outer space was not somewhere safe, to even consider the impact cloning will bring society before we even solve the problem we're currently facing is ridiculous.." Said a scientist who stood up after the professor.

He was young, seemingly not even 30 years old. However, young scientists nowadays were everywhere. Though they were young, it also meant that they were more open to new things. Compared to the older generation, he was much more radical and Luo Yuan had no comments on that. Cloning was naturally the best way to solve the population issue and the effect was immediate though there would always be side effects. Cloning had existed since the reconstruction area era but since humans were facing immense stress to ensure their survival, it was not publicized.

Now that survival was no longer an issue, if human clones were discovered by civilians, there would be an uproar. Though he was

respectable, his reputation will definitely take a hit so even though he had plans for human cloning since the very beginning, he still had to be careful.

"I partly agree with the old professor's opinion. That being said, I'm not against human cloning. Instead, I'm against indiscriminate human cloning. I think we've reached a stage where we should be bio-engineering the human genome ourselves!" Director Wu stood up and proclaimed. As he was given the task of creating the wisdom elixir, he was the most powerful figure in the field of genetics. However, two years had passed and there were still no results so his field of research had almost been marginalized.

"Of course, I'm not talking about genetic sequencing but instead, the purpose of it is to understand the functions of the genes in human DNA. After the functions of the genes are fully mapped, we'll set the human genetic standard and get rid of genes that were affected by the antidote virus which causes infertility and the ills that is the human condition. Once we've done that, we'll be able to take care of fertility..."

The old professor initially thought this man was supporting his idea but the more he spoke, the more ridiculous it sounded. His opinions were even more radical than the young scientist that spoke before him. The old professor could no longer take it and spoke up, interrupting him before he could even finish what he was saying, "This is absurd! How can you still call that human? It's just something produced in a factory, this is truly ridiculous!"

"As a genetic researcher, humans and clones are not that different to me." Director Wu defended himself. "Life is not as

sacred as you think it is. Evolution can be interrupted and the development of this technology is meant to serve the interest of humankind. Since we have advanced technology, why not utilize it? Better humans, longer lives, that'd definitely be another boost to human civilization."

The meeting room became crowded and everyone was seen talking to one another or arguing softly. As time passed, the meeting room grew noisier and noisier.

"Please, behave yourselves!" Luo Yuan reminded them. If they continued arguing, the conservative and radical camp might even start fighting. Of course, as a young man himself, he leaned more towards the radical camp. Compared to the boring conservative camp, the radical camp was no doubt meant to be the direction human civilization should go towards.

However, if the ideas proposed were too radical, it would be rejected by many. Being in a position of power, he had to balance the opinions from both camps and come up with the best proposal for humankind to thrive.

Luo Yuan thought to himself and said, "I can see that all of you have your own opinions. However, I don't think human cloning is against natural birth. At the same time, we cannot stop progressing towards the future just because of side effects. There are many married couples who are eager to have kids right now. Perhaps, we could provide fertility services to those in need."

"I agree with the mayor!" Bi Jianping said and continued, "As long as the marketing is done properly, such services would be in

high demand. One way to do it would be to use the slogan 'Give Birth For Humanity's Future!'"

"I agree with mayor's opinion!" Bi Jianping said, "As long as the marketing is good, such service would be in high demand. Such as 'Give Birth in The Favor of The People's Future!'"

...

Naturally, Luo Yuan's proposal passed with no objections but that did not mean it could be carried out immediately. There was still much to do. The first problem would be the appearance of the clones and the person who was cloned. That was the biggest concern of the people and if the issue was not solved, it would affect the implementation heavily.

That being said, perhaps it was not an issue after all. Maybe if they saw Luo Yuan as the one, they would not think of the appearance issue. He almost single-handedly modified the function of the human genome which included more than 10,000 types of evolved human genes. His powerful body and the clones he had at home was the best example of this. Moreover, with the help of Glassian equipment and the ability to directly modify the genes, it will take an estimated one or two years to fulfill all the requirements for mass human cloning.

Furthermore, the proposal that Luo Yuan brought up was not just a policy, it was a transition. When humans begin cloning children, they would slowly accept the existence of clones and when that happens, it would be the perfect timing for mass cloning.

After the meeting was adjourned, he got the genetic scientists to stay.

In the afternoon, a large institute called the Human Genome Optimization Programme was formed. A couple of days later, with instructions from the government, more and more researchers were sent to the institute. In reference to the genetic function Luo Yuan mapped made as well as the wisdom elixir documents which were leaked on purpose, the programme was progressing at an unbelievably rapid pace.

Chapter 496: Spring Festival

The spring festival was approaching and factory workers had gone home for the holidays.

It was the second time people had celebrated the spring festival since the apocalypse and compared to the first year, the celebrations this year was definitely more lively. There were even giant red lanterns that symbolized the festivities that hung outside the megastructures. The streets were decorated with lights and littered with colors.

There were crowds at the department stores, supermarkets and farmers markets. People had been holding in the urge to shop for a long period of time and it had just been unleashed. There was an abundance of supplies during the spring festival this year. The shopping malls sold many of the latest household appliances and the farmers' market even had meat in stock for the first time, attracting many people.

The meat was not naturally grown but at the same time, it was not synthesized with different elements. Instead, it was a kind of meat that was cultivated in a laboratory. There was no limit to its growth and it could grow infinitely as long as it was in the nutrient solution, similar to cancer cells. IT was a seasonal product which was accidentally discovered when they were studying the flesh of the interstellar creature. While the study was being conducted, a young intern who had just graduated accidentally found out that the flesh would snap out of its suspended state and begin multiplying at an extreme rate when it was placed in a growth medium and placed in an extreme environment. It would absorb all the nutrients available nearby and undergo cell division before

growing rapidly to become resistant to the dangers in its immediate surroundings, maintaining itself.

However, even though it would multiply and grow rapidly, the flesh of this creature was comparable to metal and was completely inedible. The only way to continue the experiment was to acquire more supplies. However, even though they had acquired an astonishing reserve that managed to fill up an entire warehouse and could supply them with enough supplies to conduct experiments for the next 100 years, it was meaningless.

After finding out about this phenomenon, the laboratory did not give up but continued carrying out various experiments on the interstellar creature's flesh that lasted for more than six months. From time to time, the researchers would try using different sampling methods and eventually, they had surprising news.

In the growth process of the flesh, the researchers found that it was gradually degrading. It was possible that the environment the experiments were conducted in could not support high-level flesh such as that from an interstellar creature. In order to adapt to its new environment, the flesh would degrade slightly with every experiment and eventually, it became soft and there were even changes in its genetic structure. After continuous growth and experiments, the flesh put on the market could no longer be labeled as the flesh of an interstellar creature but instead, a level three flesh which had adapted to its new environment.

...

"Give me some dough, there is hardly any left over here!" Zhao

Yali quickly used up the dough in front of her and said.

"How did you wrap it up so quickly?" Wang Xiaguang was shocked. They were wrapping dumplings from the same pile of dough and she had not even used one-fifths of the dough but Zhao Yali had already finished.

"Here!" Huang Jiahui said.

"When I was younger, my family used to run a snack bar. Every night, I'd help in making dumplings and steamed buns. I got my skills there." Zhao Yali took the dough Huang Jiahui brought and said. Her tone remained the same. Time was the best medicine... It had been so long, the grief of the past had faded.

People began gathering at the round table in the living room at Luo Yuan's house and started making dumplings - it was very lively. The mutated woman looked at them for a short while and after she found it to be quite interesting, she took a piece of dough to attempt making dumplings. However, it was a fact that she did not have the talent. Her sharp claws would always pierce through the dough and the dumplings she made would always come out with strange shapes, exposing the meat inside. However, she was having fun, enjoying herself.

Wang Shishi glared at the unknown object in front of her and said spitefully, "You're so stupid! You're going to eat the dumplings you wrapped later!"

Hearing Wang Shishi's criticism, the mutated woman pouted,

seemingly angry. She made a few more, put down the dough she was holding and placed the dumplings she made earlier in a basket angrily. She then carried the basket in one hand, dragged a chair in another and walked away from Wang Shishi. She walked to where Luo Yan and Luo Yu was at and gestured them to make space for her.

The both of them did not mind and moved the chair enthusiastically. The mutated woman then placed the chair between the both of them. Nowadays, Wang Shishi was not the only one she could play with. Compared to Wang Shishi who always spoke ill of her, Luo Yu and Luo Yuan were her true best friends. She hopped on the chair and looked at Wang Shishi with a smirk which made her scoff in return.

However, the mutated woman was inherently active and lost interest in things quickly. She lost patience after she had been making dumplings for awhile. However, in order prevent Wang Shishi from laughing at her, she continued persistently. Fortunately, the footsteps that approached from from outside saved her. Her slightly pointed ears were moving like that of a rabbit as she immediately hopped off the chair and fled like a flash of lightning.

"It's probably Luo Yuan," Huang Jiahui said while laughing after she looked at the disappearing act the mutated woman pulled.

"Dad is back!" Luo Fan confirmed. The ears of the clones were sharper than the others. Among all the people there, only the mutated woman could compare with their abilities.

As expected, Luo Yuan entered the door a while later with the mutated woman following suit behind him.

"Dad!"

"Dad!"

The kids stood up and greeted Luo Yuan immediately. They were obedient.

Luo Yuan nodded and smiled. He placed a paper box in his hand on the ground and took off his coat. Luo Yu picked it up eagerly, put it on the hanger, and then asked expectantly, "Dad, what is this?"

"Here, your new year presents!" Luo Yuan smiled and said.

"What present?" Luo Yu hugged Luo Yuan's arm.

Luo Yuan released his arm from Luo Yu's grasp. During the past two years, the kids grew rapidly and they were now young men and young ladies. Especially his two daughters, they had their first periods half a year ago. It was inappropriate for them to be so close to him.

He took out a gift from the paper box, it was wrapped to the festival's theme. He passed it to Luo Yu and said, "Open it and you'll know!"

"Dad, I want one too!" Luo Yan said.

"Yes, everyone's got one!"

Seeing that she was ignored, the mutated woman made a noise.

Luo Yuan laughed and patted her head, "I wouldn't forget yours."

Luo Yuan then gave everyone a present, including Ye Qiuyu.

After Luo Yu opened her present, she saw what seemed like a pair of contact lenses. There was a bottle with a liquid in it, but she knew that these were not contact lenses as she asked, "Dad, what are these?"

"This is the latest miniature quantum computer. Put this on your glasses and switch it on using your Will." Luo Yuan explained, "It can be used to connect to the internet, make long distance calls and also conduct environmental tests. Its computing power is nothing less than the previous generations of was nothing less than the previous generation. There are other functions as well, take a look for yourself in the manuals!"

"There's nothing fun about the internet." Wang Shishi mumbled to herself.

As part of the military in a totalitarian society, Luo Yuan and his

family were naturally the first people served by the staff. Every other day, there would be new, high-tech products sent to his house which included things like quantum computers. Wang Shishi had the first generation up to the third generation quantum computer in her bedroom so she was quite familiar with the internet. Speaking of the current internet, Wang Shishi was utterly disappointed as the current internet was crude and could not compare to the internet prior to the apocalypse, which was full of colorful images. There were limited websites, only about 100 of them. More than 10 of them were related to academic journals while the rest were news or educational websites. To ordinary people, most of them would not even use it if gaming or video related websites were nowhere to be found. Entertainment was close to zero on the internet.

Even the communication software needed to be improved. Aside from the basic communication functions, business and entertainment programmes were non-existent. The interface was so simple that people just wanted to slap the developers. However, Wang Shishi could not wait to put on the miniature quantum computer that looked like contact lenses. She was a fan of electrical products and even though there was no entertainment, she spent most of her time on the internet and surfed for the latest news or some interesting e-books. As she put the computer on, she blinked a few times and felt like nothing changed.

"Eh? How do I turn this on?"

Just when she was thinking, a screen appeared before her eyes.

"Oh! Its controlled by brainwaves!" Wang Shishi thought about

what Luo Yuan said earlier and found out how to use them. The brightness was spot on, the mini calculator appeared in the blink of an eye and soon, the image of a classic blue sky and clouds on the desktop that we knew so well appeared, seemingly so real. She felt like she was in it, back to the time on earth before all this happened.

Fortunately, she was not an emotional person. Soon, she started exploring and realized that the images she saw could be adjusted to be more transparent. Once the transparency was adjusted to about 50%, it would not affect her when she was walking at all.

The operation was simple if you had clear thoughts, its speed was blindingly fast and accurate. Irrelevant thoughts would affect its operations but since humans would always have complicated thoughts throughout the day, the only way it could be operated was if everyone used Will.

Wang Shishi even found some of the movies she had watched before on the computer. She selected one of them to check out how immersive the experience would be if she watched a movie on the miniature computer. Since there were realistic special effects on the desktop, the effects on the miniature computer should be even stronger.

Almost immediately, she felt an intense impact from the images that appeared before her eyes, like she had entered into the virtual world of the movie. Compared to that, a three-dimensional screen was nothing at all. Wang Shishi thought to herself, "Too bad there are no games, it's such a waste for such a high-tech product."

...

This portable computer was the first of its kind to test run the Glassian portable technology to end users by the computer research department. They utilized groundbreaking technology that were not even present in Glassian technology such as brainwave-based controls which was thanks to human research. Perhaps to the Glassians, such a technology had long become obsolete. The Glassians have been using a technology that would connect to the brain of the end user directly, creating something like a brain-in-a-jar where the virtual web was difficult to distinguish from reality. The technology gap between both civilizations were far apart but it was the first time that humans managed not to rely on Glassian technology as a benchmark but instead, created something for themselves. It was something meaningful that was worth celebrating.

Chapter 497: Dyson Sphere

Although it was the spring festival, many of them volunteered to work. During this period, many suffered as dead bodies were littered everywhere since it was the apocalypse, it was devastating. The standard of living remained unstable even during the reconstruction area period. For survival, intense insecurities still lingered among the people. Even now, the boom in technological advancement had somewhat stabilized society but the thought of going back to how things were was worrisome for most people.

Worrying about this matter was not a bad thing. At the very least, it would drive people to give everything they had in their work and also to give selflessly. This was especially so for the researchers where 60% of them had continued to work and 10% of them did not even go home on the day of the spring festival. That was one of the unique characteristics of humans. In the research industry, detaching oneself from emotions was a basic requirement. Most of them would face ice cold equipment and boring numbers on a daily basis. If one was impatient, he or she would be eliminated immediately. Moreover, to them, even a project that was far from breakthrough could motivate them to spend all their time and effort in pursuing it. During that period of time, even family had to play second fiddle to work.

Even Luo Yuan, who held the highest position did not have a minute to slack off. On the third day of festivities, a mail regarding the Glassians came from the extraterrestrial information department. The department directly reported to Luo Yuan's foreign information organisation and was the most important part of the spaceship military forces as they were responsible to collect information on the nearby planets. This included and is not limited to capturing signals from extraterrestrial civilizations,

planning of safe routes as well as detecting the existence of nearby planets in preparation for their future voyages. However, the most important mission at the moment was collecting all the information they could about Glassians and the analysis of their technology.

...

In the spaceship control room.

"Mayor, we have limited documents on the Glassian artificial intelligence system. This is the only video clip we've managed to find on the ship's artificial intelligence system." The extraterrestrial information department director, Wu Xinfan, played the video clip on the three-dimensional screen on the ship's control room. He used to be a professor of astronomy at a university and since the university had been established, he was assigned as the director.

In reality, many of the people in the department were the same. Without a strong sense of professionalism and certain academic abilities, one would not be able to work there. Most of them were academics which specialized in mathematics, astronomy, and biology. Perhaps, calling it a special research organization would be more accurate in describing it.

Luo Yuan looked at it patiently and saw a video clip of Glassians boarding the spaceship. It was full of Glassians and he could imagine their enthusiasm. To the Glassians, this expedition was paramount to them as the first leap forward in the progress of their civilization. It represented the first step in their progress

towards an intergalactic civilization and was also the first declaration of war. However, the ending did not seem too good for them.

The video focused on one Glassian. Luo Yuan could not recognize which was the main character after watching for some time. Even with his ridiculously good memory, the aliens looked the same to him. The main character was one of the Glassians he killed and seeing as the rest were cheering it on, he should be the captain.

However, Luo Yuan was not paying attention at all. The location it was filmed at was obviously not from earth and through the transparent wall that was seemingly made of glass, Luo Yuan noticed a dark, empty space outside.

"This is a space port! Look at the dots!" Wu Xinfan exclaimed. Pointing at the insignificant dots on the corners of the screen, he said, "Those are the spaceships that were going to dock, that would mean that they have already achieved interstellar travel." Luo Yuan nodded but he was not surprised. He had seen many scenes of the Glassian social structure in the alien's dream. They had a prosperous civilization with advanced technology and interstellar travel was a common means of transport for them. Why else would they have built a spaceship out of the blue? Just like humans, before they traveled out to the deep ocean, they would first sail on shallow waters.

Wu Xinfan pointed at the screen and continued, "Fortunately for us, the video was taken at a good angle and the images are clear. We can see a star not far away, the Glassians' sun.

Perhaps he had been a teacher for way too long that when he tried to explain something, he was detailed. However, Luo Yuan did not rush him as it sounded as if he was going to explain something of utmost importance.

"We can see that the star was far brighter. From what is observed, it seems to be 1.3 times brighter than our sun."

Wu Xinfan then changed the video clip to an image, "This is the image of the galaxy where the Glassian planet is located. After some adjustments, we've basically perfected the images."

Luo Yuan then noticed that there were three blue and white planets in the image that looked similar to the earth. He then interrupted, "Which of these planets are Glassian?"

Though he was not familiar with astronomy, he could tell from the colors. The planets in blue had stable weather, temperature and a massive amount of water.

"We still can't tell as of now but three of the planets are habitable. Glassians already possess the ability to terraform a planet." Wu Xinfan explained and enlarged the images of one of the planets. Luo Yuan could see that there were many black dots floating outside the planet. He could also see that there were terrain surfaces on the planet with signs of artificial development.

"Can you enlarge the image any further?"

Wu Xinfan shook his head and explained, "Mayor, it's no use even if we do enlarge it. The distance between us and that planet is close to 30 light years. The exact distance is 28.5 light years. No matter how big an object was, even a planet would seem smaller than a needle head at such a distance. To top it off, the planet did not have as much light than the stars and even with advanced optical detection systems on the spaceship, the captured images would seem worse than what it actually was. The images we are looking at are modified images. The more we enlarge them, the more inaccurate they would become."

Luo Yuan nodded and Wu Xinfan continued with his explanation, "That being said, if we compare the video and the image we have, we'll see something crucial. The true brightness of the planet is slightly brighter than what we initially thought it was. We didn't bother at first because it was so far away and it would be inaccurate at times. Even with the editing from the optical detection system's editing, the amount of light would not be perfect. It wasn't until recently that we compared the images we took a year ago and confirmed this."

Luo Yuan frowned, "So what do you think caused that?"

"There are many things that can cause this. A star could be sparkling when we took the image or the last image we took could probably be blocked by an asteroid. Those are the possible scenarios but the most likely one would be that the star was partly covered."

"Are you talking about a Dyson sphere?" Luo Yuan's mind was sharp and he thought of a popular theory.

"That's very likely and we've found proof that it might be the case!" Wu Xinfan enlarged the two images taken a year apart.

Luo Yuan took a closer look and saw the same black spot in both images. If it was only present in one image, then an asteroid or a sunspot would be a more plausible explanation but since the spot was present in both images, taken a year apart, it was obvious.

Moreover, compared to the image they took recently, the black spot was slightly bigger than before.

...

The Dyson sphere was a theory by Freeman J. Dyson back in 1960. The theory spoke of planets like the earth having a limited energy source which was insufficient to fully support the development of a civilization to the peak potential. The star in the planetary system which supplied most of its energy source however, exhausted most of its energy to space. The sun released 28600 billion megawatts of energy per second. At the rate the humans were consuming energy before the apocalypse which was 70 billion megawatts, the sun could provide for humanity for as long as 270,000 years. The scale of time was beyond imagination and merely one second of energy from the sun could already power humans beyond existing human history. The amount of energy the sun released would be terrifying if it was calculated by a day or a year.

The theory indicated that a developed civilization would require

the ability to encase the star in a gigantic sphere to harness the immense energy from the sun to maintain and progress the civilization as well as obtaining sufficient light. Since the inception of the theory, many scientists have voiced their agreement for it as venturing beyond their star system was necessary for civilization to progress. However, all this was just a hypothesis and human technology had yet to progress to a stage where they could verify what was actually there. Luo Yuan did not even expect to see it himself at this moment.

Although the black spot was not big and was only $1/50$ of the cross-section of the image, it was far from being a complete Dyson sphere. However, the star was 28.5 light years from earth and the image they now saw was an image of the star 28.5 years ago. The black spot should no longer look like this. The production and consumption of energy by a civilization reflects the amount of progress in its technology and civilization. An example would be the industrial revolution where coal was the main source of energy to the era of electricity and now, to an era of nuclear fusion, the production and consumption of energy seemed to grow exponentially.

Although the Dyson sphere close to the Glassian star was incomplete and the energy produced was disappointing, its capacity was much bigger than what the spaceship could produce. Perhaps, what they saw was just $1/10,000$ of its true ability. This deeply affected Luo Yuan who was still thinking of revenge on the Glassians

"Conduct further investigation into the Dyson sphere. We won't be needing this now but we'll definitely need one in the near future." Luo Yuan said in all seriousness before he left.

Chapter 498: Fighting For The Quota

"Conduct further investigation into the Dyson sphere. We won't be needing this now but we'll definitely need one in the near future." Luo Yuan said in all seriousness before he left.

It was impossible for humans to remain in the spaceship at all times. Even if they had little to no chance of returning to earth, they should still seek shelter somewhere and this technology would become more important then. The 24 deep nuclear fusion furnaces in the ship probably should not be looked down on. If all of them were launched at the same time, the power they would generate would be at least 100 times greater than the energy consumed on earth before the apocalypse.

However the energy generated would only be sufficient to power the navigation of the spaceship and maybe, just maybe, there would be a little bit of energy left. At different levels of a civilization's progress, their energy consumption would be different as well. For instance, a million dollars may be a significant amount for a poor man but to a billionaire, their monthly expenses could very well exceed this amount.

There were no resources allocated in the spaceship to manage to operations of the antimatter production plant which consumed a high amount of energy. Even the artificial intelligence system did not have the relevant technology to help in this matter. Perhaps, one of the reasons for this would be to prevent a rebellion by the artificial intelligence system but for the most part, it would be because the spaceship was unable to produce such a large amount of energy.

Producing antimatter was not a difficult. [Earlier, in 1995](#), a scientist at the European Organization for Nuclear Research lab succeeded in (CERN) synthesizing the first batch of anti-hydrogen atoms. On September 18, 2000, CERN announced that they had synthesized approximately 50,000 low energy, anti-hydrogen atoms. It was the first time humans managed to synthesize such a large amount of antimatter in the laboratory.

[This actually happened!](#)

However, the amount synthesized was not sufficient to meet the demand. If the antimatter atoms were released into the air, the power generated would be even weaker than firecrackers. However, the energy expended for the synthesis of antimatter alone had cost a few hundred million Euros while the rate at which energy was converted into antimatter was extremely low.

The scientists had roughly evaluated Glassian technology based on the technology adopted in the spaceship. In the synthesis of antimatter, the Glassians had similar results and the rate at which energy was converted into antimatter was extremely low. Perhaps, antimatter production was one of the precious strategic resources of the Glassians.

Even the antimatter that was stored in the spaceship probably occupied a large amount of storage space.

There was much evidence that supported this viewpoint as the most advanced interstellar spaceship of the Glassians was utilizing a nuclear fusion furnace as a power source instead of an antimatter furnace that could produce more power. To top it off, only about

300 kilograms of antimatter bombs remain in the spaceship. Taking into account the ones that were dropped on the earth and moon, they did not even have a ton remaining.

Despite seeming like it was a lot to the human civilization. The fact was if it was put up against an advanced civilization, it was not even worthy of mention.

...

Wu Xinfan hesitated for a while after Luo Yuan made his request clear, ground his teeth and said, "Mayor, this is a big project and I'm afraid the extraterrestrial intelligence department would be unable to take up this project. Technology has been progressing at an amazing rate for these past years and we've been losing touch with those on the forefront of the research. Although we're following the latest developments, the fact is that we can no longer get to grips with the latest technology as some of the research papers are becoming too difficult to understand."

Wu Xinfan grumbled because it was indeed true that he could not take on the responsibility. On the other hand, carrying out a feasibility analysis on the Dyson sphere would be a big undertaking as it would involve various aspects of the latest technological advancements. It would be like a comprehensive implementation of the latest technology. Also, since he had the chance to brush shoulders with the mayor, he had the chance to strive to get the maximum amount of benefits for his department.

The child who cries, gets the milk. Nowadays, the wisdom elixir was an open secret in the research community.

Members of the academia had their own small clique. Especially since the popularization of the quantum computers communication network, interactions between members of a clique became more frequent.

In the beginning, they could still interact with some of the others for brainstorming sessions. However, after the wisdom elixir was discovered, the clique members seemed to become more and more unfamiliar with one another.

In the beginning, they would still scratch their heads over the questions asked. There would then be more than 10 solutions listed, each seemingly reasonable and had the potential of solving the problem. Despite feeling that the question asked was of sufficient difficulty, one could still understand it.

Eventually, the problems stated in the academic forum, as well as the replies, were becoming more and more complicated. The gap between different parties grew larger and they could no longer exchange thoughts on common subjects between one another. It felt like a primary school student was speaking to university students, feeling a great sense of disappointment now that there was such a huge difference in intelligence. It made them feel like an ape that had yet to evolve.

When the wisdom elixir was discovered, this disappointment disappeared. It was not because they had low IQ, instead, it was because of the resources the other party had in their arsenal. However, demand had exceeded supply as the wisdom elixir was limited. Of course, the role of the extraterrestrial intelligence

department was not as important as the front-line research team. Until today, none of them were given a chance at even testing out the wisdom elixir.

Luo Yuan knew what he was asking for as he sighed and said, "Each department has a research project on hand. You shouldn't turn down the job since your department is the only one that can handle this."

Although Luo Yuan used a gentle tone, Wu Xinfan's face turned pale listening to him. Fortunately, Luo Yuan picked it up and changed his tone before he said, "I could, however, assign more staff to your department. I will assign the latest batch of interns to your department. The wisdom elixir production is limited each year and I can't give you too many but I'll give some to your staff."

"Mayor, how many of them would be given the wisdom elixir?" Wu Xinfan asked.

"Probably about 10!" Luo Yuan answered after thinking for awhile. thought for a while and answered.

Although Luo Yuan did not focus much on the extraterrestrial intelligence department, this did not mean that they were not important. In fact, they were quite important, as important as choosing a safe route to land during an interplanetary voyage as it would determine the fate of humankind. He did not focus much on it earlier as the time for the spaceship to embark on such a journey had yet to come.

...

"Director Wu! Director Wu! Come back to your senses!" One of his colleagues pushed against the door and shouted as he saw Wu Xinfan still standing there.

"Oh, Mister Chen. Has the mayor left?" Wu Xinfan seemed to have woken up from a dream.

"Yes, he's left. Did you ask the mayor?" Mister Chen asked.

"What? What did I have to ask him again?" Wu Xinfan had yet to regain his senses.

"The wisdom elixir! I thought we've already come to an agreement yesterday?" Mister Chen said, scratching his head. It was not an easy feat to have results significant enough to catch the mayor's attention. It was a rare opportunity they had to make a request. If not for his position of being director of the department, Mister Chen would have grabbed his collar and screamed at him.

Perhaps, he spoke too loudly and it attracted a large crowd.

"What? You didn't ask the mayor?"

"We've already discussed this earlier! You... You're useless!"

Those who were working in the extraterrestrial intelligence

department were experienced researchers and they did most of the grunt work when it came to research. They did not have an inkling of fear of the director at all.

Wu Xinfan came to his senses and coughed, "Stop it! When have I ever said that I didn't ask the mayor?"

"If you did, what did he say? Did he make any promises?" Mister Chen immediately lowered his voice.

Wu Xinfan stared at the crowd that had obviously calmed down and said proudly, "Of course, he agreed with me and the quota is..."

He paused.

"How many?" One of the mathematics professors knew that he paused intentionally but still asked.

"10!"

Everyone was holding their breath in excitement. There were about 30 of them in the entire department. Given that there was a quota of about 10 people, it indicated that one-third of the staff were eligible for the wisdom elixir. Some of their faces turned a shade of red, confident of their abilities and feeling like their efforts had finally paid off!

Chapter 499: The New Childbirth Technique

In just a blink of an eye, it was September.

At 10 o'clock at night, Cui Wenchuan was on his way back from the adult night classes. He was tired and went back to his cramped house.

The engineering company he had been working for previously had shut down after the last project was completed. Most of the employees were laid off while he was reassigned to another job since he was a mid-level leader previously. He was assigned to a commodities firm where he was appointed as the production supervisor.

The salary was relatively lower than the engineering company. However, he would at the very least, still retain a stable income unlike the previous job he had, where he would be unemployed most of the time.

After working for less than a month, he realized that the factory was built by the government with the intention of reducing the unemployment rate. They did their best not to use any machines if the job was doable by hand. There were less than 50 machines in a factory that had more than 1,000 employees and even with only 50 machines, less than half of them were operational.

After working there for a short period of time, he felt an emptiness within him, feeling like his work there was meaningless and a waste of time.

He felt like there was no hope. Perhaps one day, with enough hard work and qualifications, he could become a top executive. However, being a factory manager was useless since the factory did not even use the latest technology. It was a factory that went through the same routine every single day with production going according to schedule. It was not even worth mentioning in today's society.

To the best of his knowledge, even the factory's manager living area was the same size as his.

He did try visiting some of the more advanced factories in his free time. Looking at the engineers discussing the design plans in a spacious, fully automated factory, he felt a sliver of envy growing within him.

He was a young man, passionate about his job, not wanting to spend his entire life doing such menial things and live in such cramped conditions where he was at the lowest class of society that lived on nine square meters. For the sake of his family and his future, he had to fight for it.

...

"You've just come back from night school? I've made you some supper." His wife stopped mopping the floor and asked as she saw him come home.

"It's okay, you don't have to make me supper. Why're you still

awake?" Cui Wenchuan put down the bag with the textbook in it and asked. He then hugged his beautiful wife and kissed her passionately.

She was his second wife and he got to know her from a blind date organized by an organization. They were not even married for a year and were still in the honeymoon phase.

"Stop fooling around. Ning Ning is still awake!"

"Has she finished her homework?" Cui Weichuan immediately released his hand as he heard of his daughter.

"I heard that this year's textbooks are slightly tougher. I'm worried that she might have to put in more effort." His wife nodded her head and spoke of her worries.

Cui Wenchuan could understand this better. The school was changing the textbooks used every year and they got thicker as the years passed. Initially, primary students only had to learn basic mathematics and simple words but nowadays, they even had to study the ninth grade syllabus and that was the easiest part. For secondary students, they even had to study what used to be the university-level syllabus.

Human intelligence was improving every year and the initial teaching plans could no longer satisfy the needs of the society.

Unlucky students aside, he did find it tough since he started

attending night classes recently despite being a former university student. Without the aid of the miniature artificial intelligence system that he wore around his eyes that helped him in calculation and analysis, he would be unable to keep up with the rate at which knowledge was being shoved into him.

However, only high school students were allowed to buy the device. Since his daughter was only a primary student, she had to prepare herself for the future by strengthening her foundations.

"Should we register her for remedial classes?" Cui Weichuan said after some thought.

"It's a good idea! Let's see what she thinks about this." His wife said in agreement. Although she was not her daughter by blood, she still treated her like she was her own. Fortunately, she was a good daughter and did nothing to make her stepmother feel like an outsider.

She was a pitiful child. Her mother died since she was young and she followed her father, rushing around after the onset of the apocalypse. She almost died in an earthquake and suffered a great deal. Perhaps, this was why she was wiser than others her age.

After a few moments, Cui Weichuan knocked on her daughter's bedroom door and asked, "Have you done your homework?"

"I have a little more to go. Don't worry about me."

"Alright, get some rest early." Cui Weichuan said, feeling pity for her in his heart. She was so young and yet she has to bear the brunt of having such heavy loads of homework. He recalled the time when he was her age - he was still playing.

...

After helping his wife mop the floor, he returned to their bedroom. Both of them lay in bed, speaking softly.

"What do you think about having a baby?" His wife asked.

"Better not think about it. I've heard that the success rate for test-tube babies is not that high. If the implantation fails, it would hurt your body!" Cui Weichuan sighed and said. They have tried it before. However, the fetus stopped growing just after three months, causing a miscarriage.

"It's different this time. They are using a new technology now. The success rate is close to 100%. Don't you read the news?" His wife asked.

Cui Weichuan worked in the morning and studied at night. He was so busy and had no time to read the news. Surprised, he said, "Wow, technology is advancing so fast? Let's go have a look at it.!"

He was not so stressed about having another child since the government was encouraging the citizens to have more kids. They would be given incentives on top of three years maternity leave if

they had children. In addition to the free education the children would get, having more children would not add any burden to the parents.

When they did, they may actually afford to buy a bigger house!

"I've heard that the technology used today is quite advanced. When a zygote is produced, the doctors will modify the genes so the defective genes can be eliminated. The baby to be will be more intelligent, look better and be stronger. How about taking a leave tomorrow?" The wife asked in excitement.

Nobody would refuse such a baby, especially his wife, who was so keen to have children.

However, Cui Weichuan was a close-minded conservative. He doubted the new technology since it has yet to receive certification to ensure it was safe. Furthermore, it would directly affect his child but looking at his excited wife, he said, "I'll inform the factory manager tomorrow. I should be able to request a leave,"

...

The next morning, the both of them went to the hospital which was located just two floors above them.

Though the hospital was usually not so crowded, there were quite a number of people there today. Cui Weichuan noticed that most of them were married couples. He later realized that they

were here to check out the new technology as well.

While they were queuing up, Cui Weichuan saw many of them frowning as they came out from the consultation room, looking indecisive. He had doubts but he did not dwell on them. After they stood in the queue for almost two hours, it was finally their turn.

...

"Are you saying that our newborn baby might not look like the parents or might even have genetic disorders?" Listening to the doctor's explanation, his wife instantly felt a cold chill, like she was splashed with a bucket of cold water as she asked in shock.

The doctor answered the client calmly, "It's because the new technology involves gene modification and there may be major changes. For example, if the parents didn't look too good, the newborn child would look way better after gene modification. Of course, I understand that this may be cause for concern. However, the government has been promoting this new technology and each family who goes through this will be given a significant amount of incentives. Even if the parents didn't plan on raising the child after the procedure, they can send the child to an adoption center. It's a win-win situation!"

The better the incentives, the more Cui Weichuan felt like something was up. Could it still be their child if identifying its parents was a problem? He tugged at his wife and noticed that she seemed indecisive.

...

Without a doubt, this technology is probably the outcome of the Human Genome Optimization Programme that the government implemented a year ago.

It had redefined the standard of human genetics, eliminating the effects of the antidote virus on childbirth. The introduction of this technology is the first step to bring forward a species of genetically superior humans. Humans in the future would no longer inherit diseases or have any flaws.

They would not only be strong, intelligent and good-looking, they would also have a longer lifespan.

The new generation of humans would have an average attribute of 13 to 14 points which included their Intelligence. They would live an average of 300 years and at the same time, human reproduction would return to normal, only being possible through natural, sexual, reproduction.

In fact, there were more than one proposal to redefine the genetic standard for human beings that was submitted to Luo Yuan and some of them had radical changes in them. The one they adopted was perhaps the most conservative one but the new generation of humans would not differ too much from how humans should be and will not have a mysterious ability to evolve. Aside from a weak version of self-healing that allowed them to live longer, there were no other major changes. This was why it was known as an optimization plan.

After the human genetic standard was proposed, Luo Yuan considered all of them carefully. Eventually, he chose the most conservative one. The best advantage of this plan was that it did not affect the reproduction cycle of the new generation of humans and this alone was sufficient reason to abandon all the other plans.

Cloning technology could only serve as a temporary measure as the technology meant that the human population would depend solely on clones and not natural reproduction methods. It could be done but it would be impractical.

The key to development of a civilization was survival. The development of human civilization would not always go smoothly and there would be ups and downs. If technology did not advance at such a pace, death would probably be awaiting them.

Chapter 500: The Interstellar Battleship

"Why don't you tell the people the truth? Perhaps they'll accept it if the way we disseminate the news is well thought out." Chen Xinjie was asking Luo Yuan as she made tea in the office.

From her perspective, this was not a wise decision. There was not a single wall in the world which was airtight and similarly, a secret could not be kept forever. It will be revealed in the future one way or another, regardless of how strict they were and if this were to happen, it would fuel the dissatisfaction of the people.

As Luo Yuan's secretary, she clearly knew that the childbirth technology was not as perfect as it seems. Providing the children with the parents' genes was a smokescreen, the child inserted into the mother's body was a clone cultivated by the research center.

In addition to the current level of technology, it was not difficult to carry out genetic modifications on a zygote. Aside from the required support from a strong scientific community, there would be no side effects stemming from this technology.

"Do you know how many kids there are aged up to five years old?" Luo Yuan asked.

Luo Yuan then answered himself before Chen Xinjie had a chance to respond to the question, "There are less than 50,000 of them. The number of children aged six to ten were slightly more. Most of the children in this age group had to experience the apocalypse soon after their birth. They were not able to survive due to

inexperience and weakness, most of them dying due to a shortage of medical services, supplies, and abandonment. There were a total of 180,000 children in this age group which just about makes up one-thirtieth of the population.

Similarly, the ratio of teenagers aged 11 to 15 was relatively low compared to the total population size. A huge gap existed in the age of the population since giving birth became a serious issue. Despite advertisements to persuade the people to accept cloning technology as a means to an end, it barely had an effect and the outcome was not as expected.

Since the people had a bad impression of clones ingrained in their minds, their fear of clones could not be completely erased through simple propaganda.

"It would be way simpler for them to give birth to a child first than to establish it through an administrative enforcement system. Basically, we've already told them the truth in our propaganda material. Those who could accept it would have accepted it and those who couldn't accept it would not be considered to be fools. Even if those who accepted the technology regret their decisions, they could still send their child to the government where they could be put together with the clones so the exact number of clones we have in the lab can remain a secret."

"This will adversely affect your image!" Chen Xinjie said out of worry. She was not a saint but she was against this because she was worried that Luo Yuan's image would be affected after the truth was revealed.

"You're still too young, you shouldn't be involved in these political issues. After the truth is revealed, there will be a scapegoat to bear the responsibility. I know nothing of this. Moreover..." Luo Yuan stood up, smiled and said coldly, "The reason why I was promoted to this position was not because of my reputation!"

Chen Xinjie was momentarily stunned.

She later came back to her senses when she heard Luo Yuan's voice once again. "Please inform the battleship manufacturers that I'm going to pay a visit." Luo Yuan flipped the document that his secretary gave him earlier and soon, his eyes brightened as he requested, "Please, help me make a call!"

...

Before he reached the entrance, the factory supervisor and the staff representatives had already been waiting for him at the entrance. It was heavily guarded and seemed like there would be a grand reception.

"Don't let your work be affected because of me. Let's go to the industrial area. I'd like to have a look at the new battleships." Luo Yuan waved his hand, knowing well that he could not avoid such formalities.

Be it the past or present, the technology could further develop but humans could hardly be changed. As long as one was given a position of power, such formalities could not be avoided.

However, if he was not welcomed by them when he came for an inspection and everyone ignored his presence, it would probably be something wrong with him or possibly because they were unsatisfied towards the government.

After a few short moments, Luo Yuan and Chen Xinjie arrived at the industrial area. What they saw before them was a delta-winged battleship.

It was huge and had a sharp tip. At the rear of the aircraft was a cross that seemed to be the shape of a pair of scissors and it looked amazing. Its body was smooth with a shiny, black surface that made it look elegant, exuding an aura of strength.

It appeared massive yet delicate, absolute and intelligent without seeming so, elegant yet strong and looked like a low-lying cheetah that had been lying in wait, about to pounce at a moment's notice.

"Mayor, it's a dual mode vehicle and it's 20 meters long. Both of its wings are narrow and are approximately 15 meters long. Since it will mainly be in outer space, it does not necessarily need to be aerodynamic." The engineer who designed it introduced it to Luo Yuan nervously, "The technology used was almost the same as a Glassian aircraft. It had two medium-sized nuclear fusion furnaces and two impulse engines. Its maximum speed is 10% the speed of light. However, in a galaxy that was full of meteors, it would be much safer to travel at 0.5% the speed of light or it could be easily destroyed by the meteors." Luo Yuan nodded his head in agreement.

Glassian technology could not be used to design a comprehensive defense system for the spaceship. The humans had adopted Glassian technology and they had similar problems in their systems. To defend against the impact of meteorites, there were two ways. Firstly, the hull of the spaceship could defend against slow-moving meteorites. Secondly, it could be done through the spaceship's detection systems along with a large amount of computing power of the ship's artificial intelligence system. Comparing both approaches, the latter would be their choice as it was capable of avoiding the meteorites before impact.

If the meteorites were slightly bigger in size, the spaceship's main control system in the quantum computer would be able to detect it when it was 100 light seconds away. The spaceship could then avoid the meteorite before it hit and made it less likely that the spaceship would be struck by a rogue meteorite.

There were holes in the hull of the spaceship that could not be filled even if several people decided to jump into it. They were the effects of colliding with specks of dust at interstellar speeds.

When the spaceship traveled at sub-light speeds, even something that weighed only one milligram could produce kinetic energy that amounted to 10 tons of TNT from the collision. If the spaceship was struck even with something that weighed only one gram, it would be certain death. There were no existing defense systems that could defend against such armor-piercing impact.

Despite there being less matter in the space between galaxies, it did not mean there were none. Their spaceship was considered lucky to be able to travel such a distance.

"Does it need to be manned by people?" Luo Yuan snapped out of his thoughts and asked.

"No, Mayor. It's an unmanned aerial vehicle. There are two ways to operate the vehicle - remote control via the miniaturized quantum computer implanted on the human eye, operated by brainwaves or it could be operated by the artificial intelligence system that is implanted within the system."

"As for the weapons, the spacecraft is equipped with two, one-kilogram electromagnetic guns that can generate 100 kilowatts of power. Theoretically, it can fire at [a speed of 0.012c](#) in a vacuum. If necessary, it could also be used as an antimatter warhead that's capable of short-distance missions."

C is a measure of speed in light years.

Of course, the distance they spoke of was not the 'distance' most people spoke of. Instead, the distance was measured in terms of astronomical units

Of course, the distance mentioned was not the regular definition of short distance and it was the short distance measured in terms of the astronomical unit instead.

To Luo Yuan, the spaceship was considered big and compared to the Glassian spaceship, despite being inferior, both of them somehow had a similar technological standard. Perhaps, they were not so different after all.

Next, Luo Yuan visited other workshops in the factory.

It was the only aircraft manufacturer in the spaceship and after these few years, it was apparent that the battleship was not the only invention they developed.

Luo Yuan discovered an unexpected surprise at the next workshop.

It was a small spacecraft which was similarly designed to the mothership. Despite being a smaller version, it was still quite huge. Its diameter was about 80 meters and its height, around 30 to 40 meters. Fortunately, the factory was in an industrial area with high ceilings or it might be difficult to store it.

It had caught Luo Yuan's attention. "This is an experimental spaceship model!" The leader of the factory immediately said, "The size ratio of the mothership to the miniature spacecraft is 20:1. The main purpose of this model is to carry out some technical tests."

"Why wasn't I made aware of such a big project here?" Luo Yuan asked in excitement.

Luo Yuan instantly understood as he noticed that the factory leader looked a little awkward. Without a doubt, they wanted to present it only when they had succeeded. This issue had been arising in many of the research departments as there was intense competition among the research institutions. If they were not able to make any significant contribution, a dissolution or consolidation of the department would be awaiting them.

"How's the progress?" Luo Yuan then asked.

"It's 85% completed. However, this project has several contributors." The factory leader dared not claim credit for it. Without the assistance of other organizations in manufacturing quality parts, they would not even be able to develop the hull of the spacecraft.

Nowadays, aside from the welfare industries, most of the factories focused on research projects and exploration of Glassians technology. Since they did not have many production based tasks on hand, they had sufficient time to manufacture the required parts and collaborated on a joint research project.

"Well done!" Luo Yuan was satisfied. He praised them while nodding his head, "I hope that during the next visit, this project would have been completed."

...

Luo Yuan left the factory with excitement. Looking at the spacecraft model, he knew that humans had explored at least half of the existing Glassian technology. Humans have seen an incredible amount of improvement during this period of time. Initially, he had estimated that it would require at least another five years for humans to fulfill the requirement of interplanetary flight. However, based on their current progress, perhaps they could completely control the spaceship and even be capable of building a spaceship soon.

However, the toughest part would be the remaining 15%. The time needed to complete the remaining progress may be longer than the time they took to complete 85% of the project. The completion date could be an infinitely far date in the future.

This was undoubtedly the worst case. As the number of people who consumed the wisdom elixir increased, the development of human technology had improved by leaps and bounds with numerous scientific and technical achievements. Therefore the time it would take to complete the replica of the spaceship might be faster than expected.